A MISSIONARY VOYAGE
TO THE
SOUTHERN PACIFIC OCEAN,
PERFORMED
IN THE YEARS 1796, 1797, 1798,
IN THE
SHIP DUFF,
COMMANDED BY
CAPTAIN JAMES WILSON.
COMPILED FROM
JOURNALS OF THE OFFICERS AND THE MISSIONARIES;
AND ILLUSTRATED WITH
Maps, Charts, and Views,
Drawn by Mr. William Wilson, and engraved by the most eminent Artists.
WITH A
PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE
ON THE
GEOGRAPHY AND HISTORY OF THE SOUTH SEA ISLANDS;
AND AN
APPENDIX,
INCLUDING DETAILS NEVER BEFORE PUBLISHED, OF THE
NATURAL AND CIVIL STATE OF OTAHEITE;
BY A COMMITTEE APPOINTED FOR THE PURPOSE BY THE DIRECTORS OF THE MISSIONARY SOCIETY.

PUBLISHED FOR THE BENEFIT OF THE SOCIETY.

LONDON:
PRINTED BY S. GOSNELL,
FOR T. CHAPMAN, N° 141, FLEET STREET.
1799.
TO THE KING.

SIRE,

To whom can the Missionary Society properly dedicate these first-fruits of their labours as to Your Majesty, by whose order the voyages of discovery were first undertaken, which have brought into view the numerous islands dispersed over the Pacific Ocean? The reports made concerning them attracted the general attention of European nations; and Your Majesty's subjects felt themselves peculiarly interested, whether their views led them to consider these discoveries as tending to enlarge the bounds of science, or as opening a field of commercial speculation. A nobler object, Sire, has engaged the attention of the Missionary Society, who, believing Christianity to be the greatest blessing ever imparted to mankind, desired to communicate that ineffimable gift, with all its happy effects, to these unenlightened regions.
DEDICATION.

On landing among these islanders, our compassions were more powerfully excited to find their population greatly diminished, and, through the prevalence of vice, tending to utter extinction. On this account we conceive it to be our duty to make the most vigorous efforts, in dependence on the blessing of Almighty God, for the amelioration of their wretched estate.

Persuaded of Your Majesty's gracious approbation of our labours, and encouraged by the most auspicious commencements, we have determined on renewed exertions. Whatever beneficial consequences may result from the attempt, we shall be happy to ascribe them, under God, to Your Majesty's government as their origin; and we embrace this public occasion of offering the dutiful homage of

Your Majesty's

Most respectful and loyal subjects,

THE DIRECTORS OF THE MISSIONARY SOCIETY.

ADVERTISEMENT.

The impatience of our brethren to gratify the curiosity of the public, must plead our excuse that the following papers are arranged in a less lucid order than we could have wished. In collecting from the public and private journals, we have desired to preserve the language of the relator, which, if not the most polished, may notwithstanding be the most affecting. The body of the journal is the composition of Mr. William Wilson, from the Captain's papers, his own, and the Missionaries' reports. As there was a necessity of filling up some chapters from the journals of the Missionaries themselves, there will sometimes be observed a change of persons, according as individuals, or the body, are introduced speaking. It is hoped that our readers will pardon this defect, and that whatever perplexity it may occasion will be removed by referring to the list of Errata.

It was deemed improper to alter customary maritime phrases for the sake of grammatical accuracy. We shall be truly happy, if the information here detailed shall produce some powerful impression on the minds of our countrymen; interest them more tenderly in behalf of the wretched heathen; and excite suitable efforts to repair the miseries which Europeans have in part occasioned, as well as to rescue from destruction of body and soul a gentle race of fellow-men, who have, toward our own nation especially, expressed the most affectionate attachment.
CONTENTS.

PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE — Page i
Historical Account of Otaheite — vii
Islands connected with Otaheite — xxxvi
Tongataboo, and the Islands connected with it — xlvii
Obittahoe, and the other Islands called the Marquesas — lxxiii
INSTRUCTIONS to Captain Wilson — lxxxix

FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE.

CHAPTER I.
Introduction—Appointment of Missionaries and Ship's Crew 1

CHAPTER II.
Embarkation. Departure from the River—Stay at Portsmouth 8

CHAPTER III.
Voyage from Portsmouth to St. Jago—Occurrences there 13

CHAPTER IV.
Run to Rio Janeiro—Reception, and Observations 26
CONTENTS.

CHAPTER V.
Departure from Rio Janeiro—Arrival at Otaheite — Page 39

CHAPTER VI.
Occurrences on landing at Otaheite, and during the first Visit to that Island — 56

CHAPTER VII.
Short Voyage to Eimeo, and Return to Otaheite — 83

CHAPTER VIII.
Decision of the Missionaries—Voyage to Tongataboo — 92

CHAPTER IX.
Occurrences during the first Visit to Tongataboo — 97

CHAPTER X.
Voyage to the Marquefas—Discoveries made — 113

CHAPTER XI.
Occurrences at the Marquefas — 128

CHAPTER XII.
Return from the Marquefas to Otaheite—Transactions during our Absence — 149

CHAPTER XIII.
Transactions during our Stay at Otaheite—Survey to ascertain the Population of the Island — Page 179

CHAPTER XIV.
Transactions at Otaheite to our final Departure — 216

CHAPTER XV.
Return to Tongataboo—Occurrences during our Absence — 227

CHAPTER XVI.
Description of Tongataboo — 273

CHAPTER XVII.
Transactions at Tongataboo during the Ship's Stay — 282

CHAPTER XVIII.
Passage from Tongataboo to China — 286

CHAPTER XIX.
Occurrences at China, and Voyage home — 311
Preliminary Discourse;

CONTAINING A

GEOGRAPHICAL AND HISTORICAL ACCOUNT

OF THE

ISLANDS WHERE MISSIONARIES HAVE SETTLED,

AND OF OTHERS WITH WHICH THEY ARE CONNECTED.

The relation which geographical knowledge bears to missionary exertion is as obvious as it is important. If sincere and enlightened Christians had been attentive to the magnitude, the population, and the moral and religious state of the countries which are still destitute of the gospel, it seems impossible that they should ever have remitted their labours for the conversion of the heathen. A deficiency of information upon these interesting subjects is not merely to be lamented as an occasion of fatal negligence; it is also to be guarded against as a cause of error, and of failure, in the conduct of missionary efforts. If these are excited only by casual discoveries of the wretched condition in which some detached parts of the heathen world exist, other nations are liable to be disregarded, which, in a variety of respects, might be preferable objects of evangelical missions.

For the reasons which determined the Missionary Society at London to commence its operations with a voyage to the Pacific Ocean, we refer the reader to a well-known Memoir, which was publicly delivered when the Society was formed in September 1795, and is annexed to an impression of the Sermons that were preached on the occasion. That decision having been made, the utmost diligence was used to collect into a distinct and comprehensive view, the information that was scattered through numerous printed volumes, or...
PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

was attainable by means of manuscript and verbal communications, respecting those islands which it appeared practicable to visit in the projected voyage. An extensive compilation of this nature was put into the hands of the missionaries; and several maps were constructed, to illustrate the geographical details, as well as to assist the intended navigation; the materials from which these were formed having till then remained unconnected, or been exhibited only upon a minute general scale.

By an abridgment of the accounts thus compiled, it is attempted, in this preliminary discourse, to gratify persons who may wish for a compendium of the principal information to be derived from former voyages respecting the three islands to which our missionaries have happily gained access. These places are described in the same order in which they were visited by Captain Wilton; and to the account of each is subjoined a brief description of other islands with which a habitual intercourse is maintained from thence; and to which we may therefore hope the usefulness of our brethren will gradually be extended *. A few general remarks upon the Pacific Ocean, and the countries situated within its limits, appear necessary both to introduce and to conclude the whole.

This ocean, which covers almost half the globe, was unknown to Europeans at the commencement of the sixteenth century, having been first seen from the isthmus that connects the continents called North and South America, on the 25th of September 1513, by a Spaniard named Basso Nunez de Balboa. Its western boundary had been approached by the Portuguese only two years earlier, Francisco Serrano having discovered the Molucca islands immediately after the conquest of Malacca by the celebrated Albuquerque.*

* The general chart of Captain Wilton's track is necessarily upon too small a scale to afford a faithful representation of these islands; but they are all delineated, on each to a degree, in one of the above-mentioned maps, which has been published for the benefit of the Missionary Society, and is sold by Mr. Eden, Charing Cross, and Mr. Chapman, Fleet Street, price 1zs. 6d. plain, or 15s. coloured.
the 10th of the same month, one of the islands which have since been called the Philippines. They form the northernmost part of the grand archipelago which borders the coast of Asia, extending from 19 degrees north latitude and 122 degrees east longitude, south-westward to Malacca, and south-eastward to New Guinea. At a small island of this group Magalhães finished his course, being killed in an encounter with the natives on the 27th of April. Some of his ships afterward reached the Moluccas, the objects of their pursuit; which are situated amidst more extensive islands, in the 111 degree of north latitude, and in 127½ degrees east longitude. One ship only of the squadron, named the Victory, with a crew of no more than thirty persons, under the command of Sebastian Cabo, returned by the East Indies and the Cape of Good Hope to Europe, having accomplished the first circumnavigation of the world within a period of three years.

Having, by a sketch of this voyage, paid a tribute to the memory of Magalhães, who conducted an unequalled enterprise with the utmost fortitude and skill, we can only notice succeeding navigators in connexion with the islands to be described. In pointing out the situations of these, their latitude must be understood to be southward from the equator, if not otherwise expressed; and their longitude is reckoned eastward and westward from the observatory at Greenwich toward its anti-meridian.

The want of a proper guide for the pronunciation of names used by the South-Sea islanders, and the diversity of modes in which they have been spelled by writers and compilers of voyages, have long been subjects of complaint. The remedy has become difficult in proportion to the extent of the evil. The variety of journals from which extracts are given in the narrative of Captain Wilson's voyage, has frustrated, in a great measure, the endeavours that were used to adopt an uniform and distinct orthography throughout the volume. Whether the attempt made for that purpose, in compiling the present introductory discourse, is more successful, must be left to the decision of the reader. His attention is requested to the following rules of pronunciation, in which the genius of the language that is common to the places described, and the established orthography of their names, which have become most familiar, have been reciprocally consulted.

1st. When a single vowel forms or closes a syllable,
   a is sounded as in father;
   e as in next;
   o as in open;
   u as in duty.

2ndly. When two vowels come together,
   ae has the sound found with the adverb ay;
   ai is sounded as in sail;
   au as in autumn;
   ei has the sound of i long; for which this improper diphthong has, from the first, been substituted in names that are now become too familiar to be altered, as in Otaheite, Eimeo, Huaheine, &c.
   eo is sounded as in the adverb too, for a similar reason; and
   ou has the same sound with oy in English words, as joy, &c.

All other combinations of vowels are to be pronounced, according to the preceding rules, in distinct syllables.

3rdly. When any single vowel is followed, in the same syllable, by a consonant, it has its shortest sound; as in matter, gift, otter, upward.

4thly. Every consonant, single vowel, or diphthong, uniformly retains a distinct and appropriate sound, subject to the preceding rules. The letters w and y are therefore used only as consonants; g is always hard; and th is always sounded as in think. The e is never mute. Thus Otaheite is to be pronounced o as to rhyme with the adjective mighty.
PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

HISTORICAL ACCOUNT OF OTAHEITE.

FREQUENT as the intercourse of Europeans with the natives of this island has been for the last thirty years, it is uncertain whether any interview between them had occurred at an earlier period. While the identity of various islands visited by modern navigators, with the early discoveries of the Spaniards, has been indubitably proved, it is barely probable that Otaheite was seen by Pedro Fernandez de Quiros in 1606. He had sailed with two ships from Lima in Peru, to search for a continent which he supposed to exist in the neighbourhood of several islands that had been discovered by him in a voyage performed eleven years before. For this purpose he proceeded southward to the 27th degree of latitude; but meeting only with a few low islands, he returned into the latitude of his former discoveries, and on his way off in with an island, 21st February, which, on account of the fell in with an island, 21st February, which, on account of the

Their first landing-place, which they named Sagitaria. Here they anchored in a bay on the south coast; but the boats were prevented landing by the surf which beat upon the reefs. A young man, named Francisco Ponce, swam with much hazard to a rock, where the islanders met and cared for him; others of the Spaniards, imitating the spirited example of Ponce, were equally well received. When they swam back to the boats, they were accompanied by several of the natives, who, after having some presents made to them, returned to their comrades on shore. The next day the Spaniards, having hauled their boats over the reef, landed, without doing any of the inhabitants; they proceeded through a thick wood (in which they found a moraé, and erected a crucifix) toward a bay upon the opposite side of the island. They could obtain no fresh water in a plain which they searched for it; but refreshed themselves with the milk of cocoa-nuts, which grew there abundantly. Loaded with this fruit, they returned to the landing-place, in water up to their

...
PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

More than eight hundred people on board; they, in general, behaved amicably, excepting that they stole every thing they could seize. These practices brought on a flight skirmish; but peace was soon apparently established. Captain Wallis succeeded in getting to windward of the island during the night, and the next day sailed along the eastern coast. On the following he anchored near the north-eastern shore; and his boats being employed in founding, were attacked by the islanders, one of whom was killed, and another wounded in the contest. Traffic was notwithstanding speedily restored. The native women used the most shameless entreaties to induce the sailors to land, but they had the precaution not to quit their boats; and some small casks, which they entrusted to the islanders to procure fresh water, were stolen by them.

Captain Wallis having weighed anchor on the 23d, discovered the bay which is formed by the coast of Matavaie, the northernmost district of the island. Having doubled its north-easterly cape, since called Point Venus, the Dolphin struck upon a coral rock which is detached from the reef that borders the coast. The ship remained immovable almost an hour, and was then unexpectedly relieved by a breeze which sprung up from the shore. The natives, in many hundred canoes, waited around to see the event, which was likely to have been attended with the entire destruction of the crew. They anchored, however, soon afterward in the bay, and the vessel was found to have received little damage. The following day, while warping nearer to the shore, they were attacked by a multitude of large canoes, and showers of heavy stones were poured in every direction upon the ship. The islanders renewed the assault, even when they had been repulsed by the great guns; but after repeated experience of their destructive effects, they dispersed, and fled to the mountains.

The ship having been moored abreast of the river of Matavaie, Lieutenant Furneaux landed, and without opposition erected a British pendant on the shore, and formally took possession of the island in the name of his own sovereign. This is a ceremony which has
been continued from the period when it was supposed that the pope had a right to dispose of all countries inhabited by heathens. Whatever idea the islanders formed of this transaction, they did not suffer the flag to remain till the following day. Oiamo, who at that time governed the larger peninsula of Otaheite in behalf of his son Temâre, caused it to be taken away during the night; and it was used long after, as a kind of dress which constitutes the badge of royalty. The next morning a party of sailors were compelled by the islanders to retire from the river, to which they had been sent for fresh water; but the crowd being dispersed by the ship’s guns, and many of their canoes being demolished by way of punishment, they gave up their attempts at resistance, and from that time became peaceable and docile. Oiamo retired from the scene, probably lest the English should revenge upon his person the assaults they had sustained. His comfort Oberea (or Pooea) had been separated from him after the birth of Temâre, apparently on account of her reluctance to destroy the child. Her authority was not diminished by their separation, and she exercised it in affording the most hospitable reception to Captain Wallis and his people, many of whom were much reduced by illness. These were lodged on shore, and a regular traffic was established for fresh provisions. It was, however, soon interrupted, and great inconvenience produced, by the licentious intercourse of the crew with the islanders. This was unlikely to be checked by Oberea, whose character for severity exceeded even the usual standard at Otaheite. At this time she cohabited with Toopaea, who had fled from his native place, Uiletea, and had been appointed chief priest at this island. He excelled all the South Sea islanders that have been known for information and sagacity; and distinguished himself very early by his inquisitive disposition, and his aptness to imitate the manners of the English. An elderly man, of inferior rank, named Owahiu, likewise rendered himself remarkable and useful, by his friendly attention to the navigators, and the prudence with which he negotiated between them and his countrymen. Under his guidance

PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

Mr. Gore made some progress into the interior of the island; and when provisions became scarce at Mattavae, Owahiu procured them from other districts. Sufficient supplies having been obtained, and the health of the ship’s company being re-established, Captain Wallis sailed on the 27th of July. He required the hospitality of Oberea with a variety of presents; among which were turkeys, a gander and geese, and a cat; with many iron utensils, which the natives were eager to obtain, having learned the use of them from a neighbouring low island, named Tappoohoe, where a Dutch ship, belonging to Roggewein’s squadron, had been wrecked forty-five years before. Early in April 1768, Otaheite was again visited by Europeans. M. de Bougainville, in the Boudeuse frigate, accompanied by a store-ship, coasted this island to the eastward, as Wallis had done; but was deterred from doubling Point Venus, by the appearance of the reef which encloses it. A timid caution, which most of the French navigators have betrayed when at sea, exposed M. de Bougainville to the inconvenience of anchoring within a reef on the windward side of the island. He was amicably received by Ochoe, chief of Hedeia, the district where the ships were moored. This person’s brother, Outoooro, attached himself to the commander immediately upon his arrival, and afterward accompanied him to France. The father of these young men, Owabui, and some other principal people of the district, objected, however, to the sick persons being landed from the ships, till an assurance was given that they would not remain many days.

M. de Bougainville was soon visited by Toteanga, youngest brother of Oiamo, who preceded over the wellermost districts of the island. He was accompanied by several others of the royal family, whose superior stature distinguished them from the rest of the company. It does not appear that Oiamo, or Oberea, whose usual residence was at the southernmost part of the larger peninsula, visited Hedeia during the stay of the French, which lasted only eight days. It was apparently rendered the more pacific, in consequence of the experience the islanders had derived from Captain Wallis’ visit, whom they sup-
poised to have come from the same country as M. de Bougainville. They supplied abundance of provisions, and willingly assisted the working parties from the ships, but availed themselves of every opportunity to pilfer. Sensuality seems to have been practised with still greater indecency than before, and several murders were privately committed by the French sailors, notwithstanding the hospitality with which they were entertained. A woman who had failed from France with the crew, disguised in man's apparel, was detected by the natives upon her landing. Accustomed to see the sexes clothed alike, they immediately perceived the difference of her shape; but they conceived mean ideas of European beauty from her countenance.

The French vessels sailed 14th April; after the loss of several anchors, their cables having been cut afunder by the coral rock. Within a few weeks afterwards M. de Bougainville found that several people on board, and Outooreo himself, were infected with the venereal disease. Captain Wallis seems to have been peculiarly attentive to the state of his ship's company, and positively afferts that they were entirely free from every symptom of this disorder six months before, and still longer after their visit at Otaheite. The accounts of the islanders respecting their previous knowledge of the complaint are confused and contradictory. The present existence, and the general prevalence of the evil, is but too obvious; and it concurs with other dreadful effects of senility, to threaten the entire depopulation of this beautiful island, if it be not reasonably averted by the happy influence of the gospel. and the immediate steps of the missionaries.

Subsequent to M. de Bougainville's departure, a revolution occurred in the government of Otaheite, the effects of which proved to be permanent and important. The whole island at that time acknowledged the sovereignty of Temaire. The smaller peninsula, called Teiruaou, was governed by an elderly man named Waheadooa, distantly related to the king. The larger peninsula has usually been distributed into three principal governments, each of which included several subordinate districts: they were then subject to three brothers, Oamo,
failed with Wallis. His assistance was again found useful in the traffic which commenced, under proper regulations, with his countrymen; and in appeasing their resentment, when it was excited by the death of one of them, too hastily inflicted in consequence of their thefts. A small fort was erected near the northernmost point of the island, which now received the name of Point Venus, on account of the observations that were made upon that planet the 3d of June. At the same time a party was sent to the neighbouring island of Eimeo, to observe the transit from thence. Lieutenant Cook afterwards made a survey of Otaheite, in which he was accompanied by Mr. (now Sir Joseph) Banks, who had failed in the Endeavour with a view to the advancement of natural history. They met with Waheadooa and his son, then about thirteen years of age, at Teiarraboo, and found that peninsula in a flourishing condition. Its inhabitants boasted of their military prowess and success; of which they possessed many trophies; and among others, the turkey-cock and the goose which Captain Wallis had given to Oberea. The English were everywhere hospitably treated, excepting the depredations which they suffered from the thievish genius of the natives. The fame levities was perpetrated as on former occasions; and, to avoid loathsome repetitions, we shall generally omit to mention it in future. These practices at times interrupted the harmony which usually subsisted between the navigators and the islanders; but it was almost wholly destroyed previous to their separation. Two marines having deserted from the ship, Cook ventured to confine Tootaha and several other principal persons till the deserters should be brought back. The natives by way of retaliation seized upon some Englishmen; but being ordered by Tootaha to surrender them and the deserters to the commander, he in return released his royal captives, he being prepared to resist. The military pride and ambition of the regent urged him to perfist in his attempt; and, having equipped a fleet of war canoes, he sailed toward the smaller peninsula, and engaged the naval force of Waheadooa, with nearly equal loss on each side. Tootaha retired, with a determination to try his success by land. His brother Happae disapproved of this measure, and remained at Oparr; but Tootaha obliged Otoo, who always disliked fighting, to accompany the army. It engaged that of Waheadooa at the isthmus, and was totally routed: Tootaha and Tootooone Tamaede were killed on the spot; Orette and many others severely wounded; and Otoo escaped, with a few of his friends, to the summits of the mountains, where his father and family had taken refuge upon being informed of the defeat. Waheadooa marched directly to Mattavae and Oparr, laying waste all the country, as is usual in their wars; but he sent reasonable proposals of peace to Happae and Otoo, who readily accepted them. The latter, having then arrived at maturity, assumed the administration of the government, with the assistance of his father's advice. He had two sisters, one of whom remained unmarried, and being older than he, might have put in a prior claim to the sovereignty; but the waved her right in his favour. Of three brothers, the eldest was ten years younger than Otoo; he was then a very
active and intelligent boy, and has since become well known under the name of Oraipia: the next brother, Weidóon, was six years younger than he; the youngest, Teppahio, then an infant, has ever since remained in obscurity, on account of his deficiency of intellect.

Wahedooa did not long survive his triumphs; and his name and government devolved without opposition upon his son. A Spanish vessel, said to have been commanded by Don Juan de Langara, visited Taiaaraboo about March 1773. She remained ten days at anchor in a harbour formed by reefs, at the south-east end of the island, and called by the natives Owhae-ooróoa. Four of the ship's company were publicly executed there; and a fifth escaped the same fate by flight. He was the first European who became a resident at Otaheite, and was kindly treated by the natives, to whose manners he entirely conformed. Young Wahedooa made him one of his principal companions and counsellors.

Captain Cook visited this island the following August, in the Resolution, accompanied by Captain Fumeaux in the Adventure. These vessels were in much danger near the place where the Spaniards had anchored, the Resolution striking repeatedly on the adjacent reef. On the 17th of August they anchored in a bay on the northern coast of Taiaaraboo, called Oweitapeha. The English were disappointed of obtaining provisions, as was said, by the influence of the young chief's Spanish adviser, who carefully avoided intercourse with them. They gained intelligence from an islander named Teoahus, who had attended Cook in part of his voyage during the former visit. The map of Otaheite, which had then been engraved, being flown to this man, he readily comprehended it, and pointed out by name the districts that were marked upon it. It may be proper here to observe, that the number and the names of these divisions vary at different periods; a district being sometimes subdivided into several by the chiefs, in order to distribute the land among their friends.

Wahedooa did not visit his acquaintance, Captain Cook, till the 23d, and the latter failed the following day from Oweitapeha; but left behind Lieutenant Pickersgill to purchase hogs, which the natives were permitted to bring when almost too late. The young chief discovered some ingenuity mingled with boyish weakness, and preferred at the market with great propriety. Mr. Pickersgill proceeded from thence in a boat to Hedea, where he was kindly entertained by Orette, and his brother Taioore. Neither of them made any inquiry after Outoore, although they supposed him to have gone with M. de Bougainville to the same country from whence Cook came. Toopáea also seemed to be nearly forgotten; but Sir Joseph Banks, and others of the English, who had been most conversant with the islanders, were every where inquired after. The boat rejoined the ships at Hedea, and they proceeded to Mattavae, where they anchored 25th August.

Otoo, who was on the shore surrounded by a multitude gazing at the ships, did not wait to receive the English, but hurried in terror over the hill which divides Mattavae from Oparret, where he resided. Cook visited him there the next day, and with difficulty prevailed upon him to venture on board the vessels on the following. These districts had not recovered from the effects of the war with Teiarraboo, and provisions were scarce. Potatoes in some measure supplied the deficiency from Attahooroo. Otoo expressed much regret at the departure of the vessels, which occurred 8th September.

Captain Cook revisited Mattavae 22d April 1774, having in the mean time repeatedly entered the antarctic circle in the fruitless search after a southern continent, which was the principal object of this voyage. On his last departure from Otaheite, he had been accompanied from the Society Islands, by a young man of rank and some abilities; named Hete-hete. By his advice, red feathers had been procured at the Friendly Islands; and they were found to be the most valuable article of trade at Otaheite. The northern districts had also recovered their usual prosperity since the former visit of the Resolution, and at this time supplied abundantly the wants of the navigators. They found much relief from bilious complaints by the
ufe of the evê fruit, which, from its external appearance, has been always called an apple, although it has a firon resembling that of a peach. During the stay of Captain Cook, which was prolonged in order to repair his ship, a fleet of large war canoes assembled in the bay, for the purpose of attacking the neighbouring island of Eimeo. The chief of that country, Motooaro, had married a sister of Otoo, and being expelled by his uncle Mahine, he had taken refuge with his brother-in-law. The western districts having united with those of Teperreonoo to maintain the cause of Motooaro, Towha, who was then chief of Tarbâ, was appointed to the command of the combined fleet. He possessed great courage and talents, was advanced in years, and was highly respected. His district furnished forty-four large canoes toward the fleet; that of Attahooroo one hundred and sixty; and Mattavae, probably in consequence of its late devastation, only ten. Tiarraboo also was expected to send a quota for this expedition; yet both Otoo and Towha, although jealous of each other, entreated Cook to assist them in attacking that peninsula. The number of small canoes employed to transport provisions, and designed to bring back the bodies of those who might be killed, equalled that of the larger canoes employed in fighting. From the multitude of people embarked in this fleet, Captain Cook computed that the whole island might contain more than two hundred thousand inhabitants. Subsequent navigators have even exceeded this calculation; but it appears that at present there is not a tenth part of that number of people in Otaheite. Unlimited licentiousness, with the general contamination, and infant murders, attendant upon it, have, without doubt, dreadfully diminished the population.

Amidst the confusion occasioned by so great a concourse of the natives, some daring thefts were committed; and the severity which was consequently exercised, alarmed the timidity of Otoo. One of his elder relations, named Te, became useful as a messenger and mediator between the young king and his formidable guests. Oarno and Oberea visited them from Pappara; and the latter, though greatly declined in dignity, and advancing in years, discovered no abatement of lewdness. The islanders exhibited a mock sea-fight, and the English some fireworks, for their mutual entertainment; and they parted very amicably on the 14th of May. Hës-hëte, who had connected himself with a family at Mattavae, took a passage in the ship to see his friends at Uliete. Of various animals which had been left at Oathite by the Resolution nine months before, the only species likely to multiply were goats and cats. The expedition to Eimeo proved successful in restoring Motooaro to a temporary possession of the sovereignty of that island.

Tiarraboo was shortly after revisited by the Spaniards, in two ships from Lima, which anchored in Oweitapea bay. The commander died there, and was buried on shore, near a crois which they had erected, and inscribed with, "Chrifius vincit," and "Carolus imperat. 1774." They also constructed, of materials which they had brought for the purpose from Peru, a wooden house, consisting of two apartments, with loop-holes in the walls, which admitted air, and might be used for defence with musquetry. Two priests, with an attendant upon each, remained at this habitation when the ships departed, and were peacefully and respectfully treated by the natives; but it does not appear that they had much conversation with them. One of their attendants, however, frequently travelled in the island, and became familiar with the language of the inhabitants. He told them many fabulous stories of the English, and assured them that his countrymen had fallen in with Cook's vessel and destroyed it, with the whole crew.

Four of the islanders had sided in the Spanish ships to Lima, and two of them died there. The survivors were brought back by the same vessels ten months afterward, and the priests and their attendants were taken away. A bull and a ram, with some goats, dogs, and Spanish swine, were landed; and the house and crois were left standing, and carefully preserved by the natives. Those who had visited Peru returned wholly to their former course of life; one of them
The ships proceeded to Mattavae, and anchored there on the 24th of August; a friendly interview immediately took place with Otoo and his family, which remained in the same state as formerly. Captain Cook delivered into his charge an English bull, three cows, a horse, a mare, and some sheep, which had been conveyed from England with very great trouble, in the hope of rendering essential service to these hospitable islands. The Spanish bull had been transported from Tiarraboo to Mattavae on the way to Bobaboola; the sovereign of that island having sent an emissary, who pretended to inspiration, to procure the bull from Waheadooa. Captain Cook arriving in time to stop its progress, committed this animal also, which was of a capital breed, to the custody of Otoo. Various domestic fowls were likewise left with him, and garden-seeds planted in some ground cleared for the purpose. Otoo had besides in his possession the gander that had been given ten years before by Captain Wallis to Oberoa. This lady had died since the former visits of the Resolution. The body of Te, the king's uncle, and minister of state, who had been dead four months, was still preserved from putrefaction. The body of Hete-bite had arrived at Mattavae but a short time before his English friends, to whom he shewed an unabated attachment; but he declined the use of some clothing which they had brought out as a present to him. Otoo having acted as imprudently in the disposal of his property at this place as at Tiarraboo, the design of establishing him at Otaheite was relinquished.

Intelligence being received from Eimeo, that Mahéine had again revolted from Mocearo, and had obliged him to take refuge in the mountains, Otoo earnestly entreated Captain Cook to take an active part in the quarrel, but he prudently declined to interfere. Human sacrifices were offered at Atahooroo to influence success to the expedition, and Towha and Potato again conducted the fleet belonging to their districts to attack Mahéine. They found him, however, so well prepared to receive them, that, after repeatedly applying to Otoo for reinforcements, without procuring any, they concluded a peace on
terms which were advantageous to the revolters. There had been a
great diversity of sentiments among the chiefs on the subject of this
expedition, and the blame of its unfavourable issue was imputed by
force to the haughtiness of Towha, and by others to Otoo's delay in
augmenting the fleet. The jealousy which had always subsisted
between these great men was excited to such a degree, that Towha
vowed revenge against Otoo, and was only prevented from executing
it by the menaces of Captain Cook. The latter quitted Matavae on
the 29th of September 1777, and for the first time visited Eimeo.
Some thefts which the natives of that island committed, were punished
by him with unprecedented severity. He returned no more, being
killed at the Sandwich Islands on the 16th of February 1779.

Previous to that event Otoo espoused Ideea, the elder sister of
Motoaro, with whom he thus became doubly connected by mar-
riage. The first child she bore to him was immediately suffocated,
that they might preserve their rank in the acquire society; but a
second being born was preserved, and in consequence the title and
sovereign dignity of Otoo immediately devolved upon his infant
son. The father retained his former power as regent, and in the
conduct of it he was greatly assisted by his intelligent and active
consort. He has since been called by various names successively; but,
to avoid confusion, we shall only use that of Pomare, by which he
has been known during the last six years.

Towha seems to have suppressed his resentment till the usual length
of time between Captain Cook's visits at Otaheite had elapsed; he
then united the forces of Tettaha and Attahooroo with Matavae
against those of Oparre and the eastern districts. The contest was
frequently renewed, and usually terminated to the advantage of Towha.
Pomare's war canoes being nearly destroyed, his adversaries pursued
their success by land, and laid waste Oparre and Matavae. They
at length suffered a severe check by the death of Matavae, who was
killed in battle by the hand of Weidoo, Pomare's younger brother.
This catastrophe appears to have prevented the renewal of hostilities

PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.
bore no price with them. The ring of an anchor, which M. de Bougainville had left ten years before in Hedēa, was produced by Pomarre, who requested to have it forged into small adzes. The utmost abundance of animal and vegetable food was supplied in exchange for European articles; and besides the original productions of the island, pumpkins and capificuos, cats and goats, were offered for sale. It was observed, that the women of the higher class were more cautious than formerly of promiscuous intercourse, probably in consequence of what they had suffered from disease. Pomarre, substituting the people of Eimeo, he complained greatly of the long absence of the English, and of the shortness of their present stay, which was only for a fortnight. Hete-hete, who was at Mattavae, begged to be taken to Ulieta; but Pomarre being unwilling to part with him, he was obliged to remain.

An event approached which issued in an important change of the condition of Otaheite. The information which had been received by the former voyages of the great utility of the bread-fruit, induced the merchants and planters of the British West Indian islands to request that means might be used to transplant it thither. For this benevolent purpose a ship was commissioned by his Majesty, which was named the Bounty; and Lieutenant Bligh, who had failed as master with Captain Cook, was appointed to conduct her to Otaheite, where the plants might be most easily and abundantly procured. He arrived at Mattavae on the 26th of October 1788, hardly more than three months after Lieutenant Watts's departure. Happae and Oraepia were found there, and the latter was peculiarly anxious to prevent his countrymen from practising their usual thefts. The frame of Captain Cook's picture, which had suffered some damage by its removals, was brought to be mended; and on the 28th Pomarre arrived with Iddea from a district of Tethuroa, where he had taken up his residence. Weidooa, who had gained great credit by his prowess in battle, but was excessively addicted to the intoxicating

PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

Ignot of the ava root, and a chief of Mattavae, named Poeno, were generally of the visiting parties. A garden was planted near the houses belonging to the latter and to Moanna. Poeno and Orrette, and his kindred, renewed their friendship with the English. The young sovereign, who was about six years old, was only to be accorded from the opposite side of a river at Opare. The English were required to make their shoulders bare when in his presence; but they compromised this ceremony by uncovering their heads. He was accompanied by a younger brother and a sister, beside whom Iddea had also a female infant by Pomarre; yet the inhabitants openly at that time with one of his servants, and has done so ever since. Tepitiho, an uncle of Pomarre, had destroyed eight children, in order to preserve his rank as an arreere. He resided at Tetaha, as chief of that district, Towha being dead. The wife of the latter, Wann-ara survived him, and was much respected.

Lieutenant Bligh having made very handsome presents from the king of Great-Britain to Pomarre, informed him that the most acceptable return would be a large quantity of the young bread-fruit plants, and that he would oblige him by carrying them in his cabin for King George; which was immediately confided to Pomarre expressed little concern about the loss of the cattle, but much desire to be avenged upon the people of Eimeo, and he was gratified with two matchets, a pair of pitholes, and a considerable stock of ammunition. He had not sufficient fortitude to use these articles himself: but Hete-hete, who remained with him, was a good markman; and although it is not customary for the females of Otaheite to go to battle, Iddea's whole personal strength and courage were unusually great, had learned to use a matchet with some dexterity.

Oberreroa, the mother of Pomarre, came from the small islands of Tethuroa, and visited the Bounty with difficulty, being old and corpulent. She seems to have been a native of Ulieta, from whence some of her relations, who were chiefs in that island, came to Mattavae at this time. One of them brought an ewe, which Captain
PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

Cook had left at Ulietea, and which was then almost destroyed by the mangel. Another, who was at that time called Tootahē, seems to be the same person since known by the name of Manua-māme, Ulietea and Otaheī, but by office a priest. Beside the sheep, which shortly died, a bull was procured from Heda, and a cow from Tetaha; and both were committed to the charge of Pomare, from whom the former had been obtained by a person pretending to be inspired.

On Christmas-day the Bounty was removed to a reef harbour on the coast of Oparre, the bay of Mattavae having become dangerous through the variable and violent winds which are common at that season. Nearly eight hundred pots of bread-fruit plants were then taken on board, and upwards of one thousand plants were afterward added, together with some of the co, eheya, rātti, orīya, tou, and mate trees; and the te, yāpe, and pēa roots. The length of time employed in collecting these, was attended with the detention of several among the seamen, who were pursued to Tethuro by Orapeia, and at length were seized at Tetaha. The ship's cable was cut nearly through, evidently with the design of letting the ship drive on shore in tempestuous weather. This is said to have been done by Wieloo, on account of an officer to whom he was attached, on account of an officer he had been an officer of. The thefts of the inhabitants likewise increased with the delay, but the chiefs exerted themselves to bring them to punishment. Some maize had been planted since the arrival of the Bounty, which ripened before the failure. Captain Cook's picture, which had, by Pomare's request, been kept on board the ship, was then delivered again to him, with the date of the ship's arrival and departure recorded upon the back of the picture, which has ever since been practised by commanders of English men of war. The Bounty was unmoored the 4th of April 1789, having remained at Otaheite more than five months.

The situation of Pomare was evidently at that time neither comfortable nor secure. He earnestly desired Captain Bligh to take himself and Iidea to Britain. Hete-hete equally wished to go in the ship. A coolness then subsisted between Pomare and Orapeia, which was supposed to have arisen from a disagreement of their wives. Shortly after the departure of the ship a revolution took place at Eimeo, by which Matuaaro's authority was established. Taremoodia took refuge in Ataheoro, and was afterward entertained by Temaru at Pappari, where he remained in a private station.

The Bounty returned to Mattavae on the 6th of June, having in the mean time been visited by twenty-five of the crew, who had mutinied, and turned adrift Lieutenaut Bligh, and eighteen officers and seamen, in the launch belonging to the ship. Fletcher Christian, the master's mate, a young man of respectable connexions and good talents, was chosen to command the mutineers. He had persuaded them to go to Tōoibua, a small island ninety leagues to the southward of Otaheite; preferring it to the latter, as being less exposed to visits from Europeans. Having found Tōoibua deficient in animal provisions, he brought the ship again to Otaheite, to procure some stock for the settlement which he intended to make. He availed himself, for this purpose, of the fiction which had been hitherto supported respecting Captain Cook; asserting that they had met with him, and that he had sent the ship back for all the live stock that could be spared, in order to form a settlement at a place which Captain Bligh had discovered in his course toward the Friendly Islands. The inhabitants gave credit to his story, and vied with each other who should furnish most for the service of Captain Cook; so that by the 16th of June, four hundred and sixty hogs, fifty goats, and great quantities of fowls, dogs, and cats were collected. The bull and cow, which had been committed to the charge of Pomare by Captain Bligh, were also taken away; but the former died on the passage, from the falls he received. Eleven female Otaheiteans failed with the mutineers; and it was soon found that thirteen male natives, among whom was Hete-hete, had concealed themselves in the ship. When informed of the real destination
of the vessel, and of the great improbability there was that they would ever return to their own country, they discovered no dissatisfaction; but adhered cheerfully and faithfully to the mutineers during their attempts to establish themselves at Toobouae.

Subsequent to the second departure of the Bounty from Otaheite, a Swedish armed vessel, commanded by J. H. Cox, arrived there. Captain Cox was received by Pomarre and Temarre, who continued to take up their residence at Pappara with Temarre, who consented that some of them should reside at M., pared. They were hospitably received by their hosts, who was acknowledged as the successor of his uncle, whose name devolved upon him, as it had before done upon Churchill.

Weiooroo, was acknowledged as the successor of his uncle, who had not been active in the affair. Some of them remained at Otaheite, were several who was nephew of the late Waheadooa, and son of the chief of Weiooroo, was acknowledged as the successor of his uncle, whose name devolved upon him, as it had before done upon Churchill.

Pomarre was anxious that the rest of the English should remain unconnected with Teiarraboo; but confessed that some of them should take up their residence at Pappara with Temarre, who continued to be on terms of friendship with him. They had all been constantly

The more ingenious and industrious among them employed themselves in the construction of a schooner, about the size of the passage-boats between London and Gravesend. It was difficult to find, and to convey from the mountains, timber suited to their purpose; and still more so, to substitute such articles as were to be obtained in the country, for the necessary iron-work, pitch, and rigging. The natives, although they prized other things, never flung their tools, but assisted them occasionally in the laborious parts of their work; and were less surprised at their skill, than at their perseverance in such an undertaking. It was hardly to be expected, that the whole of the party who had engaged in it, would adhere to each other till it was completed. One of them, named Churchill, who had been master at arms in the ship, and was very active in the mutiny, accepted an invitation to live with Waheadooa, who was sovereign of Teiarraboo at the time that Cook last visited that peninsula. Another, named Thompson, one of the most ignorant and brutal of the crew, accompanied him; but they very shortly disagreed. Waheadooa died soon afterward, without children; and Churchill, having been his tayo, succeeded to his property and dignity, according to the established custom of the country. Thompson was excited by envy of Churchill's preferment, and by revenge for some tricks he had played him, to take an opportunity of shooting him. The natives roused the murder of their new sovereign, and slew Thompson to death. A boy of four years old, who was nephew of the late Waheadooa, and son of the chief of Weiooroo, was acknowledged as the successor of his uncle, whose name devolved upon him, as it had before done upon Churchill.

Pomarre was anxious that the rest of the English should remain unconnected with Teiarraboo; but confessed that some of them should take up their residence at Pappara with Temarre, who continued to be on terms of friendship with him. They had all been constantly
and plentifully supplied with provisions by Pomarre's orders, and he at length requested in return their assistance to attack Eimeo, where another insurrection was formed against Motoaro. They declined to Captain Cox had given him. Hete-hete, who remained at Otaheite to use them, easily turned the scale of victory against the insurgents, and confirmed Motoaro in the peaceful possession of his rights.

A few months afterwards the western districts of Attaheito and Tinian to Oto" invaded both Oparre and Pappara, through jealousy of the growing power of the royal family. The mutineers thought it necessary, for their own safety, to arm on the side of their friends. Their schooner having been launched, a fleet of small canoes was formed against Attaheito, which was likewise attacked from the quarter of Pappara. Tetowa, and their adherents, took refuge in the mountains, and in a short time obtained peace by submitting to Otoo's authority. They also surrendered to him the royal scar, which was carried in triumph to the nave at Oparre, after having remained at Attaheito twenty-one years. Tetowa, who was a young man of remarkable comeliness, died soon afterwards, and an uncle of Pomarre's was appointed in his stead. Potatto, through the intercession of the English, was allowed to retain his authority in Attaheito. After paying a visit to Motoaro, with whom some of them retired from that time, they laid up their schooner at Mattavae during the tempestuous season, which usually prevails between November and March.

Early in 1791 the ceremony took place of investing Otoo with the royal garment, on which occasion Captain Cox's flag was sent entirely round the island in token of the young chief's supremacy. It was
the rest. Lieutenant Hayward having proceeded by water to Pappara, and searched for them in vain, was informed the next forenoon, that laying down their arms as they approached his party; and Mr. after them into the valley.

During the whole time of the mutineers' continuance at Otaheite, Pomarre had remained at Teiaraboo, but upon the arrival of the Pandora taken to wife her younger sister, Weitēde, but was still equally influenced by the advice of the former. He readily co-operated with was anxious to prevent had consequences from the return of appear to have been highly respectable; but one instance occurred of a mutiny, had lived with the daughter of a person of property at removal afflicted her to such a degree as to bring on a decline that who cherished it with the utmost tenderness. Three daughters and a son were left by others of the mutineers.

Notwithstanding the mournful interviews that daily took place on board, between the Englishmen, who were kept in irons, and of festivity, amusements, and debaucheries, was uninterrupted on the 8th of May, accompanied by the schooner which the mutineers had built, under the command of a petty officer from the mutineers, came away in the ship; and Hete-here went in her to Bokbola, his native island. Pomarre and his wives were also full desirous of quitting the island, but their departure was strongly opposed by Orapeia; and other chiefs whose persuasions prevailed.

Of the fourteen people who were seized at Otaheite, and taken away in the Pandora, four were drowned when the ship was cast away on her, return; the rest were preserved in boats, and brought to trial in England. Four of them were acquitted, as having had no concern in the mutiny; and were mostly provided for in Greenwich Hospital. Another was discharged, his conviction not having been legally conducted. Two were pardoned, and have since been employed in the navy. The remaining three were executed at Spithead.

At the close of the same year Captain Vancouver, in a ship named the Discovery, and Lieutenant Broughton in the Chatham brig, arrived at Otaheite. The vessels having been separated on their passage, the Chatham first reached that island, which was appointed for their rendezvous. She anchored at Mattavae on the 27th of December 1791, and the Discovery joined her three days later. Pomarre was then at Eimeo, but returned the following week with Motooaro, who was much reduced in health, and died a fortnight afterward. Another chief of the same name, who was sovereign of Huaheine, but acknowledged the supremacy of Otoo, was at Mattavae when the ships arrived, and remained there while they stayed. Mannemane, then named Mounère, although he had succeeded Opōone in the sovereignty of Uleia and Otahe, refused chief at Otaheite. The expedition which had been meditated against Teiaraboo had been carried into effect, and the younger brother of Otoo had been appointed chief of that peninsula. Orapeia refused there as regent for his nephew, and Weidooa at Oparre. Pomarre had fixed his abode at Eimeo, and the inhabitants of that island became reconciled and attached to his government, as regent for the daughter of the deceased Motooaro. Potatto remained likewise in amity and subjection. Orapeia was still capable of activity, and was then treated with reverence by his three sons, who were also cordially attached to each other. They all behaved with their usual
hospitability toward the English; but they could not dissuade Pomarre from their intercourse. The manners of the natives had become more the heathen world! More damage than benefit has resulted. We refer to the narratives of the voyages of the Dredalus and the Duff, we refer to the narrative of the latter for the intervening occurrences.

The numerous detached accounts, from which the preceding narrative has been with difficulty compiled, cannot but excite painful sensations in a serious mind. While, in some respects, the prudence and humanity of our navigators are conspicuous, how much is it to be lamented, that, in various important views, they appear to have derived from the knowledge of Christianity no advantage over the heathen world! More damage than benefit certainly has resulted from their intercourse. The manners of the natives had become more
PARLIMINARY DISCOURSE.

... of people is such, that in the most variable and tempestuous season of the year, one hundred canoes have been seen together upon this spot, the year before. The only island, beside Teihuatah, that is in absolute subjection to Otaheite is Maiae, which belongs to the chief of Teihuatah. It is an island, situated in 17° 30' latitude, 150° west longitude. Eimeo, on the north coast, which is thought most eligible for vessels, is situated in 17° 30' latitude, 150° west longitude. Eimeo was...
unavoidably seen by every navigator who has visited Otaheite. Captain Wallis named it the Duke of York's island.

The island nearest to the westward from Eimeo is Tapoa- manoe, which was discovered on the 28th of July 1767 by Captain Wallis, and called by him, Sir Charles Saunders's island. It is situated in latitude 17° 25', west longitude 150° 40'. Its greatest extent is from east to west, about six miles. Its centre rises in a mountain with a double peak; but the greater part had a fertile appearance, and the lower grounds abounded with cocoa-nut trees. The habitations seemed to be small, and not very numerous. Its government has usually depended upon that of Huaheine, from whence it is distant about fourteen leagues, south by east. It is not known that Europeans ever landed upon it.

Huaheine (or Abiena, which signifies woman) is the eastermost island of the group called the Society Islands by Captain Cook, who discovered them in July 1767; and it is twenty-eight leagues to the north-west of Otaheite, being situated in latitude 16° 45', 151° 7' west longitude. It has about seven leagues of circuit, and is divided into two peninsulas by an isthmus overflowed at high water: in other parts of the island there are also salt lakes near the sea. It has a very narrow strip of fertile low land next the shore; and the hills, which are not nearly so high as those of Otaheite, but more strongly marked by volcanic fire, are in some parts entirely cultivated. The productions are similar to those of Otaheite, but earlier in season. The men are generally larger and more robust; both sexes are less timid and less curious. They were more daring in their thefts from the English, having never felt the force of their weapons of destruction in the manner that the Otaheites had done.

Huaheine was always visited by Captain Cook on departing from Otaheite. During his first two voyages, the sovereign power over Huaheine was vested in a friendly old man named Ore, who acted as regent for a boy named Taisteera. He was not more than ten years old in 1777, but Ore had then been obliged to resign the government, and no one seeming to succeed him as regent, there was consequently very little authority maintained. It has since that time been visited by Lieutenant Watts, Captain Bligh, and Captain Edwards; but no farther information is afforded by their voyages respecting the government of the country. In the close of 1791, it appears that the chiefs of Huaheine, and of Tapoaamanou, acknowledged the supremacy of Otaheite. The wars of Huaheine have always had a relation to the island next to the westward, as will be mentioned.

Ulietea, or, more properly, Raiahea, is situated seven leagues W. S. W. from Huaheine. It is wholly surrounded by reefs, intersected with small islands, and forming several harbours. One of these, upon the north-western coast, is in latitude 16° 45', west longitude 153° 34' 1. It is less populous and fertile than Huaheine, although above twice its extent, and more resembling Otaheite in its appearance; but, like the former, it has several salt marshes or lagoons. The inhabitants are in general smaller and darker than those of the preceding islands. Its importance is in the cluster to which those of the preceding islands belong, is not now proportionate to its relative magnitude. A few years before Captain Wallis's visit to Otaheite, it was the most eminently of the group, and in strict alliance with the adjacent island of Otoha, as well as with Huaheine. Its decline appears to have originated in the secession of Otoha from this league. The fleets of Bolobola and Ulitea were attacked by the single force of Bolobola. The combat was likely to issue in favour of the united fleets, when the combat was likely to issue in favour of the united fleets, when the combat was likely to issue in favour of the united fleets, when the combat was likely to issue in favour of the united fleets, when the combat was likely to issue in favour of the united fleets, when the combat was likely to issue in favour of the united fleets, when the combat was likely to issue in favour of the united fleets, when the combat was likely to issue in favour of the united fleets, when
that island. They could not, however, regain the ground that had been lost at Ulietea. Its former sovereign, Oreo, was permitted to return to his hereditary district, Opoone, at the north-eastern point of the island; but Toopaea and Omate, with many others, were deprived of their possessions, and compelled to seek support in other islands, their property being seized by the victorious chiefs. The latter soon quarrelled among themselves. The people of Otaha, claiming an equal share of the spoil, were attacked, and subdued, by their formidable allies of Bola-bola; and a chief from that island, named Ore-o, was appointed governor of Ulietea by the new sovereign, Opoone. Both these persons were at Ulietea when Captain Cook visited the island in 1769; and Oreo kept the same power during his latter voyages also; but in that of 1777, Opoone, the former sovereign, had removed to Hushahe; and Ore-o, who had been regent of that island, then reigned at Ulietea.

At the death of Opoone his dominions were divided, and both Ulietea and Otaha fell to the possession of a brother of Opoone, now known at Ulietea by the name of Manemanan, who declared that at his own desire the sovereignty of those islands should revert to his nephew Oreo. His authority does not, however, appear to have been sufficient to secure the reversion, nor even the possession of this dignity; of which he has since been deprived, either by his temporary subjects, or by their neighbours of Bola-bola.

The people of Ulietea behaved very submissively to Cook upon his first visit, apparently in the hope excited by Toopaea, that he would refuse them from the yoke of Bola-bola. He was also treated with much friendship by Oreo, but the thefts which are customary at these islands could not be prevented by the authority of the latter. The mythology adopted by these poor heathens seems to be better understood here than in the other islands, and even to be regularly taught in its several districts. Both Toopaea and Manemanan, after being expelled from Ulietea, acted as chief priests at Otaha.

Otaha is not more than two miles distant from the northernmost point of the preceding island; and no passage for shipping has been found through the reef which connects them. It is about half the size of Ulietea, which it resembles in its aspect, but is still less fertile or populous. Captain Cook visited it in 1769 with his boats, in consequence of the latter's voyage having been entirely round the Society. Lieutenant Pickergill went likewise in a boat entirely round the interior of the island, in order to recover his lock in trade which had been stolen. The latter voyage also

Bolaba (more usually pronounced Borabora) is situated four leagues N. W. of Otaha, to which it is inferior in extent; but is covered with a great many small islands, which are scattered among the rocky shores that make the island larger than those which are scattered among the rocks that enclose the reefs of Eimeo, or the rocks of Eimeo, others being strongly indented, form like the coasts of Eimeo, others being strongly indented, form like the coasts of Eimeo, others being strongly indented, form like the coasts of Eimeo, others being strongly indented, form like the coasts of Eimeo, others being strongly indented,
Bolabola, named Oraa, or Osea, had been adopted by the people of Tiaraboo, in preference to two imaginary deities whom they formerly worshipped. The Bolobolan warriors are punctured in a different manner from those of the more eastern islands.

Captain Cook did not land at Bolabola upon his first or second voyage. In 1777 he was prevented by contrary winds from anchoring in the harbour, which is very spacious; and he landed in his boat, to purchase an anchor which had been lost by M. de Bougainville at Heda, and had been conveyed from thence to Bolabola for the gratification of Opoone. This chief, although then very old and feeble, was still universally esteemed and feared. The ram which the Spaniards had left at Oveitapeba, had also been sent to this distant place: Captain Cook therefore presented Opoone with an ewe to accompany it. That chief having died, probably during the long interval which elapsed between the voyages of Cook and those of later navigators, was succeeded in his government of this and the following islands by his daughter. She was about twelve years old in 1774, and had then been betrothed to a chief named Boba, who governed Oraa, under Opoone, and was designed to succeed him in the sovereignty. In 1791, when Captain Edwards visited Bolabola to inquire after the mutineers, a man, said to be named Tatoo, had the chief authority. The identity of this person with Boba is not rendered unlikely by the difference of names, one title beingeldon's borne so long a time by the same person. These four islands were named by Captain Cook the Society Islands, on account of the short distances by which they are separated from each other. The licentious society called Anone, extends both to this group and to Otaheite. The members of it wander permanently in great numbers from one island to another, performing dances and plays, and indulging in every kind of profanity.

The small island of MaIDDLE lies about four leagues west of the northern part of Bolabola, to which it is subject. It is wholly surrounded by a reef, and its centre rises in a high round hill, its
PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

Europeans, have been described by the natives of the Society Isles, as lying to the eastward, southward, and westward of their group; and several of them are represented as lofty, fertile, and extensive. An island, called Oheoera, situated in latitude 22° 27', 150° 47' west longitude, was discovered by Captain Cook 13th August 1769, and recognized by Toopae, who was then on board the Endeavour. The same person laid down the positions of seventy-seven islands, which were known to him either by observation or report. Not far from Oheoera is Toobouai, already mentioned as the island where Fletcher Christian attempted to form a settlement. It lies in latitude 22° 25', and 149° 23' west longitude. Both these islands are populous, although neither of them is twenty miles in circuit. The former differs from the Society Islands only in having no surrounding reef of coral. The latter entirely resembles them in appearance, but the natives are more sedate and less hospitable. It was first inhabited within a few past generations, by some people who had attempted to go with a canoe from an island far to the westward, toward another with which they had customary intercourse, but were driven by tempestuous weather upon Toobouai. Another canoe, in which was a chief of Ulietea, an ancestor of Otaheite, passed from thence to Otaheite, was likewise driven upon this island some years later. He was admitted by those who had preceded him to the chief authority at Toobouai; and he divided the country into three districts, which retain the names of Reiadea, Waheine, and Taha, three of the Society isles. A third canoe also drifted hither, with the skeleton of a man in it, which was recognized by one of the Otaheiteans who accompanied the marines of the Bounty to Toobouai. He had killed this man in one of the sea-fights between Pomare and Maheine, and was afterward obliged to escape by swimming, leaving his canoe, with the corpse in it, to the direction of the winds and waves. Accidents similar to these are known to have occurred in several other parts of this ocean. An instance is given by Captain Cook, of a canoe which, likewise in attempting the passage between Otaheite and Ulietea, was...
PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

...ving-cup, to convict persons accused of crimes; and the same homage which is rendered to the sovereign when present, was paid during his absence to the bowl, as his representative.

No weapons were seen by Tasman at Tongataboo; which circumstance, as well as their unofficious conduct toward strangers so fortuitously equipped, indicates that they had been accustomed to a state of general peace and security. No quarrel occurred during this interview; and the Dutch, after having obtained abundance of provisions, but very little water, proceeded to the adjacent islands to the northward.

Captain Cook, accompanied by Captain Furneaux, visited this place in 1773, having previously spent some days at the neighbouring island of Eooa. They anchored in Van Diemen road, October 31; and the inhabitants, who had met them half way between the islands, behaved with the same confidence and kindness, that they had shown, one hundred and thirty years before, to Tasman. They fell also to the same practices of pilfering, for which some of them who were peculiarly daring and able to converse fluently, were punished, without betraying appearances of resentment. Here there was no difference of dialect: thefe islands, were at firft perplexed and hard g, which are unknown at the Georgian islands: but they soon perceived the identity of the radical language, and became able to converse fluently with the natives.

A man, named Attago, who had some authority among his countrymen, attached himself to Captain Cook, and rendered him essential services. He introduced the English to an elderly chief of superior rank, named Toobou, who likewise acted in a friendly manner, although with a degree of reserve. A person of much higher dignity was also met with, named Lasso Liboolu, to whom homage was paid by all ranks, although he appeared very deficient of intellect. He bore the title of Areekee, which was applied to no other person except Poulaho, then the sovereign chief, and fifth in descent from the person who reigned at the period of Tasman's visit. The mother of Liboolu, who lived at a distant island of the same group, was...
Preliminary Discourse.

acquainted with the value of iron, of which the only article found among them was an ax, made from a nail. This had been brought from a distant island, where Captain Wallis had left it; the articles which Tasman gave them having been expended, and forgotten since his voyage; the tradition of his visit had nevertheless been preferred, and even its period was ascertained by them.

Captain Cook revisited Tongataboo in company with Captain Clerke in 1777; and anchored on the 13th of June in Maria bay, the access to which through the reef was found difficult. They had spent a considerable time among the more northern islands that are subject to Tongataboo; and were accompanied from thence by Poulaho, whose family name was found to be Fatuakouhe, by which title his brother, and his son then under twelve years old, were usually called. Poulaho was short, and extremely corpulent, about forty years old, and in his behaviour sensible and sedate. His consort was daughter of an elderly chief named Marewage. Her brother Faenu, who was then thirty years of age, filled the office of commander in chief; the most frequent duties of which appeared to consist in the punishment of criminals. His authority, it was said, extended to the conduct of the foreigner himself. Both the father and son were thin and tall. Marewage had also another son, named Tooumoueta; and a brother named Toobou, much older than the chief of that name before mentioned. All these persons were highly reverenced by their countrymen; and they tied with each other in the proflusion of entertainments which they provided for their English guests; to whom a house was assigned at the western point of the creek leading into the lagoon. In the neighbourhood was observed a curious caseway, built of coral stone across a morass, with a kind of circus in its centre, apparently of very ancient construction. The country immediately around was uncultivated; and the vast concourse of people who came either to perform in the entertainments exhibited to the English, or to be spectators of them, was productive of various inconveniences. Several thefts were committed; but no act of violence, except on a
given on shore by Captain Cook, he invited, at Poulaho's desire, Mongoula Kaipa, the father of Latoo Libooloo. The king had been accustomed to abstain from eating in his brother's presence, without showing him any other mark of reverence; but to her he paid the same homage that he received from his own subjects, embracing her feet with his hands.

Captain Cook prolonged his stay till July 5, to observe an eclipse of the sun; and he was delayed several days later for want of a favourable wind to convey the ships out of the harbour by a channel that he had discovered to the eastward, which was safer than the northern passage whereby they had entered the bay. During this time he revisited Mooa, and was present at a curious ceremony called the natche.

On the 8th of July they, with some difficulty, cleared the reefs by which the harbour is formed, and proceeded to Eomr.

It is not known that any other navigator visited Tongataboo before the last day of 1787, when M. de la Perouse passed it to the westward without anchoring. He beat to, off the southern shore; and seven or eight canoes having approached within twenty yards of the French ships, the natives leaped out of them, and swam alongside with cocoa-nuts in each hand, which they exchanged very hospitably for bits of iron, nails, and small hatchets. They soon after went on board with confidence and cheerfulness. A young man, who attended that he was the son of Fenou, received several presents with cries of joy. He pressed them to land, and promised abundance of provisions, which their canoes were not capable of bringing off. The islanders were hearty, but had no appearance of ferocity, although they brought some clubs in their boats. They had all lost two joints of their little fingers. La Perouse bore away, the evening of the following day, seeing no prospect of obtaining provisions without coming to an anchor.

Captain Edwards, in the Pandora, paid a visit almost equally transient to this island at the latter end of July 1791, in search after the mutineers of the Bounty. He obtained provisions, but could
PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

which Tongahoe had waged with success. The government here, as at Otaheite, is evidently in a great measure Jeffersonian; but the power of the chiefs is more despotic at Tongataboo, although exercised with less outrage to private property. The officers of state here likewise maintain a kind of general jurisdiction; while at Otaheite everything seems to be decided either by superior force, or by arbitration in the separate districts; and criminal punishment is there unknown, except in the seduction of notorious characters for occasional sacrifices. The latter seem to be offered at Tongataboo much less frequently, and only upon funeral occasions. Infant murders are here unknown; as well as infant succession, and the society of ancestors, which appear to be principal causes of that horrid custom in the Georgian islands. The lascivious practices which are almost universal there, seem to be usually restricted here to common prostitutes of the lowest class. Polygamy is established, but adultery is punished with death. The necessity of cultivation, and the regard paid to private property, have rendered the people of Tongataboo more ingenious and industrious; and being seldom at war, they appear to be remarkably free, in general, from habits of suspicion or revenge. Their muscular strength and activity are great; although in size they are much exceeded by the chiefs of Otaheite, and of some other islands. Intrepidity and dexterity are striking features of their general character; and these qualities naturally render those individuals who are the most depraved, peculiarly mischievous.

Tongataboo, considered in itself, is evidently defirable as the seat of a mission; but its principal importance arises from the extensive and intimate connexion that it has with other islands. While most of those which are dispersed over the Pacific Ocean are independent of each other, Tongataboo is the centre of government to a surprising number. The natives named more than one hundred and fifty of these when Captain Cook was last there; but several are uninhabited, many of them very small, and some were at that time independent of their government, and even hostile to it. Only fifteen
the shore. On the north-west side of the island, with anchorage in ten and twelve fathoms, the bottom coal sand. It is well sheltered, but no fresh water is to be obtained near the shore. On the north-west side are two coves, to which no fresh water is to be obtained; and from them are two coves to which water is not obtained. Formerly, there was a bank, free from rocks, with twenty and twenty-five fathom depth, one or two miles from shore. The coast twenty-five fathom depth, one or two miles from shore, and the area of the island, with anchorage in ten and twelve fathoms, the bottom coal sand. It is well sheltered, but no fresh water is to be obtained near the shore. On the north-west side are two coves, to which water is not obtained. Formerly, there was a bank, free from rocks, with twenty and twenty-five fathom depth, one or two miles from shore.

The island was discovered by Tasman, who did not land there; nor does it appear certain that any navigator besides Cook has been upon it. He visited Eoia in 1773, before he came to Tongataboo; and in 1777, after he left that place. At both times he met with the most cordial reception, although he could not obtain the same proportion of supplies that was wished upon the English by the court of Tongataboo. A person named Taloa, who exercised the principal authority, entertained them with a public spectacle of dancing, boxing, wrestling, &c., which, though upon a smaller scale than at the court of government, collected together a concourse of people, and was productive, as usual, of some disorderly conduct. The peaceable and affectionate behaviour of the people, in general, was such as to induce them to name these islands, and the others which he visited in the same group, the Friendly Islands. To the anchorage at Eoia he gave the name of English road. He left a ram and two ewes upon this island.

The third island of this group which requires our notice is Anamooka. It is situated in latitude 25° 15', longitude 174° 31', about eighteen leagues distant from Tongataboo, which it resembles in its aspect. Its form is triangular, and none of its sides exceeds the length of four miles. Its extent is also diminished by a large salt lagoon, which almost cuts off its south-easterly angle from the sea. Its coasts are surrounded by small islets, sand-banks, and reefs. A harbour is formed by the reef on the south-western side of the island, with anchorage in ten and twelve fathoms, the bottom coal sand. It is well sheltered, but no fresh water is to be obtained near the shore. On the north-west side are two coves, to which water is not obtained.
The chastisement inflicted upon the offenders effectively improved their behavior before the departure of the ship, which took place on the 29th of June.

Captain Cook returned to this island in 1777, in company with Captain Clerke; and anchored in the road on the 15th of May. A person called Toobou then refused as chief, and another, named Taipa, who also acted as principal officer in Poulaho’s family, became very serviceable. He introduced to them Fenou, who refused hitherto from Tongataboo on being informed of their arrival. This great man prevailed upon Captain Cook to fall to the islands called Hapae, in preference to the former, which he meant to have immediately revisited. They accordingly proceeded to Hapae on the 14th of the same month, by which time the two ships’ companies formed nearly to have drained Anamooka of provisions; but on returning early in June, the stock was found surprisingly recruited. The trades had been practiced during their former stay, in a private manner, even by some of the chiefs, till they were compelled to make restitution; and on the return of the effects, when all the people of rank were absent, very little order was observed. Poulaho and Fenou arrived soon afterward, and within three days accompanied the navigators toward Tongataboo.

Lieutenant Bligh, in the Bounty, anchored at Anamooka on the 23d of April 1789. The natives, who immediately came along-side with yams and cocoa-nuts in their canoes, did not offer to come on board till they had asked permission. The next day he was visited by Taipa, who was then old and lame, but retained the impression of his intercourse with the English twelve years before, in such a degree that he perfectly understood their pronunciation of South-Sea words, which no other person there was able to do. He informed them that their old principal friends were then living at Tongataboo, and he offered a large house for the use of the English, supposing they would, as formerly, have had a party on shore. Several things that were stolen were relieved by his influence. Some
PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

Islands of this ocean, is said to prevail more at Anamooka than in any other part of this group. The venerable disease, which was certainly introduced here by the English, has also probably made a dreadful progress, in consequence of the uncontrolled debauchery practised by its first visitors, who we acknowledged to have been greatly infected when they arrived at this place from Otaheite. Wood being an article procured here by all the ships, it is necessary to mention the damage that has been incurred in cutting a tree, called fiahana by the natives, which is a species of pepper, and yields a milky juice that injures the eyes and skin of the workmen.

The island mentioned above, named Toofoo, is situated N.W. from Anamooka, at a distance of ten leagues: it is observable from thence by means of its height, and of a volcano at its summit, which almost continually emitted smoke, and sometimes threw up flames. Its shores are steep, and covered with black sand. The rocks are hollow, and in some places of a columnar form. The mountain, except in spots that appear to have been recently burned, is covered with vegetation, herbs, and trees. The coast is about five leagues in circuit. To the north-east end of this island, and only two miles distant, is another of much less extent, but of twice its height, which is called Kaga: it is a mountainous rock, of a conical form. Both these were discovered by Taufan, and have been seen by every subsequent navigator of this group. Captain Cook passed between them, and had no soundings in the channel by which they are separated. Each island was understood to be inhabited, but no European had landed upon either, at the time when the mutiny suddenly occurred in the Bounty, two days after the departure of that vessel from Anamooka. Lieutenant Bligh was forced into a boat, with eighteen of his people, when ten leagues south-west from Toofoo. He attempted, therefore, to get an immediate supply of bread-fruit and water at that island, which, as he understood, afforded these articles. The next morning, 28th April 1786, they landed in a cove on the north-west coast, in latitude 19° 41'. They climbed the heights,
amply provided with fire-arms, successfully resisted the assault of numbers vastly superior. Few days could apparently have elapsed after this occurrence, when the Pandora arrived at Toofoa with Poulaho on board. Lieutenant Hayward, who had been there with Bligh, recollected some of their former assailants. They shunned his notice, and had perhaps more reason for doing so than he knew, as at that time he received no intelligence of the schooner.

Havve (sometimes pronounced Habei) has been mentioned as the place to which Captain Cook accompanied Fenou and Taipa at the desire of the former, from Anamooka in May 1777. It is reckoned by the natives as one of the more extensive islands of their group; but it consists of four or more low islets, six or seven miles each in length, which are joined together by a reef. They are not more than two or three miles broad. That islet which is most cultivated is called Lefooga, at Lefooka, and this alone excels Anamooka in the number and extent of its plantations. At its west southern end is an artificial mount fifty feet in diameter at the summit, which is raised to the height of forty feet above the rest of the ground. The Resolution and Discovery anchored abreast of the reef that connects this island with another to the north-east which is called Foa, in twenty-four fathoms, with a bottom of coral sand. A creek in the shore of Lefooga, three quarters of a mile from the ships, afforded convenient landing at all times. Proper measures having been taken by Fenou and Taipa, an abundant supply of provisions was obtained, and public diversions were splendidly exhibited; but their chiefs were less careful to prevent the theft of European articles. They left Captain Cook on the 22d of the same month, requesting him to wait till they returned from Vavou, which they represented to be two days' sail in their canoes to the northward of Hapae. Finding it difficult to obtain supplies in their absence, he removed on the 26th, southward of Lefooga, and reached in vain for a channel between the low islands. That which lies next to Lefooga, in this direction, is called Hoolieva, and is desert of cultivation, being used only for

Preliminary Discourse.

Fishing and catching turtle; but an artificial mount, similar to that in

PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

Preliminary Discourse.
Preliminary Discourse.

R. Amakura (Bitterness), on account of his severe disappointment of obtaining refreshments from it, no landing-place being found even for boats, and the island itself having a singular appearance of barrenness. Upon a considerable mountain within it, not a tree was to be seen. In July 1791 Captain Edwards coasted the north-west side of this island, and observed the appearance of a tolerable landing-place in that quarter. That part of the coast was flat table land, without eminence or indentation, and from the edge of the surface smoke issued along its whole extent. He called it Gardner's Island.

An island called by the natives Latte, in latitude 18° 47' 30", 174° 48' west longitude, was discovered by Maurrelle the day after he had passed the former. It consists chiefly of a vast conical mountain, the summit of which appeared to be burnt, but the sides were covered with trees, and it is surrounded with a lower border, which is very fertile, and affords fresh water. Many canoes came off, and the people in them, among whom was the chief of the island, behaved with much confidence and kindness, and sold cocoa-nuts and bananas to the Spaniards. Captain Edwards gave this place the name of Bickerton's Island.

Maurrelle proceeded toward some islands fifteen leagues distant, and lying east-north-east from the preceding; the appearance of which promised better anchorage, as well as more abundant refreshments. He was prevented by the wind from reaching them till the 4th of March, when, after passing between some smaller elevated islands on the north-west of the principal land, he anchored in a creek bordered with houses and plantations. In approaching this station, the ship had every day been surrounded by numerous canoes, laden with all kinds of provisions, in exchange for which the islanders wanted to have tools, but obtained only clothing. Maurrelle having strangely prohibited the sale of iron. The natives were in general tall and robust. The chief, named Toobou, to whom they paid the most profound respect, was advanced in age, and very corpulent.

He treated Maurrelle with the same profuse hospitality that Cook had experienced at the more southern islands. Water was not, however, to be obtained sufficiently near at hand, and that which oozed into a pit dug by the Spaniards proved too brackish to be used. Maurrelle therefore removed to a bay two leagues from the former, and in doing so left two anchors. Here the ship was perfectly sheltered, and good water was obtained close to the shore. The Spaniards were entertained with the usual public diversions, and being always on their guard, the intercourse on shore was not interrupted by any contest; but the islanders who came on board stole everything they could seize. They tore away the chain of the mole, and after another had been substituted, one of the natives was shot dead in attempting to take that also. Maurrelle sailed 9th March, through a channel to the south-west, which, as well as that by which he entered, was found to be perfectly commodious. He places his anchorage in latitude 18° 36', and he called it El Refugio, or the Refuge.

The largest of these islands is nearly equal in extent to Tongataboo, and considerably higher, although not mountainous. It is highly fertile, and well cultivated, producing the same fruits and roots as everywhere in these latitudes, and abounding more with the cloth-plant than any of the Friendly Islands. Maurrelle named this group after Don Martin de Mayorca, then viceroy of Mexico, and gives no intimation of the names used by the inhabitants.
Preliminary Discourse.

Captain Bligh, in the Providence, accompanied by Captain Portlock, in the Affidance, when returning with the bread-fruit from Otaheite, laid to during the night, 3d August 1792, off these islands, and obtained provisions, but did not land. Two ships, which Maurelle understood to have been here prior to his voyage, might be those of Cook and Clerke, which the natives had probably seen at Hapae. By whatever name these islands ought to be distinguished, they present a favourable and a considerable object for the attention of our missionaries. The longitude assigned to them by Captain Edwards is 173° 53' west.

Neocotabootaboo and Kootahe are separated by a channel only three miles broad, in which is a small island; and are situated in latitude 15° 15', 173° 48' west longitude. The former is the more extensive, and is reckoned among the larger of the Friendly Islands. It is chiefly low, but has a considerable hill in its centre. It is divided into two unequal parts by a channel, which, at the mouth, is three hundred yards wide. Kootahe is very lofty, of a conical form, between two and three miles in diameter, and lies north-west from the former. Both are populous, fertile, and possessed of the same animals and vegetables as the islands before described. They were discovered by Schouten and Lemaire, 16th May 1616. Their ship anchored on the north-west side of Kootahe, half a mile from the shore, in sandy ground, with twenty-five fathom, but they sent a boat to the larger island to search for a better station. The natives formed around the ship, and bargained cocoa-nuts in abundance for nails and beads; but they endeavoured to prevent the boat, and one of them was shot before they desisted from the attempt. The chief of Neocotabootaboo, who had the title of Lateo, came on board; and having invited the Dutch to that island, they were proceeding thither, when a thousand of the natives suddenly attacked the ship from their canoes, but were repulsed with much havoc by the cannon loaded with musket-balls. Schouten departed on the 13th of the same month. He gave the names of Traitors' and Cocoa islands to these discoveries, in consequence of the reception he met with. Captain Wallis fell in with them;
PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

several of them were killed for attempting to seize the boat. They brought off vegetables only. The Dutch proceeded the same day to the westward.

Captain Edwards fell in with this island 5th August 1791, when he apparently meant to have visited the former two, but was carried too much to leeward. He places it in latitude 13° 53', 175° 51' west longitude. In the account of his voyage, it is spoken of as having considerable extent, and the houses as being of much larger construction than at other islands of this archipelago. He named it Proby's island, but underwood that the natives called it 'Onoe-afoe.'

This name, and the distance of this island from Hapae, accord with the description given to Cook, of the Vavou of the Friendly islands, to which their term for an inhabited country, Wanoa, may have been prefixed by the natives, as it is to the names of several islands in this ocean. Computing the extent of the island by its proportionate distance from Hapae, it must be nine or ten English miles in diameter, according to Lemaire's statement. Poulaho asserted that it affords as good anchorage as Tongataboo, and that it is larger, and has several streams of fresh water. Vavou is in high estimation among the Friendly islanders; and was, in 1777, the residence of Lasso-liboo's mother and sister. A solemn mourning was also then celebrated at Tongataboo for a chief who had lately died at Vavou.

Two more islands were discovered by Schouten and Lemaire, the fifth day after leaving that last described. They destroyed some of the natives at their first interview, but were after ward hospitably entertained by them, and procured every kind of refreshment in great abundance. They were visited by a person bearing the title of Lasso, and by another styled Areekee, who was therefore probably the sovereign of all the Friendly Islands. He was treated by the other natives with the utmost deference. They are represented like those of the more southern islands in most circumstances, except in being defitute of clothing, and the females being deformed, and
able, through the Lord’s blessing, to extend their labours from Tongataboo.

The very considerable cluster, of which either the whole, or some part, is called by the natives, Feje, lies within three days sail in a canoe from that island. The more northern part of this numerous group was discovered by Tasman 6th February 1643. These islands and reefs are evidently the same that were explored by the Duff, and amidst which she met with the greatest danger that attended her voyage. They were named by Tasman Prince William’s Isles, and Heemskirk’s shoals. They reach northward to the latitude of 15° 33′ east longitude.

Captain Bligh fell in with the eastermost of these islands, in 178° west longitude, the third day after his escape from Toofoa in the Bounty’s launch; and he passed through the midst of them in a northwestern course, which he could not have made in a ship, there being only four feet depth of water on one of the reefs which he crossed. In this direction, he found the group to extend four degrees westward from the first islands; and he saw several that had from thirty to forty leagues of coast, and appeared fertile, being pleasingly variegated with hills and valleys. His defenceless situation obliged him to avoid intercourse with the inhabitants. On his return from Otaheite in the Providence, 5th August 1791, he passed to the north of the first islands he had discovered in 1789, and coasted upon the south side, some of those which had been discovered by Tasman. After having crossed his former track, he doubled the southermost island of the group, in latitude 19° 15′, 175° 15′ west longitude, and proceeded, 11th August, on his voyage, in a course to the northward of west. He landed nowhere, and the islanders in vain attempted to overtake the ship with their canoes, apparently with hostile designs.

The most western part of this group was discovered by Captain Barber, in the snow Arthur, 26th April 1794, on his passage from Port Jackson to the north-west coast of America. He saw six of the islands, the largest of which he places in latitude 17° 30′, 175° 15′ east longitude. He anchored in a bay on its western side, and some natives who came off in a canoe were reluctant to come on board, and seemed to be unaccustomed to trade. The next day a number of canoes attacked the ship, and two of the crew were wounded by them with arrows. The savages attempted to board, but were repulsed with the ship’s swivels and small arms. The navigation on this, as on every other side of the group, was found to be intricate and dangerous.

It is uncertain whether these numerous and extensive islands are connected together under a distinct government, or whether they are independent of each other, or mostly subject to Tongataboo. It is certain that at least some of the principal islands have been independent of its government; and occasionally hostile to it. They are also of a distinct race, speak a different language, and, besides spears and clubs, make use of bows and arrows in battle. In this they resemble most of the islanders who inhabit the larger countries to the westward; and differ from all who have yet been discovered to the eastward of this group. Many of the latter have bows and arrows, but they use them, as we do, only in sport; their missile weapons in war being no other than spears and stones. The intercourse of Feje with Tongataboo does not seem to have lasted many generations, but during the present century it has been frequent. The Friendly islanders regarded the people of Feje as superior to themselves, both in military prowess, and in mechanical ingenuity; their weapons and clothing being wrought in a more dexterous style, and some manufactures, especially that of earthen vessels, being carried on at Feje, which are not attempted at Tongataboo. There also were dogs at Feje when there were none at the Friendly Islands, but they have been imported from there since the latter group became known to the English.

The feature of the Fejeans is superior, their complexions are darker, and their hair approaches to wool. They, moreover, retain the practice of eating the bodies of enemies whom they have killed, which is now abhorred by all of the lighter race, except the inhabitants of New Zealand.
PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

It is probable that the Fejeans are of the same race that occupies the most extensive islands in this ocean. Their prevailing ferocity renders the more western countries very dangerous of access; but it may be hoped, that the superior civilization of Feje, and its intercourse with Tongataboo, to which it appears that at least some part of this group has lately been subjected, may afford a favourable introduction of our missionaries among a nation of great extent, and in the utmost need of evangelical instruction. The only Europeans who are known to have landed at Feje, are Lieutenant Hayward, and a man who attended him thither, in a large canoe hired at Anamooka, for the purpose of searching after Fletcher Christian. Their inquiry was fruitless, but seems to have been conducted without danger.

The other group which has intercourse with the Friendly Islands, is that which was named by M. de Bougainville the Navigators' Islands. These are only ten in number, but some of them are remarkable for their extent, fertility, and population. They are situated between 160° and 170° 30' west longitude, and from latitude 12° 25' to an uncertain extent southward. They are all lofty, like the Society Islands, but are neither surrounded with a low border, nor enclosed by reefs. The easternmost islands of the cluster seem to have been first discovered by Roggewein and Bauman in 1722. Another, of superior magnitude, was added by Bougainville in 1768; and the two westernmost islands, which are the most considerable, were discovered by Pérouse in 1787. Each of the latter is more than forty miles in length. All these were visited by Captain Edwards in 1791. Pérouse was informed of three more to the southward, named Shēta, Offano, and Ooana, which he could not fall in with. The native names assigned to the principal islands by the two navigators, Pérouse and Edwards, totally differ in every instance. POLA and OTEWEH: are those which they respectively give to the most western island of the group; ONOLAVA and OHA-

TŌA to the next considerable island; MA-ONA and OTUTUĒA, to that which Bougainville discovered; ORŌN and TŌMANA, to the easternmost island. The name of Tootooela, which is assigned to the island of the very island, where the assassination of the French navigators, already mentioned, was perpetrated in December 1787. Some remain of their clothing were seen there by the Pandora's people in July 1791. At Otewhei the latter met with a person related to Fenou, commander in chief of the Friendly Islands. He had lately had a finger cut off on account of the illnesses which afflicted the death of that chief. This circumstance demonstrates that some intercourse subsists between these two groups. The inhabitants of both have the same language, and the same general customs, that are common to all the eastern islands of this ocean. The natives of the Navigators' Islands greatly exceed the Friendly Islanders in stature and strength, and are marked by a ferocity of aspect and manners unknown at Tongataboo. In some particular customs they appear also to differ considerably. It is improbable that they should be subject to Tongataboo, but the acquaintance they have with its inhabitants may render this important group accessible with safety to our brethren, in company with some of the Friendly Island chiefs, by whom they are already highly esteemed.

Ohittahoo, and other Islands of the Group called the Marquises.

This group is known to extend from 8° to 10° of latitude, and from 138° to 140° of west longitude. The inhabited islands, which have been discovered in it, are eight in number. They resemble the Navigators' Islands in their aspect and their coasts. In most, if not in all of them, there are bays or coves which afford harbour for shipping; but access to them is often made difficult by sudden squalls.
of wind which break over the mountains and precipices. The natives exceed, in general beauty, those of the groups already described; especially the females, who are not disfigured by punctures, although the men are almost entirely covered with those marks. The women appear to be in greater and more general subjection at the Marqueñas than elsewhere. Both sexes are inferior in personal cleanliness to the natives of Otaheite and Tongataboo, having less convenience for bathing. They use less clothing, and the chiefs are less distinguished from their subjects, except by the profusion of ornaments with which they are sometimes covered. The soil of these islands, for the greater part, is not so fertile as in any of the preceding groups; but the inhabitants are, probably in consequence of this deficiency, more active and vigorous than those of Otaheite. The bread-fruit attains here to the highest perfection; but when it is out of season the want of it is severely felt, at least at Ohattahoo, where articles of food to be substituted for it are scarce. The Marqueños resemble the Friendly islanders in paying a greater reverence to age than the Otaheites, and in being exempt from the practice of infant murders, and other evils produced by the aroee society.

Ohattahoo, which was selected out of the group to be a missionary station because it was best known to Europeans, is much inferior in extent to some of the neighbouring islands, being only nine miles long from north to south, and about seven leagues in circuit. A narrow ridge of lofty hills runs through its whole length, and is joined by other ridges, which gradually rise from the cliffs upon the coasts. They are divided by deep, narrow, and fertile valleys, adorned with trees, and watered by brooks and cascades. On the western side are several coves. That in which Europeans have usually anchored is situated under the highest land in the country, in latitude 9° 55' 30", 139° 8' 40" west longitude. It bears south 15° east from the west end of a larger adjacent island, called Ohevahaana. The points that form the harbour (of which that to the southward is the highest) are about a mile asunder, and their distance from the head of the harbour not much less. The depth of water is from thirty-
PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

Cook went to meet them with a party under arms, and Hete-hete having explained to them the wishes of the English, the natives appeared satisfied, and conducted them to a brook, where water was obtained for the ship. A brisk trade for vegetables was carried on, and some hogs were purchased. The presence of Cook was, however, found necessary to preserve the confidence of the natives, who acted precisely as if the conduct of the Spaniards, almost two centuries before, had been fresh in their remembrance. The women had been removed from this harbour, but several were met with at one to the southward of it, who discovered no reluctance to the licentious familiarity of the sailors. Hete-hete was soon able to converse fluently with the natives, whose dialect differs from that of the Friendly Islanders, the hard consonants unknown at the other group. They paid great attention to the information which he gave them of customs in which his countrymen differed from them, and especially of the mode of producing fire by the friction of dry wood.

A chief, named Honoo, and distinguished by the title of Heka-ae, came with many attendants to the landing-place, and exchanged presents with Captain Cook; but could not be persuaded to accompany him on board. He was decorated with a great variety of ornaments, and wore a cloak, while the rest of the men had only the mare round their loins. His looks and manner indicated much good-nature and intelligence. The supplies of provisions seemed to increase in consequence of his visit, and no farther contest occurred; some thefts, which were committed, being suffered by Captain Cook to pass unnoticed, as his stay was designed to be short. He sailed on the 11th April.

A French navigator, named Le Marchand, visited the Marqueñas about the year 1789. Several vessels, chiefly American, engaged in the fur trade, have also since touched here for provisions; and the commander of one of them, named Roberts, built a small vessel at Port Madre de Dios, with which he proceeded to the north-west.
coast of America. It is reported that the people of Ohittahoo had persevered in the prudent measure of keeping their women at a distance from European visitors; and that, at this season, a contest was excited on the account, in which the respectable chief, Honoo, was killed by his brutal guests. This circumstance, which there is but too much reason to believe, may account for the very different conduct observed relative to the females of Ohittahoo, in subsequent visits at this place.

The Dædalus store-ship touched at this island on her way from England to join Captain Vancouver, and anchored in Port Madre de Dios, 22d March 1792, in twenty-four fathom. Not being sufficiently sheltered from the land wind, her cable parted early the next morning; and while driving out of the bay, the ship was found to be on fire. In extinguishing it, many pieces of rotten bedding were thrown overboard, and the natives crowded round the ship to pick them up. When the Dædalus regained her station, and had been anchored closer in shore, it was observed that the buoy of the anchor from which they had been driven, had been preserved; but a piece of wood having been left by the natives in its stead, tied to the buoy-rope, directed them to recover the anchor. Lieutenant Hergeft, who failed as agent in the Dædalus, went in the afternoon to the place for obtaining fresh water, which was at the distance of a mile from the ship; and finding the surf violent, he landed with only four men, in order to fill two water-casks. The buckets used for this purpose were soon stolen by the islanders, who crowded round, without any person of authority to restrain them. They even snatched Mr. Hergeft’s fowling-piece out of his hand; and there being but one musket left among the party, it was judged better to make good their retreat with this, than to employ it vindictively. On setting to the long-boat, they found that some of the natives had, by diving, cut away the grapnel, with which it had been secured. When they regained the boat, they rowed close to the shore, and fired a volley of muskets and small arms over the heads of the crowd. All
PRELIMINARY DISCOURSE.

were repeatedly fired over their heads, to deter them. Thiefs were frequent and daring, and the chiefs seemed to want either authority or inclination to reprefess them. One man, who had made off from the ship with a bucket, was not unintentionally through the calf of his leg, but no other damage was occasioned.

A good supply of vegetables was obtained; but few hogs could be purchased, and those at a rate unusually dear in the South Sea islands. The harbour was accurately surveyed before the ship failed, but the sketch given by Captain Cook was found to be sufficiently correct.

The Prince William Henry left Otaheite on the 29th March, the fame day that the Dredalus failed from Ohittahoo. She made a direct north-east passage to this island, which is therefore demonstrated to be practicable, although not known to have been performed by any other vessel. Her stay was very transient, and her voyage from Britain to the Sandwich islands was so rapid as to be accomplished in four months.

Captain Brown, in the Butterworth, accompanied by two smaller private vessels, anchored in Port Madre de Dios 1st June 1792, and stayed only two days, to take in fresh water.

The degree in which the manners of the people at Ohittahoo had been corrupted, subsequent to Cook's voyage, was not known when the Duff left England; and the disappointment, occasioned by this change, appears to have produced the only instance that occurred among our missionaries, of shrinking from the work in which they were engaged. If the solitary condition of a very promising young man, who had the fortitude to remain singly on his post, should tend to delay the progress of the gospel at the Marquesas, it is hoped that this deficiency will soon be amply supplied. Obstacles, that are to be apprehended from long-established customs in the other groups, are here apparently not liable to oppose the truth; and we trust that a foundation has already been laid, on which others may build with great advantage.

To the northward of this island, and separated by a channel hardly above a league in breadth, is Ohevahoa, which extends six leagues north-eastward, and has a circuit of fifteen or sixteen leagues. It is more steep and craggy, especially toward the eastern point, than Ohittahoo; but its deep valleys, and the sides of the hills, are, like those of the former island, clothed with trees and verdure. Mendana, who discovered it after the Lord's day, named it on that account La Dominica. He failed along the southern coast, as Cook did afterward, without discovering any harbour. This deficiency has prevented any farther knowledge of the interior country. It appeared in a much more advantageous light to the former navigator than it did to the latter. The natives have always attended at Port Madre de Dios, when European vessels have lain there, and they resemble the inhabitants of that place, with whom they maintain friendly intercourse.

Onateya, which was named San Pedro by Mendana, lies about five leagues eastward of Ohittahoo, and as much to the south of Ohevahoa. It is about three leagues in circuit, moderately high, and pretty level; with extensive woods, and pleasant plains.

The most southern island of the group, ten leagues distant from Onateya, was the first that Mendana discovered; and he named it La Magdelana, in allusion to the Roman festival on which he fell in with it, July 21, 1595. He coasted the southern shore the following day, and four hundred of the natives came off, some in canoes, some floating and swimming, to the ships. They offered coconuts, and other fruits, to the Spaniards, and invited them to land. Forty of the islanders, with little persuasion, went on board Mendana's vessel, and were presented with clothing; but they attempted to steal almost every thing they saw, which soon produced a contest. One of the Spaniards was wounded by them with a stone, and they suffered severely from the fire-arms. The squadron continuing under fail, they went after it a canoe, with symbols of peace and friendship. This island was judged to be six leagues in circuit, and appeared populous.
and fertile. Captain Cook, who saw it after leaving Ohitahao, reckoned it to be nearly in latitude 10° 25', 130° 5' west longitude.

Captain Brown, in the Butterworth, 27th May 1792, discovered a rock resembling a ship, north-eastward from the south-east point of this island, at the distance of five leagues. He did not anchor, but landed to off the southern coast till the 31st, and procured cocoa-nuts, plantains, and bread-fruit, for nails, from the canoes which came alongside, and by his boats from the inhabitants on shore. One of his people spent a night upon the island, and swam off the next morning.

The natives are understood to call this island Ohitahao.

The only addition to the discoveries of Mendana, which was made by Captain Cook’s visit to the Marquesas, is an island called by the inhabitants Tevenen’s island by Lieutenant Hergeft, who examined it 31st March 1792. In its centre are two rocky eminences of vast height, and of singular figure, with several smaller peaks adjacent. Near the south-eastern point of the coast is a rock resembling a church with a spire. Several small bays are formed in the southern side, the best of which is terminated by the south-western point of the island.

Due north from hence, and eight leagues distant, is Nooaheva, called by Mr. Hergeft, Sir Henry Martin’s island, which is the most considerable of the whole group, both for extent and fertility. The south-eastern cape, which he named Point Martin, forms, with the coast to the westward of it, a deep bay, well sheltered, and bordered by sandy beaches. At the head of the bay was observed, either a deep cove, or the mouth of a considerable stream. Two leagues further westward is a fine harbour, with a sandy bottom, shelving from twenty-four fathoms to seven, within a quarter of a mile of the shore. A stream of excellent water runs into it, and it is well sheltered from all winds. A beautiful plain extends for a mile and a half from the beach. The country is populous, and well cultivated. The people appeared to be lighter than those of Ohitahao, and varied considerably from them in other respects. More than one thousand five hundred were assembled on the shores of this harbour, which was named Port Anna Maria. They received some people who landed from the Dredalus very hospitably, and sent off all kinds of provisions to the ship. The western side of the island was less populous.

Captain Brown, in the Butterworth, landed at Nooaheva 3d June 1792, about two months after the Dredalus had been there.
and examined the north-western part of the island, upon which side likewise very good harbours were found. The natives also behaved friendly and respectfully, but being strangers to white people, they were earnest to see whether their skin was of the same colour under their clothing as in their faces. Some peculiar ceremonies seem to prevail here: a woman, who, at the request of one of the English, brought him some fresh water to drink, would not deliver it to him till she had pronounced a long oration.

Early in February 1793, the Dredalus revisited this island on her way from the north-west coast of America to New South Wales, and anchored in Port Anna Maria. A friendly intercourse was renewed, but it was suddenly broken off by a quarrel between one of the sailors and an islander who had come on board. The latter having struck the Englishman, was shot by him after having leaped overboard. Upon this, a great number of war canoes were assembled, and the ship was attacked with stones. Lieutenant Hanson, who had succeeded Mr. Hergeft in the Dredalus, was obliged to quit the harbour, after remaining there two nights, and proceeded to obtain refreshments at Otaheite.

Eastward from Nooahiva, at the distance of six or seven leagues, is ROOAHOOA, which was called by Lieutenant Hergeft Riquo's island. It is high and craggy, especially at the west end, but appears more fertile than the southern islands of the group. At this end is a shelf of rocks, extending about a quarter of a mile from the shore, which was named after Captain New of the Dredalus. This part of the island is deficient of any harbour for shipping; but on the southern coast there are appearances of convenient anchorage in two bays. Above one hundred natives assembled in canoes round the Dredalus upon her first approach to the coast, and bartered their provisions in a very friendly manner.

It is probable that this group extends farther, both to the north-west and south-east, than has yet been explored. Four uninhabited islands are all that have been discovered beside those already described.
that people of the same race with the natives of the groups we have
described, are dispersed over the Ladrone and Caroline islands, which
lie north of the equator, and extend from the 130th to the 175th
degree of east longitude; and they have reached from the latter
group, or from some intermediate places not yet discovered, to the
Sandwich islands, which are situated between 155° and 160° west
longitude, and 19° and 22° north latitude. Crossing the equator,
probably from the more eastern of the Caroline islands, they have
spread over the clusters of which we have given an account, and from
the Friendly Islands have reached the large country of New Zealand,
between 34° and 43° south latitude, and 166° and 180° east longitude;
while from Otaheite, or some of the islands south-east of it, they
have made a surprising stretch to the solitary spot called Easter Island,
in 27° south latitude, and 110° west longitude. The language and
customs of this widely scattered nation have been traced
to the coasts of the great Asiatic islands, Luzon and Borneo, and from thence to the
peninsula of Malacca, the Aurea Cerbonensis, beyond which the geo­
 graphical knowledge of the ancients can hardly be said
to have extended. The astonishing migrations of this race seem to have origin­
ated, like those of the northern Europeans, from designs of conqueft.
These they carried into effect on the coasts of the grand Asiatic archi­
pelago, driving the black natives of those very extensive islands to the
interior mountains, which they still occupy as a distinct and inde­
pendent people. But the migrations of the fairer race from the
Philippine islands to the Carolines, and farther eastward, have
almost to a certainty been occasioned by storms of weather, which
drove their canoes from island to island, and from one group to
another, that had not before been peopled. Frequent incidents of this
nature have been ascertained, and some of them have been specified in
our account of the islands connected with Otaheite. The population
of islands so widely scattered, cannot, for the greater part, be other­
wise explained, either upon the ground of established fact, or upon
that of probable conjecture.

The original inhabitants of the great Asiatic islands seem, likewise,
before they were driven back from their coasts, to have made very
considerable emigrations, although not to distances so remote as those
to which their supplanters have been dispersed. The darker race
has spread over the vast countries of New Holland and New Guinea,
with the adjacent islands of New Britain, New Ireland, and
Louisiana, as well as those of Solomon, Santa Cruz, New Caledonia,
the chief part of the New Hebrides, and the group called Feje.
Like the natives of Africa, whom in person they generally resemble,
they are divided into numerous tribes, and are distinguished by
various languages; yet there is a striking sameness in the customs
even of those most remotely separated; and they all differ essentially
from the nation that occupies the numerous smaller islands of this
ocean. The former are usually more savage, and of inferior stature;
but some of their tribes may, in these respects, be compared, or even
preferred, to the least civilized colonies of their rivals. A New
Zealander can boast little or no advantage over his neighbour of New
Caledonia; and a Sandwich Islander must apparently yield the palm
to an inhabitant of Feje. The superior hospitality of the Otaheiteans,
the Friendly islanders, and the Marquestances, invited our endeavours to
promote their best interests;
and our election of that nation, and of
those groups, has, through the blessing of God, been justified by the
trial which we have been enabled to make.

All the islands of this ocean presented fresh ground for mission­ary
labour, excepting the Philippines, the Ladrones, and a few of the
Carolines, to which the Spaniards had gained prior access; Japan,
once filled with converts to popery, but now without the shadow
of Christianity; and the northern Kurile islands, which are haledly

* The groups named by Mendana the Illes of Solomon and Santa Cruz, are the same
that, in pages 297, 298, of the following narrative, are called Egmont Island, &c.
and New Georgia; those names having been given to them by Captain Carteret and
Lieutenant Shortland, who imagined that they were new discoveries.
visited by a Russian clergyman from Kamfchatka. That peninsula contains the only glimmering ray of Christianity that enlightens the Asiatic coast of the Pacific Ocean, with the sole exception of the Roman Catholics secreted in the Chinese empire. The coast of North America, from Behring's strait to California, is involved in more than Egyptian darkness. Upon the last-mentioned peninsula Spain has several missionary stations, where benevolent and laborious efforts are made, at least to civilize the miserable inhabitants. From thence to the island of Chiloe, in South America, it is to be feared that the Spanish conquests have led the natives rather to detest the name of Christianity than to comprehend its nature. Crossing this immense ocean to New South Wales, at a distance of 135 degrees of longitude, we find the gospel preached with purity and zeal to a herd of our own countrymen, whose vices reduce them below the most abject class of the heathen world around. May the doctrine of the cross triumph there over the unparalleled obstacles it has to surmount; and may it advance from thence to thence, till it covers the hemisphere that is washed by the Pacific Ocean! Let him who reads say, "Amen, Lord Jesus! Thy kingdom come! Thy will be done in earth, as it is in heaven!"

P. S. On the general chart that describes Captain Wilson's track, those countries of the Pacific Ocean, which lie within, or southward of the tropics, are comprehended under the general name of Australia, after the example of foreign geographers. As they appear to be divided between two distinct races of inhabitants, one of which almost wholly possesses the more extensive countries situated in the south-western part of the ocean, these are distinguished from the rest by the title of the Greater Australia; the numerous small islands inhabited by the fairer race being included under that of Lesser Australia. To the whole group, of which a part was discovered by Cook, and called by him the Friendly Isles, the title of United Archipelago is affixed upon the chart. The propriety of these innovations is submitted to the judgment of such among our readers as are accustomed to geographical researches.
INSTRUCTIONS TO CAPTAIN WILSON.

You are aware, that it is not only in its nature singular, and almost without a precedent, but that it is also one of the most honourable and most important services which can be confided to a human being. The attention of the Christian world is very generally excited to the object, and devout intercessions are continually ascending like incense to heaven for its success. Should it be favoured with the blessing of God, it may be the direct means of imparting divine light and eternal life to great multitudes of immortal beings, and may form an era of distinguished importance in the history of human redemption. In this view of the interesting nature of the business we are engaged in, it is with peculiar satisfaction and sincere affection, that we, the Directors of the institution, not only invest you with the command of the ship, and with full and complete authority for the management of its concerns in relation to the voyage; but also commit to your care and superintendence, during the same period, the more important charge of the mission itself, and especially of those faithful brethren who accompany you therein. Dear to our Saviour, in whose name they go forth, these apostolic men will have a strong interest in your affections also. Having forsworn their friends and their country for the love of Christ, and with the desire of spreading the honours of His name among the heathen, they will seek in your kind attention an equivalent for the endearing connexions they have relinquished; and you will be desirous of extending towards them the wife superintendence of a parent, and the affectionate sympathy of a brother. You will cheer the spirit that is liable to droop under the pressure of its anxieties, or administer the word of admonition to the disciple that is in danger of erring. You will be among them the centre of union, to reconcile their divisions, and confirm their love; the universal friend, in whose bosom they will deposit their diversified cares.

As it is needful that you should be furnished with instructions, both with respect to the voyage itself, and also with relation to the establishment of the mission, it is our duty to define, that after having received your cargo on board an invoice whereof you will be furnished with, and also the missionaries who are to accompany you whose names and occupations you will have an account of, you will please to proceed with all possible dispatch to Portsmouth, in order to join the East India convoy now lying there, to which you are to attach yourself, and to use every exertion in your power to keep company with it, as far as its course and yours are designed to coincide.

In case the convoy should stop at Teneriffe, you will procure four pipes of the best wine in hogheads, for which you will apply to the house of Messrs. Pooley and Little, and reimburse them for the amount by your draft on the treasurer to the institution. You will endeavour to procure from thence two or three bunches of dried grapes of the best kind, in order that the seeds may be planted when you arrive at the place of your designation, also a few pecks, or even quarts, of the best feed wheat, together with the seeds of such tropical fruits as you may think it would be advantageous to take with you. You will also endeavour to procure one ram sheep and two ewes, to be preserved for the purpose of breeding; also a male and female ass, for the same purpose. You will also at this place probably have an opportunity of giving your ship's company and passengers several meals of fresh meat and vegetables; which, as it will promote their health and comfort, we are well persuaded will not escape your attention. On taking your departure from Teneriffe, we wish you to consider the port of Rio de Janeiro on the coast of Brazil as your next object. At that place you will be able to lay in a stock of sugar very cheap, for the use of the ship's company and missionaries on the voyage, as well as for the latter after they are put on shore; as also tobacco, chocolate, cacao-plant, and many other vegetable productions useful for consumption and cultivation at the settlement. Here you will also embrace the opportunity to procure a supply of fresh meat, and other debatable articles, for the refreshment of the ship's company, at a reasonable rate.
From this port we wish you to proceed by the way of Cape Horn to the island of Otaheite, there to put in execution the directions which will be hereafter suggested, so far as they may appear to you eligible on your arrival. In the mean time, we think it material to provide against the probability of your meeting with a foul wind in your attempt to double Cape Horn; in which case, after having made the first attempt as close in with the land as you think consistent with the safety of the ship, we recommend you to stand to the southward to the distance of at least four or five degrees; when, if you still find the wind blowing steadily against you, rather than lose much time in attempting to beat against it, we advise you to bear up and run for the Cape of Good Hope, where you will find those refreshments which by that time you will stand in need of.

On your arrival in the South Seas, the destined scene of your benevolent exertions, the immediate prospect of the important service before you will impress your mind with peculiar weight, and you will be anxious to fulfil, to the utmost of your power, the engagement you have undertaken. You will then recollect, that the sphere of your activity is widely extended, and includes a considerable number of different islands remotely situated from each other; you will be reminded of the resolution of the general meeting, which was thus expressed:

"That a mission be undertaken to Otaheite, the Friendly Islands, "the Marquesas, the Sandwich, and the Pelew Islands, in a ship "belonging to the Society, to be commanded by Captain Wilson, "as far as may be practicable and expedient."

This resolution embraces a plan of great extent and importance, and proceeds from the laudable and benevolent design of introducing the knowledge of Christ into as many different islands as possible; you will therefore consider this resolution as the rule of your conduct, and keep it in your remembrance in all your proceedings. It is not to be departed from, without solid and important reasons; for, as the gospel of Christ is a blessing beyond the power of calculation

to estimate, the desirableness of sending it to as many islands as possible is in proportion to its inestimable value. We do not mean, however, to encourage you to adopt a system of missionary enterprise beyond the boundaries of discretion; we do not urge you to depart from the principles of prudence and caution, which so important an occasion requires; nor by attempting to introduce the advantages of Christianity in many places, to divide your numbers so as to weaken your efforts too much in each, and endanger your success in all. The resolution is not intended to prevent a wise and discreet circumspection. It is indeed desirable to introduce the gospel into several islands; but it is necessary, if possible, to establish it in one, for if you concentrate your exertions, and gain a solid establishment in one place, it may become the germ of other missionary efforts, and be a sacred leaven which may gradually spread its beneficial influence through numerous and distant islands of the South Seas. Thus you will perceive, that although the resolution by which you are to endeavour to regulate your operations is of great extent, and highly desirable to be accomplished, yet that it is limited by the considerations of practicability and expediency; and of these you will of necessity be the best qualified to judge.

The question respecting the practicability of visiting so many distant islands must be decided by circumstances which it is impossible for us to anticipate; and even to you, when in the South Seas, a mission may appear to be practicable, which you may nevertheless not think it expedient to attempt. For instance, the Pelew islands are the last which, in the order of your voyage, you will have occasion to visit. The character of the natives furnishes a strong inducement to establish a mission among them, and the attempt may also appear to be practicable: but would you think it expedient to take a few missionaries from the islands at a great distance to windward, at an uncertainty of the reception which a missionary plan might meet with in the former? Suppose that, by a new chief having arisen with less favourable dispositions,
INSTRUCTIONS TO CAPTAIN WILSON.

than the father of Lee Boo, or through any other cause, you should be prevented from leaving our brethren there, with perfect satisfaction to yourself and them, what would be the effect? You could not admit of the waste of time and expenditure of money which it would require to convey them to the islands where your other missions may have been established, even if your return thither against the trade wind was practicable; and you would probably have no alternative but that of bringing them with you to their native land. The same reasoning may apply with respect to the Sandwich islands. It is extremely desirable that the blessings of the Christian religion should be extended to those populous regions; but the indubitable accounts which we have lately received of the actual state of those islands, do not permit us to recommend the establishment of a mission among them at present. A variety of other considerations will occur to your mind when you are to decide on what is practicable and expedient. If you look over the inventory of the different articles which make up your cargo, supplied by the liberality of our friends, or furnished from the funds of the institution, you will probably conclude that they are much more adapted for the cooperation of a number of individuals in one or two societies, than for a distribution among more. When you consider the qualifications of the missionaries, you will perhaps be inclined to think, that remaining in one or two bodies, they may form models of civilized society, small indeed, but tolerably complete. There are some among them who are adapted to be useful by the improved state of their minds, and their fitness for taking the lead in religious services; there are others who are necessary on account of the skillfulness of their hands, and their knowledge of the useful arts: thus there would be among them that mutual dependence and usefulness which is the cement of the social order. If you should separate them into several parties for various missions, it would occur to you that this order and connexion would be very much broken; and as every mission should contain within itself a competent fund both of divine and human knowledge, you might perhaps find it impracticable to arrange our missionaries into several parties, and yet preserve among them these indispensable requisites. Among our brethren who accompany you, we trust you will find some who possess a considerable acquaintance with the doctrines of Christianity in their foundation and mutual dependence, and are qualified for the defence and confirmation of the gospel; but others of them have not perhaps a view of the subject sufficiently accurate and enlarged to fit them for the office of teachers. They understand indeed the doctrines of grace in the most precious sense, by experimental conviction; and having a general idea of them, may be very useful to the heathen by means of their conversation as well as their exemplary lives. But in every mission, however small, it is essential that there should be some whose minds have acquired a maturity in divine things, and who are scribes well instructed in the kingdom of heaven. This it might be difficult for you to accomplish, on the plan of establishing a number of different settlements.

If from these reasons, or others which may arise in your mind when you are amidst the scene of action, you judge that the cause of Christ among the heathen will be best promoted by the establishment of fewer missions, we shall receive great satisfaction in finding that you are able to visit more islands, with a view to the introduction of the gospel among them at a future period. By means of some of the Europeans now probably residing at Otaheite, who may be disposed to accompany you, your access to the understandings of the islanders will be facilitated; you will easily communicate to them the beneficial plan you are projecting in their favour; and you may ascertain how far a mission to any of them may be advisable. This mode of procedure is highly desirable, as it may throw a considerable light upon our future path, and assist our judgment respecting the designs of Providence.
INSTRUCTIONS TO CAPTAIN WILSON.

... toward these islands. It is the more to be recommended, on account of the great degree of probability there is of our revisiting them, soon after the safe return of our vessel from her present expedition; as it is evident, that, with the assistance of a freight homeward, the navigation to those seas may be hereafter undertaken at little comparative expense, and thus opportunities be afforded of frequent intercourse with them. Submitting these considerations to your attention, we now think it necessary to offer you a few more observations, derived from the best information we can obtain, and the best judgment we can at present form on the subject: you will adhere to them or not, as you may find it expedient when you arrive.

It is well known that Otaheite is the island on which the general expectation has been fixed, as the place where our mission is to be attempted; and we have no reason to alter the opinion we at first entertained of the eligibility of this spot; but as our object is to introduce the gospel of Christ among the heathen, all partialities or predilections to particular places must be made subservient to that end. We conceive you will visit that island before any other, and you will doubtless have an early interview with the chiefs. It must be left to your own discretion how far you will unfold to the occasion of your voyage. You will also probably soon be visited by some Europeans, and will most likely find means to conciliate their confidence, without committing yourself to them any further than you may deem prudent. All your discrimination may be requisite to fix on those among them who are best suited to become your instruments; from them you will learn the present state of this island, and perhaps of those adjacent, as to produce, population, disposition of the natives, and political relations. You will however be on your guard against misrepresentation, and by comparing different reports find out the truth. You will also guard against treachery and surprize. You will be cautious whom you admit on board; especially you will not allow the...
INSTRUCTIONS TO CAPTAIN WILSON.

It is, however, very difficult for so many persons perfectly to coincide on any subject; and we therefore place the power of decision in a majority of the committee, provided that you, the president, form one of that majority. As we conclude that you possess a superior judgment on this subject to any of them, it appears to us to be a regulation highly conducive to their good, that no settlement should be made without your approbation. For the sake of relieving you from some part of the responsibility, we lodge in the same committee, and subject to the same rule, the power of deciding whether there shall be more missions than one established, and where the subsequent ones shall be attempted. To this committee belongs also, under the same restriction, the control over the articles, implements, and utensils, which make up the cargo of the ship; and they, with your concurrence, are to decide, when, where, and in what proportions, those articles are to be landed. In cases, however, of several missions being attempted, for the sake of strict and impartial justice we appoint, that two of the committee shall be taken from those who remain at the first settlement, and two others from those who are intended to be detached to any other; your self, being the president, and perfectly disinterested, will have the power of administering justice toward both. It is however intended, that a quantity of articles, suitable for presents to the chiefs of islands which you may visit in your way to Canton, should remain on board, and you must have the power of deciding what articles, and what quantity of each, shall be referred for that purpose.

To a number of serious Christians, who are, on all occasions, seeking divine direction, it will no doubt occur, that the determination of any question respecting attempts to extend the gospel is of such transcendant importance, as to require the most solemn invocation of Him who heareth prayer, for the interposition of his wisdom to guide you in judgment. An unanimity, or nearly so, of the whole body, on questions so interesting, and which are to be decided after a

solemn season of devotion appointed for that special occasion, would afford considerable satisfaction to our minds, as a favourable intimation of the divine superintendence.

In negotiating with the chiefs, you will explain to them the advantages which will arise to them from our residence among them; that it may be the happy effect of their earnest desire, and not of our solicitation. As an inducement to us to prefer their island, they must give us a full title to the land we may have occasion for, guarantee to us the safety of our property from plunder, the enjoyment of our laws and customs, and the undisturbed exercise of our religion. Instead of exciting the jealousy of the chiefs by any importunity on our part to continue with them, it would be more prudent to shew a readiness to leave the island, and fix upon some other, that it may be understood by them, that our inducements to visit them have not been to receive advantages, but to confer them. On this principle, as well as for other reasons, we recommend that the land should not be purchased, but required, as the condition of our remaining with them; and that the presents we make should not be considered as payments, but as gratuities, the expressions and pledges of our good will. If you should determine to make a settlement at several islands, you and the committee will decide what number, and which individuals, should reside at each. If this should be the occasion of disputes which you cannot amicably terminate, we recommend your appealing to the decision of Divine Providence by a solemn and religious use of the ancient institution of drawing lots.

We have now finished the instructions which appeared to us needful to communicate with respect to the mission. The changes which may have taken place in the state of the islands since the last accounts, may make it necessary for you to depart from the advice which we have given, and resort to expedients more congruous to the circumstances before you, and better fitted to secure the great object.

On your arrival at Canton, you will address yourself to the factory
INSTRUCTIONS TO CAPTAIN WILSON.

of the India Company, and in all respects conform to the conditions of the charter, a copy of which you will take with you. You will in particular observe the necessity of your being there by the month of December, or at latest in the month of January 1793, that you may receive your cargo on board, and sail for Europe in the early part of the spring. Thus we shall cherish the hope of your safe return soon after the succeeding midsummer. In the mean time you will doubtless embrace whatever opportunities occur of writing to us either from Rio de Janeiro, or by the first ship which shall from Canton; and let your dispatches be addressed to Mr. Joseph Hardcastle, of London.

We have now only to commend you to the all-sufficient care and protection of Him who holds the winds in his hand, and the waters in the hollow of his hand. The throne of mercy will be addressed with unceasing supplications in behalf of your safety, and the success of your embassy. You are accompanied by the affectionate esteem of the excellent of the earth; and ministering spirits, we trust, will receive the welcome charge to convey you in safety to the place of your destination. May they be glad spectators of the formation of a Christian temple in these heathen lands, and thus be furnished with the subject of a new song to Him that sitteth upon the throne, and to the Lamb.

Signed by order of the Directors,

JOHN LOVE, Secretary.
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

if they would afford any object of commerce; the naturalist eagerly explored the peculiar subject of his researches; and the astronomer sought a station, from whence he might observe the transit of Venus over the sun, and deduce from thence useful improvement in that celestial science. But when, as Mr. King observes, these islands were found to produce little which would excite the cupidity of ambition, or answer the speculations of the intellef; they were ready to be abandoned to their primitive oblivion, unless occasionally visited by a straggling ship; and after proving the superior advantages of our iron tools, and led to the total neglect of their own, their situation would have become still more deplorable than their original state. The iron we bartered with them could not be replenished, nor repaired by them, and must soon become useless; they would have lost the habit of using and making their former tools of bone and stone; whilst the ravages of the diseases which Europeans had probably communicated, threatened to sweep them from the earth with the fmalh of destruction. Reflections on their unhappy situation had dropped from the pen of the humane, and pity had often swelled the bosom of the compassionate; a few felt for them, not only as men, but as Christians, and wished some mode could be devised of communicating to them the knowledge of that ineffable book, compared with which all beside is pompous ignorance, and all the treasures of the earth lighter on the balance than vanity itself. The object had lain on many a heart, and prayer had gone up on their behalf; a feeble effort was disappointed by the unfaithfulness of those designed for the work.

Yet the idea was not wholly abandoned, though the prospect of its accomplishment was almost defeated of: a few of the faithful ministers of Christ, associated on another occasion, deemed, at the same time, to express a faint wish that something could be done for the heathen. On communicating their thoughts to others of their brethren, they found a cordial disposition to co-operate; and the attempt at Sierra Leone, though instituted with a particular view,
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

We were sensible some could not understand our motives, and others would suspect or misinterpret them, but conscious of the simplicity and godly sincerity which prompted us to the undertaking, we persevered undismayed with difficulties, and, through the good hand of our God over us for good, have succeeded beyond our most sanguine expectations.

The various steps in which we have proceeded are now before the public, and submitted to the attention of those who would meditate on the wondrous maze of Providence, and contemplate the great events that spring from means apparently the most inconsiderable.

On notifying our intentions to the public, we met a spirit of zeal and liberality highly encouraging; applications manifold were poured in of candidates for the mission, with subscriptions adequate to the undertaking. None but men the most select for piety were to be admitted. We were desirous to obtain some possessed of literary attainments, but especially to procure adepts in such useful arts and occupations as would make us most acceptable to the heathen in that state of inferior civilization to which they were advanced. A select committee of ministers, approved for evangelical principles and ability, was appointed to examine the candidates as to their views, capacity, and knowledge in the mysteries of godliness. Many were rejected, and only those received, who, after repeated and careful attention to the subject, by inquiries into their conduct and character, had the strongest recommendations from the ministers and congregations with whom they had been joined in communion, and of whose intelligence and devotedness to the work we had the fullest evidence.

Thirty men, six women, and three children, were approved, and presented to the directors for the commencement of the mission.

---

TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

List of the Missionaries who embarked on board the Duff, at Blackwall.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>No.</th>
<th>Names</th>
<th>Age</th>
<th>Occupations</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1</td>
<td>Rev. James Fleet</td>
<td>34</td>
<td>Ordained minister.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2</td>
<td>John Eyre</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>Do.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3</td>
<td>John Jefferson</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>Do.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4</td>
<td>Thomas Lewis</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>Do, and has attended the hospitals and dispensaries, and understands printing.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5</td>
<td>Mr. Henry Bicknell</td>
<td>29½</td>
<td>House carpenter, Sawyer, and wheelwright.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6</td>
<td>Daniel Bowell</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>Shopkeeper.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7</td>
<td>Benj. Broomhall</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>Buckle and harness maker.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8</td>
<td>John Buchanan</td>
<td>31</td>
<td>Taylor.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9</td>
<td>James Cooper</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>Shoemaker.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10</td>
<td>John Cock</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>Carpenter.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11</td>
<td>William Cook</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>Gentleman's servant, and tinsmith.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12</td>
<td>Samuel Clode</td>
<td>35</td>
<td>White-smith and gardener.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13</td>
<td>John A. Gillham</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>Surgeon.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14</td>
<td>Peter Hodges</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>Smith and brazier.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15</td>
<td>William Henry</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>Carpenter and joiner.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16</td>
<td>John Harris</td>
<td>39</td>
<td>Cooper.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17</td>
<td>Hudden</td>
<td></td>
<td>Butcher.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18</td>
<td>Samuel Harper</td>
<td>26</td>
<td>Cotton manufacturer.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>19</td>
<td>Rowland Haffell</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>Indian weaver.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>20</td>
<td>Seth Kelso</td>
<td>48</td>
<td>Weaver.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>21</td>
<td>Edward Main</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>Taylor (late of the royal artillery).</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>22</td>
<td>Isaac Nobbs</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>Hatter.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>Henry Nott</td>
<td>22</td>
<td>Bricklayer.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>24</td>
<td>Francis Oakes</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>Shoemaker.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>NO.</th>
<th>NAME</th>
<th>AGE</th>
<th>OCCUPATION</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>23</td>
<td>Mrs. James Puckey</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>Carpenter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>26</td>
<td>William Puckey</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>Carpenter</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>27</td>
<td>William Smith</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>Linen-draper</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>28</td>
<td>William Shelby</td>
<td>21</td>
<td>Cabinet-maker</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>29</td>
<td>George Veebon</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>Bricklayer</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>30</td>
<td>James Wilkinfon</td>
<td>27</td>
<td>Carpenter and joiner</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>31</td>
<td>Mrs. Mary Cover</td>
<td>37</td>
<td>Wife of J. F. Cover</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>32</td>
<td>Elizabeth Eyre</td>
<td>64</td>
<td>Wife of John Eyre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>33</td>
<td>Elizabeth Haffell</td>
<td>29</td>
<td>Wife of Rowland Haffell</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>34</td>
<td>Sarah Henry</td>
<td>23</td>
<td>Wife of Wm. Henry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>35</td>
<td>Mary Hodges</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>Wife of P. Hodges</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>36</td>
<td>Hudden</td>
<td>25</td>
<td>Wife of Hudden</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

CHILDREN

| 37  | James Cover     | 12  | Son of J. F. Cover |
| 38  | Thomas Haffell  | 2   | Son of Rowland Haffell |
| 39  | Samuel Otoo Haffell | 16  | weeks. Do. |

We wished our selection of mariners should be equally choice, and laboured to procure such, and were not a little successful in this behalf. Captain Wilson and the first mate, his nephew, were persons in every view equal to the undertaking, and as hearty in the work as the missionaries themselves. Many of the sailors were men of a like mind; about half were communicants, and every man was eager to beg admission with us, under the profession of wishing to be instrumental in so blessed a service, and the hope that he should gain benefit and edification to his own soul.

During the first six weeks that they were detained in harbour, one of our body, who continued with them daily, and often ministered unto them, declares he never heard the name of God blasphemed, a

TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

passionate word spoken, or saw an unbecoming action in any one of the mariners, many of whom joined in the exercises of prayer and praise with the most cordial devotion, and none who were not on duty ever absented themselves from the stated hours of worship. Surrounded as we were by king's ships in the harbour, and often increased on the quarter-deck by numerous visitors, this excited no small measure of surprise and wonder at its novelty. The songs of Zion were daily heard over the deep.—The real Christian in every situation of life possesses peculiar excellence; his religion will never interrupt the discharge of his duties in society; none will be found so conscientiously diligent; divine principle will do more than the most rigid discipline. We appeal to facts that must carry conviction to every candid and unprejudiced mind.

The preparations being completed, and all the stores on board, a solemn designation of the missionaries to their office was made, and the evening preceding the embarkation the directors met the missionaries, and celebrated their last happy communion together, in the fullest confidence of shortly meeting again in the presence of God and of the Lamb, and enjoying eternal fellowship with Jesus the mediator, and the spirits of all just men made perfect.

The prosecution of our voyage for the accomplishment of the benevolent and evangelical purposes of our society will be found to contain a variety of events, interesting to the navigator, the naturalist, and the politician; but above all, will engage the peculiar attention of those who glory in the name of Christian, and long to see, what they fully expect, the coming of the kingdom of the Lord, and of his Christ, when "the mountain of the Lord's house shall be established in the top of the mountains, and the nations shall flow unto it."—The cry of the universal church is, that "the Lord would hasten it in his time!"
CHAPTER II.

Emarkation.—Departure from the River.—Stay at Portsmouth.

THE preparations being completed, and the missionaries ready for embarkation, the directors of the society were very anxious for the Duff's failing with the East India convoy, which, at this time, lay at Spithead, waiting for a fair wind. They embarked in sight of many spectators, and accompanied by relations, acquaintances, and several of the directors, to whom, as residing in London, had been committed the care of the outfit of the mission. August the 10th, 1796, at six in the morning, we weighed anchor, and hoisted our missionary flag at the mizen top-gallant-mast head: three doves argent, on a purple field, bearing olive-branches in their bills. The morning was serene, and a gentle breeze blew from the W. N. W.; few vessels were sailing on the river; all was still and quiet; and it seemed a favourable season for pleasing contemplation to those whose hearts, warmed with benevolence to their fellow men, and ardour for the extension of the Redeemer's kingdom, had long earnestly desired to see a profperous vessel as this their first attempt now afforded. With satisfaction they beheld those, who at a future period were to act alone in the cause, not dispirited at leaving their native country and friends, nor with the thought of what lay before them, but, on the contrary, resigning themselves into the hands of Him whom they firmly believed able to carry all his purposes into effect. The hymn, "Jesu, at thy command—we launch into the deep," &c. was sung by upwards of an hundred voices, producing a pleasing and solemn sensation. The sailors in the ships we passed heard with silent admiration, and our friends, who lined the banks of the river, waved their hands, and bid us a last adieu.
were agreed to and signed, and the ship cleared at the custom-house.

The List of the Duty's Crew.

1. James Wilson, Commander.
2. William Wilson, Chief officer.
5. Thomas Robson, Gunner.
6. Stanton, Carpenter.
8. Thomas Godfear, Ditto.
10. William Wilson, Ditto.
12. Francis Dathon, Ditto.
13. James Wilson, Ordinary seaman.
15. John Wells, Ditto.
16. Robert Green, Ditto.
17. John Stephens, Ditto.
18. Benjamin Bar, Ditto.
20. Samuel Templeman, Ditto.
22. Samuel Hurst, Boy.

A fresh gale springing up from the S. E. we justly apprehended the East-India fleet would fail; but as they are often by various causes detained, we still resolved to push on with all possible expedition, and after a day of great activity in settling all matters, as conveniently as the time would afford, for our proceeding to sea, at seven in the evening we weighed anchor, and turned down into the

Lower Hope. Mr. Henry Cox now took an affectionate leave, and left us to pursue our voyage. To this gentleman's ability and unwearied diligence we must ever acknowledge ourselves indebted; both in forwarding our departure, by removing many great difficulties; and by his care to provide all things comfortable for those who had to perform so long a voyage.

12th. At eight A.M. we weighed from the Hope Point with a fresh gale at E. S. E. In plying down we were met by some kind friends from Sheerness, bringing with them three sheep, one hog, and some fowls for tea flock. At two P. M. anchored on Leigh flat; at nine got under weigh, and at midnight came to a little below the Nore. This day the directors on board, the Rev. Dr. Hawes, Mr. Wilks, and Mr. Brookbank, assembled the missionaries, and directed them to elect by ballot four persons, to constitute a committee, agreeably to the printed instructions of the body of directors. They returned, as the result of their proceedings, the following names, viz. Rev. James Cover, John Eyre, John Jefferon, and Thomas Lewis, who were consequently admitted to that office by the directors.

Mr. Wilton, as chief mate, being considered as president in the absence of Captain Wilson, who was to join us at Portsmoutb, the committee proceeded to establish the following regulations, viz.

Resolved, That the Rev. John Jefferon should be considered as the missionaries' secretary, and William Smith his assistant.

Resolved, That the Rev. Thomas Lewis should take upon him the office of librarian, and William Smith be his assistant.

Resolved, That John A. Gillham, surgeon, should be responsible for the medical books and instruments; but every missionary may equally claim to read them under the library regulations.

Resolved, That John Harris should take upon him the office of missionaries' steward, and distribute the provisions, as delivered to him by the ship's steward, to the different messes.
Resolved, That each mess shall receive the articles and quantities as under:

- Tea, one pound per month each mess for the men, one pound and a quarter for the women.
- Sugar, two pounds per week each mess.
- Butter, one pound and a half per week each mess.
- Cheefe, four pounds per week each mess.

13th. Wind N.E. a light breeze. At four A.M. weighed, and ran through the Five Fathom channel. Passing through the Downs we received the unpleasant information that the fleet had failed from St. Helen's. At one P.M. we rounded the South Foreland, and during the rest of the day had little wind.

14th. Calms and breezes from the westward alternately, so that we made but little way. It being Sabbath-day, the Rev. Dr. Haweis preached in the morning, the Rev. Mr. Brookbank in the afternoon, and the Rev. Mr. Wilks in the evening, on the quarter-deck.

15th. Calm until six in the evening, when a breeze sprang up at N.E. Beachy Head bearing N.W. by W. About nine P.M. one of His Majesty's ships of war hailed and informed us that a French lugger was cruising somewhere near, bid us keep a good look-out, and hoist a light if we discovered her, while they ran in nearer the shore. Happily we escaped all attack of the enemy.

16th. At eight A.M. anchored at Spithead. The East-India fleet had failed five days before our arrival. In passing St. Helen's a squadron under the command of Admiral Gardner was just putting to sea, and in company with them we probably might have gone safe from the enemy; but in a matter so important we could not hastily form the resolution; for, uncertain how far they would go in our track, if obliged to separate from them too soon we should run the risk of being captured; and not to hazard so favourable a beginning, was thought a sufficient reason for us to wait a better opportunity of convoy.

At Spithead we were visited immediately by the Rev. Mr. Griffin, of Portsea, and other friends of the mission, who shewed us all the most fraternal affection, and furnished us during our stay with the most generous supplies. The Rev. Mr. Eyre, of Homerton, and others from town, came also on board. Captain Wilson arrived and took the command.

17th. Mrs. Hudden being affected by the sea, as most of us had been at first, fell into such a depression of mind as engaged us to send her on shore at her request; her husband went with her, though reluctantly; a man of a meek and quiet spirit, and might have been a useful member of our community; but the directors thought it by no means right to separate man and wife.

Our anxious inquiries after the next convoy led us to the port-admiral; and Dr. Haweis, with Mr. William Wilson, by his direction, went on board the Adamant, Captain Ware, who received us with politeness, and informed us he should shortly sail with a convoy for Lisbon and Gibraltar, and would readily take us under his protection. With this the directors were acquainted, and ordered us to wait the opportunity.

But the delay began to weary our patience; we all longed for the day of our departure; and though entertained with the most cordial welcome by the brethren at Portsmouth and Gosport, we waited the signal from the Adamant with eager desire. Yet the stay was not unprofitable; the same gracious Hand which conducted us thither gave us cause to acknowledge his loving-kindness; some good, we hope, resulted from the preaching of many of the directors and other brethren who visited the ship, and from the missionaries at Portsea, Gosport, and its vicinity. A space was given to those who, if they had felt any change of mind, might have departed from the work; but all became more confirmed and united.

An ingenious clergyman of Portsmouth kindly furnished Dr. Haweis and Mr. Greatheed with a manuscript vocabulary of the
A multitude of friends also had this opportunity of testifying their regard for the mission, and furnished us with many things that, in our haste to depart, had been forgotten, or, during our stay here, been thought of, for the comfort of the voyage.

The missionaries, during this delay, had, according to the regulations established, constantly exercised themselves on board in rotation, in preaching, prayer, and praise, which many attended; they employed themselves in reading and writing, especially reflecting the objects of their mission; and in one of their assemblies agreed to transmit to the body of the directors the following address:

"Brethren,

"We, the missionaries, whom you, under the influences of our common Saviour, Lord, and Master, Jesus Christ, the only begotten Son of the eternal Jehovah, have been instrumental in bringing together, uniting in one body, and every way furnishing with all temporal necessaries for the arduous undertaking we have in hand, cannot bid adieu to our native country, and dear brethren in Christ, without laying before the directors of the society (with the desire the same may be communicated to all whom it may concern) our views and feelings upon our present situation and future prospects.

"Having, through grace, overcome the disagreeableness which we at first experienced on our embarkation, arising from our little acquaintance with each other, change in our habitation, and manner of living, we find our minds composed and resigned, and our hearts more closely united to each other in the bonds of love.

"On looking forward to the length of our voyage, and deliberating on all the dangers and difficulties which those who traverse the bosom of the mighty deep are exposed to, and frequently meet with, we are by no means discouraged; but can cheerfully give ourselves up to Him, who holdeth the winds in his fist, and the waters in the hollow of his hand.

"When we extend our view across the great Atlantic ocean, and contemplate the more extensive Southern seas; when, in our imagination, we conceive ourselves landed on our defined islands, surrounded by multitudes of the inhabitants, earnestly inquiring from whence do you come? and what is your errand? we answer, From a distant shore; the friends of God and human kind; touched with compassion at your unhappy state, as represented by our countrymen who formerly have visited you; moved by the Spirit of our God, we have forsaken relatives and friends, braved storms and tempests, to teach you the knowledge of Jesus, whom to know is eternal life. Though Satan and all the host of hell should be stung with indignation and resentment at our boldness in the Lord, and fire the hearts of their deluded votaries with all the fury and madness which brutal ignorance and savage cruelty are capable of; though our God, in whose name we go—our Saviour, by whose rich grace we are redeemed, should deliver us up to their rage, and permit our bodies to be afflicted, yes, persecuted unto death; yet, trusting in the faithfulness of the Most High, the goodness of our cause, the uprightness of our intentions, the fervency of our affection for
"Christ our head, and the elect of God, our hearts remain un-
continued ; and being, by Divine mercy, enlisted under the banner
of the great Captain of Salvation, we are desirous to be ac-
counted worthy to suffer for his sake, and to endure hardship
as become good soldiers of Christ.

Such, honored brethren, and fathers in Christ, are our present
feelings ; which we hope, through your united prayers, and the
supply of the Spirit of Jesus Christ, our Lord and your Lord, our
God and your God, we shall never, never lose.

To you, and all who have contributed towards our going forth,
we render unfeigned thanks ; and our prayers are, that the Most
High God may grant you occasion to rejoice in Jesus Christ on
our behalf, to whose grace we humbly and heartily commend
you, most respectfully and affectionately bidding you—Farewell!

By order of the missionaries,

John Jefferson, Secretary.

On board the Dufet, at Spithead,
the 29th of August 1796.

After waiting with some impatience for our departure, the
convoy having been detained by delays unknown to us, and,
when assembled, by contrary winds, at last the welcome signal
was made September 10th; at nine A.M. the commodore and
fleet began to weigh, and by ten were all under sail; we alone were
still at anchor, detained by one of our missionaries. Early in the
morning a boat had been dispatched on shore for the time-keeper,
and to bring off Mr. John Harris, the absent person; but after waiting
a considerable time in vain, the officer was obliged to return without
him. We then immediately proceeded after the fleet, which was
steering for the Needles; but by the time we had reached Cowes
the fine S. E. gale failed us, and veering to the westward, the signal
was made to return; when we came to our former situation,
Monkton fort bearing N. by E. Mr. Harris now came on board;
he had been on a visit to Southampton, and having heard the fleet
were falling, hired a boat and followed us; but it is probable, had
the breeze continued, that he would have been left behind.

We had now anchored, as it proved, for thirteen days more; in
which time, and during the whole of our detention, we received
the most obliging and unsparing kindness from the inhabitants
of Portsea, Gosport, Southampton, and other places; nor were
we neglected by our friends in London, many of whom came
purposely to visit us, and thought themselves amply repaid by wit-
nessing the universal harmony which prevailed in the ship: for,
though the missionaries were mostly strangers to each other, their
behaviour was such as gave reason to hope they would enjoy that
peace and cordial good-will among themselves, so essentially necessary
to promote success in the great work in which they were jointly
engaged. At last the wished-for hour of departure arrived; the
signal was made by the Adaman to drop down to St. Helen's. No-
thing could exceed the beauty of the scene; the day was remark-
ably fine; the convoy moving on different tacks with their canvas
spread, and passing the various ships of war at anchor in the har-
bour. This being a state holiday, the forts and men of war began
their usual salutes whilst the convoy was under sail, which tended
greatly to heighten the grandeur of the scene. On the turn of the
tide they all cast anchor, and waited for their final departure in the
morning.

The Rev. Dr. Haweis had been daily on board, had often preached
to us, and lately celebrated a sweet and blessed communion with the
missionaries and mariners; he now took his sorrowful, though joyful
leave of us, with an address from Hebrews, iii. 1. His heart ap-
ppeared to be full, yea overflowing with love; while we parted with
many tears, probably to meet no more till we should be re-assembled
around the throne of God and of the Lamb.
CHAPTER III.

Voyage from Portfmouth to St. Jago, and Occurrences there.

We now took our final departure from Portfmouth, and launched forth on the great deep. The signal for sailing being given, the missionaries came on deck, and every countenance seemed elated with joy at the thought of soon being employed in the great work.

At five A.M. the commodore and the fleet, consisting of fifty-seven sail of transports and Portugal traders, were under way, the Fly sloop of war bringing up the rear. At noon we were all in a fair way without the Isle of Wight; wind easterly; thermometer 57, the air cold.

25th. Proceeding with a fine gale, by eight o'clock on Sunday morning we were off Falmouth, when the commodore made the signal for the fleet to lie by. A boat from St. Maw's coming alongside, we dispatched letters to our friends of our safety and health. About noon a frigate came out of the harbour and joined us; the Fly sloop at the same time hauled her wind to the eastward; the commodore then made sail, and at six P.M. the Land's End bore north, distant five leagues. This was the last sight of Old England that many on board were ever to have, and they, no doubt, felt much on the occasion, though sensible it was not for those who had parted with country and friends, and taken up the cross to look behind; indeed, every man seemed fully satisfied with his destination.

26th. Fresh gales from the N.E. quarter, accompanied with rain, and a large easterly swell, which causing the ship to roll, most of the brethren experienced the sea-sickness severely; but remained, notwithstanding, unshaken in their desire to go on, bearing with Christ's fortitude what they knew to be the general attendant on all new travellers by sea. At noon we fell in with an English frigate and a two-decker cruising, one of which spoke our commodore. In crossing the Bay of Biscay we had favourable winds, and being with the fleet, it afforded us an opportunity of seeing, by comparison with the convoy, how fine a ship we had got to perform our long voyage; for while others were crowding all sail, we could go a-head under our topsails, the men of war carrying the same sail. This encouraged a hope also, that in case of being chased by an enemy, there might be a probability of effecting our escape by means of sailing.

On the 29th our sea-sick missionaries, who were recovering, devoted part of the day to learning the Otaheitean language and other useful studies. A hawk, this day, rested on our rigging, and was caught; a missionary remarked, "So might my poor soul, wandering from its true home, be lost, if not graciously prevented by Divine mercy." On the 30th, being in latitude 44° 50' N., long. 11° 17' W. the commodore made the signal for the headmost ships to lie by; the wind at the time blowing fair for us, the captain thought we might venture to make the best of our way, especially as the greatest danger was now over, and we could go by little farther without deviating widely from our course: hoisting our ensign, therefore, to signify our intention, we were answered by the commodore, and making all sail, were followed by a South-Sea whaler and two other vessels.

The fleet soon disappeared, and the missionaries held a particular meeting of prayer and thanksgiving: praising God for past mercies, and considering themselves now deprived of human protection, they gave themselves up into the hands of the Lord, and committed themselves to his keeping and care, who hath promised, "When ye pass through the waters I will be with you." October II. The wind continued at N.E. and we sailed before it with a pleasant breeze, about six knots an hour.—How gracious is
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE [1796.

God in favouring us with such wind and weather! we want nothing but more gratitude and love.

2d. This being the Lord's day, Mr. Jeffolson preached in the morning, and with his other brethren administered the communion to the captain, missionaries, and seamen. Surrounded now only with sea and sky, we seemed to have taken our departure from the abodes of the living, to be nearer the presence of our heavenly Father; and drinking out of the ever-flowing springs of his love, spent the day in prayer and praise.

3d. The missionaries in turn kept up the evening and morning devotions, and through the day employed themselves in study, or those occupations they could pursue. The women and children bore the voyage amazingly well; except a little sea-sickness, all was perfectly pleasing, and not a complaint to be heard. We saw a large ship, and took care to pass to windward of her, lest she should prove an enemy; but the display of the American flag freed us from that apprehension.

On the 6th a beautiful sun-rising: we saw the island of Madeira, which shows high, and may be seen in clear weather when distant seventeen or eighteen leagues. This island, lying in the neighbourhood of Europe, and famous all over the world for its wines, is largely described by different authors; therefore, had we even opportunity of making observations of our own, to insert them here would be unnecessary.

Mr. Cover and Mrs. Eyre were still affected with sea-sickness; all the rest were in perfect health. We passed Madeira, intending to touch at St. Jago, the principal of the Cape de Verd islands, there to replenish our water, and procure what refreshments the place could supply.

The night of the 6th and the following day we had unsettled, equally weather, the wind veering from N.E. to S.E. and frequent heavy showers of rain, with which we filled some of our watertanks. On the 8th we came in sight of Palma, one of the Canary islands. On the 10th, in lat. 23° N., we saw a strange sail in the S.E. quarter; she fired a gun to leeward, to signify she was a friend; we did the same; but as we drew nearer to her they took the alarm, and crowding what sail they could, fleeced from us. Distance run this last twenty-four hours one hundred and eighty-five miles—

11th. Crossed the tropic of Cancer, and had several flying-fish about us; these were a novel sight to many on board, and excited much surprize and admiration.

12th. This day had been previously appointed for solemn humiliation and fasting, begging God to prepare us for our work, and forgive whatever his pure eyes had beheld amiss among us. Mr. Lewis preached in the morning, Mr. Eyre in the evening; the whole day was spent in devotion by the missionaries, and proved a season of mercy and refreshing from the presence of the Lord. Proceeding southward, on the 13th, about nine A.M. we saw Bona Vista, which is the northernmost of the Cape de Verd isles; it has a sun-burnt appearance, inso much that, as we sailed along to the eastward, about three miles off shore, there was not a tree or green spot to be seen.

At four P.M. Bona Vista came in sight; it is hilly, and might be seen seven or eight leagues off, but for a thin white haze which is common to all these islands, and has the effect, that when you think the weather clear, you cannot see the land till within two or three leagues of it. This island has a good harbour on its west side, where, as we sailed along, we saw some vessels at anchor. At eight in the evening we took a departure from the S.W. end of Bona Vista, bearing at that time E.S.E. fix miles; then, after running S.S.W. ½ W. thirty-five miles, just as the day dawned we saw the isle of Mayo, and right a-head, distant a mile or two, the dangerous rocks which lie off its north end.

14th. The sea broke upon them with great violence; had we kept running on, we should jst have hit them; but a course S.by W., ½ W. from the west side of Bona Vista, will take a ship near to the east side of Mayo, and lead clear of this last danger. Two ships, one
First Missionary Voyage

The brig, and a schooner, were lying in Mayo road, probably for cargoes of salt, abundance of which is yearly shipped from these islands.

With pleasant weather, all sails set, and a fine fair wind, by eleven A.M. we left sight of Mayo, owing to the before-mentioned hazy atmosphere, for we were at no great distance from it; at the same time we could discern St. Jago off the deck. At one P.M. passed the S.E. point, and half an hour after tacked close to Green island; then made two short tacks, and came to with the small bower in eight fathoms, the south end of Green island bearing W. S.W. ½ W. and the peaked mountain open about two miles breadth to the eastward of the flag-staff on the fort.

Thus have we safely reached the first port for refreshment, after a voyage perfectly pleasant, and just three weeks since we left St. Helen's. The Lord has shown us great favour indeed; the wind hath been so fair, and the weather so good, that divine service hath been regularly and daily conducted without the least interruption.—How great are his mercies! Such poor fresh-water sailors as we were, needed these graciouscommunications, to prepare us for the vast space which yet remained.

As soon as the sails were furled the captain sent the first mate with his respects to the governor, to request leave of him to water and purchase refreshments, which he very politely and readily granted. The chief governor resides at St. Jago town inland, and the gentleman at Port Praya was his deputy. Respecting live fow, vegetables, &c. he said that none could be purchased this evening; but as the news would quickly spread that a ship had arrived in the port, to-morrow early the natives would resort within the walls of the fort, where the market is usually held; and as each brings a part of what he possesses, there is generally collected whatever the island affords. This being the case, we could only go on with our watering, which is here attended with much trouble, having to roll the cauls a quarter of a mile over a hot sand, and take them off through a heavy surf; besides, the water, after it is got, is brackish.

That for the use of the fort is brought on ass or camels from a distance of three or four miles.

The deputy-governor had long laboured under a dangerous complaint, and though for some time past in a way of recovering, yet for want of advice and medicines was apprehensive of a relapse. Dr. Gillham being on shore, the case was made known, and his opinion and advice agreeing with what had been told the governor before by a surgeon of an Indiaman, gained confidence, and the doctor's services were gladly accepted, who prescribed for the governor and his lady, who was also indisposed, and he visited some poor sick natives. Their diseases he chiefly found to be intermittent, diseases of the liver, and anaemia. He reports the place as very unhealthy, yet was informed of a person one hundred and ten years old.

15th. At daylight the pinnace was detached for another turn of water, one of the missionaries voluntarily assisting in the operation. On her return the ship's steward was sent to trade for live fow, &c.; a few of the missionaries accompanied him to procure what things they wanted for their own use; old clothes they found to be a staple article; however, we were in a measure disappointed, for the market was not as well furnished as we expected, owing, as the fort alleged, to but few of the country people being yet apprised of our arrival; therefore all we got for the cabin was, one turkey, five sows, five pigs, a quantity of oranges, and a quarter of a caulk of Madeira wine for the use of the missionaries, which we procured from the captain of an American brig that lay in the port. While we were on shore the governor treated us with the greatest respect and kindness; and had Dr. Gillham, myself, and two of the brethren, to dine with him. In return for his civility, Captain Wilson sent him a cheese and some tea and sugar, articles which he stood in need of, the regular supplies from Lisbon having not arrived, though past the usual time. Our water being completed, at five P.M., a gun was fired from the ship, a signal for those who were on shore to repair on board; hoisted the boats in, got under way, and by seven o'clock...
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

were clear of the harbour: thermometer 77°, very sultry. St. Jago is the most fruitful and the best inhabited of all the Cape de Verd islands, notwithstanding it is very mountainous, and has in it a great deal of barren land. The principal town is named after the island, and is situated in 15° N. lat.; it stands against the side of two mountains, between which there is a deep valley two hundred yards wide, that runs within a small space of the sea. In that part of the valley next the sea is a straggling street with houses on each side, and a rivulet of water in the bottom, emptying itself into a fine cove, or sandy bay, where the sea is generally very smooth, so that ships ride there with great safety. A small fort is erected near the landing-place of this bay, where a guard is constantly kept, and near it is a battery mounted with a few small cannon, but incapable of resisting an enemy.

Port Praya is a small bay, situated about the middle of the south side of the island, in lat. 14° 53' N., long. 23° 30' W.; it may be known by the southernmost hill on the island lying inland in the direction of west from the port; the hill is round and peaked at the top. Green Island may also be taken as a mark by which to know the harbour; it lies on the west side of the bay, is not very high, and has steep rocky sides. From this island to the west point of the bay lie sunken rocks, upon which the sea continually breaks: the two points which form the entrance lie in the direction of W. S. W. and E. N. E. half a league from each other. It is usual for East-Indiamen, Guinean traders, and others bound to the southward, to touch here for refreshments; "Bullocks," says Captain Cook, "must be purchased; they are free to all, weighing between two hundred and fifty and three hundred pounds.

Other articles may be got from the natives in exchange for old clothes, &c., but the sale of bullocks is granted to a company of merchants as their peculiar privilege, and they constantly keep an agent residing on the spot." This may in general be true, but we could find neither merchants nor agents, consequently got no bullocks; however, had our stay been longer, it is probable some of them would have come to the fort.

Though our stay was very short, our brethren on shore were not inattentive to their first object; we shall just mention, in the simplicity of the language of the reporter, what passed on one occasion:

"I was meditating on the great goodness of God to me an unworthy creature, and that who soever is afraid or ashamed of his word before men, the Son of Man will be ashamed," when I met a native black man, who invited me to his house. My mind was greatly impressed with the ignorance and superstition I saw, so I went with him, and found him very friendly: he spoke the English language sufficiently to be understood; I inquired what religion he was of; he told me he was a Roman Catholic. After speaking a little of their mode and manner of worship, I told him freely I feared he was wrong; that God could not be worshipped through the medium of images, pointing out the several passages of God's word which forbid such worship; and, blessed be God, he appeared very much to give way to what I said to him, and I hope the Lord will convince him by his Spirit. Before parting from him, I desired him to read over all the passages I had pointed out to him, for he had an old Bible, and could read a little; I begged him to compare the word of God with the sentiments he had been taught, and to pray to God without images set before him, as they are an abomination to the Lord; and there can be but one true way of worshipping him through Jesus Christ, and him alone. Thus, after a few more words, we parted, and I hope the labour will not be in vain in the Lord."
CHAPTER IV.

Run to Rio Janeiro.—Reception and Observations.

18th. HAVING completed the purpose of our landing at Porto Praya, and after taking our departure, at a little distance off the island a fine breeze sprung up, and continued from E.S.E. to E.N.E. with hazy weather; then gradually declined to calms and light airs alternately. Lat. 9° 30' N. long. 23° W. at one P.M. we saw a sail to the westward, and by five o'clock in the evening, the variable light winds being most favourable to her, she had got within a mile of us; then hoisting English colours, fired a gun to bring us to; we likewise fired and showed our colours; and observing that she had the advantage of failing we bore down to speak with her; but there being hardly any wind, it was dark before we came with her; their gun-ports, fore and aft, were up, the between decks lighted, and the crew at their quarters. This formidable appearance damped the spirits of our peaceable passengers, who were now in suspense whether they should go to France or Otaheite; for as she was much our superior in force, we must inevitably have fallen into their hands had they been enemies: but on hailing her our apprehensions vanished; her name was the Jack Park, of Liverpool, bound to Africa; she was a letter of marque, and out of twenty-two vessels she only were English.

The observations of the missionaries, on this occasion, are well worth remarking: "Many fears began to arise in our minds; but thanks be to God, we were enabled to cast our care upon Him, and resign ourselves to his blessed will; knowing that whatever the Lord in his providence should send us, we trust shall be for his own glory—the Lord is better to us than all our fears."

19th. "This morning at sun-rising I was upon deck," says W. P. "and struck with the scene presented to my view. The sea was quite calm and serene, the sky was most beautiful, and the sun discovering his disk out of variegated clouds: I never before saw anything so delightful. At a distance were some water-spouts extending from the clouds to the sea, which formed a most wonderful object: I thought of the beautiful words of the Psalmist, "They who go down to the sea in ships, &c. they see the works of the Lord, and his wonders in the deep.'"

21st. A heavy squall came on when the missionaries were engaged between decks in evening prayer; and the ship heeling on a sudden, the lee scuttle being open, the water rushed in like a torrent, and rather alarmed them. "I caught up," says W. H. "a gown of my wife's, the first thing in the way, and held it in the scuttle-hole till the carpenter went over the ship's side and closed it tight. The squall did not continue long, and we were enabled to sing the praises of our Lord with enlarged hearts."

22nd. A number of sharks were playing round the ship; we caught two, each about five feet long; after being cut into pieces, and the entrails taken out, the heads jumped about the deck for a considerable time.

27th. The weather became now very unsettled, the winds variable and equally, attended with much thunder and lightning; here we also felt the power of a vertical sun, and, apprehensive of its sickening effects, put in practice those methods which eminent voyagers have used so successfully: we first washed between decks quite clean, and when dry fumigated with tobacco and sulphur; at six every morning the hammocks were brought upon deck; and thus the berths, kept as clean as possible, received the benefit of the fresh air. From the 18th to the 22d of the month we sailed through a part of the sea which in the night exhibits a brilliant appearance, all round the ship, in her wake, and where the squalls ruffle the surface, being grandly illuminated. Some affect this to be occasioned
by animalcules which thus glow in the dark, their shining parts being turned upwards by the turbulence of the waters. On the 27th, in lat. 3° N. and long. 28° W. we got the fresh S. E. trade wind, the salutary effects of which were gratefully received; for, sensible whence our blessing comes, we had reason to be thankful, that, after the late weather, so pernicious to European constitutions, we were all preserved in good health.

29th. We saw a very remarkable shoal of porpoises; they rose as if disciplined in a straight line extending about half a mile, making so sudden a noise and ruffle in the sea, that at first sight we took them to be breakers. About midnight we crossed the equator in long. 30° W.; the variation by five sets of azimuths 5° 25' W.

In these latitudes we naturally expected to meet calms and burning suns, instead of which we have a delightful breeze, which carries us along about nine knots an hour; and the sun-beams being broken by clouds and a haze, the heat hath not exceeded what we have often felt in England.—How great is his mercy!

31st. At six A.M. saw the island of Fernando de Noronha, bearing W.N.W. nine leagues; then ran S.S.W. forty-two miles, and observed in lat. 4° 31' S. long. by account 32° 19' W. This island, when it bore W.N.W. nine leagues, shewed in detached hills, the largest of which had the appearance of a church steeple.

"This island," says Antonio de Ulloa, "hath two harbours, capable of receiving ships of the greatest burden; one is on the north side, the other on the north-west; the former is, in every respect, the principal, both for shelter, capacity, and the goodness of its bottom; but both are exposed to the north and west; but these winds, particularly the north, are periodic, and of no long continuance."

November 2d. After passing this island the wind continued at S.E. till in lat. 7° S. it became variable, shifting almost every day from about S.S.E. to E. and back by the eastward to S. When there was nothing in the wind, the weather was most unsettled and rainy; when in the southern quarter we had generally fair weather, though sometimes the south-easters were accompanied with a little rain.

The pores being exhausted, the captain proposed to issue half a pint of Madeira wine to the missionaries, which was thankfully accepted.

2d. Caught two Portuguese men of war in a bucket; they are beautiful pink-coloured bladders in the shape of a curious shell, and put out innumerable arms like worms about a foot long, which, on being touched, sting like nettles. They rise to the surface, and swim before the wind like little ships.

4th. We have to acknowledge the unspeakable goodness of God towards us; it is six weeks this day since we left St. Helen's, and we are all in health, strength, and activity; and have enjoyed an uninterrupted favourable wind ever since we quitted our native shores.

6th. Celebrated the communion on the quarter-deck, covered with an awning to keep us from the sun—a very comfortable time—enabled to rejoice in the Lord our strength and righteousness: Oh, may his kingdom spread far and wide!

7th. Met this evening to send up our united prayers with our brethren in England, for a blessing on this and all missionary labours throughout the world: we began at half past four, to correspond with our brethren at seven o'clock, such being the difference of time.

9th. In lat. 18° 39' S. long. 37° 46' W., we anchored on the outer part of the Abrolhos banks in eighteen fathoms; and while we were running fourteen leagues on a S.W. course we had irregular soundings, viz. 18, 20, 22, 24, 25, 26, 27, 30, 35, coarse sand with reddish stones. At noon we observed in lat. 19° 56' S.; our longitude by lunar observation of sun and moon 38° 27', by account 38° 21' W. From noon, with irregular soundings of nearly the same depth, we ran S.S.W. fourteen leagues farther, and could then find no bottom with fifty fathom of line. Here we reckoned ourselves to be in lat. 19° 54' S.
To the South-Sea Islands.

Nov.

and lightning, we ran our electric conductors to the masts and head, a precaution necessary when within the tropics.

13th. Being now safely moored, after a passage of five thousand miles, through the most malignant climates, it is proper to pause, while we with grateful hearts adore the goodness of God, whose watchful providence has been conspicuously displayed in our favour; preferring us in health, and guiding us in safety to a port where we can procure whatever refreshments we want for the comfort of our passage. Besides these motives, an additional cause for thankfulness is, that the hearts of the missionaries seem as much as ever devoted to the Redeemer's service, and their minds as ardently intent as ever to promote his glory.

This day being the sabbath, the incumbent duties were observed in the same manner as at sea; the officer of the guard-boat attended, conducting himself with much propriety, and at the close of the worship expressed his approbation. His curiosity, however, was much excited, and he seemed quite at a loss to know what kind of people we were; but either through modesty, or a fear of offending, declined making any inquiries: afterwards, when more familiar, he said that he never before saw people behave so peaceably and soberly; on the first day after their arrival; the reverse, swearing, noise, and drunkenness being generally the practice.

14th. Since the captain was on shore on our first arrival, no individual was allowed to go from the ship till a further examination by the superior officers, whose visit we were obliged patiently to wait; and as the time of their coming was uncertain, we employed the day on the necessary duty of the ship till about four in the afternoon, when they came, in the master-attendant's boat, some military officers, the chief justice, a physician, the captain of a ship, and an interpreter. Their business seemed to be trifling, repeating only the questions which had been put to the captain at the first; however, though their scrivener was present, what they had now done was not sufficient to the captain, myself, and the second officer,
were ordered to attend at the viceroy's palace, there to answer to the
fame thing of interrogations, viz. Whence we came? whether bound?
the nature of our voyage? and what political news we had
to communicate? When the whole was noted, duplicates written,
and signed by us, we were informed that the papers would be sent
to Lisbon, and that such scrutinies were the common practice of the
colony.

This ceremony being over, we had leave to go on shore when
we pleased, themselves taking care always to put a soldier in the boat
before the put from alongside; and as soon as we landed, another
picked us up and followed us through the town, abiding close by us
till we returned again to the boat. From Monday till Saturday we
were employed refitting our rigging, watering our ship, and procuring
live stock, wine, &c. for sea store; several sorts of seeds and
plants were also got on board, such as it was supposed might flourish
and be useful at Otaheite.

On Saturday the 19th, at four in the morning, we unmoored,
and with the master-attendant on board took the ship nearer
to the harbour's mouth, that we might be in readiness to embrace the first
leading breeze to fail.

About noon the sea wind set in with a thick fog; in the after­
noon both boats were employed to bring from the shore a variety of
things which were still unavoidably there.

20th. At seven in the morning we weighed with a light breeze in our
favour; but by the time we got abreast of fort Santa Cruz it
changed against us; however, we kept plying to windward, and
after we had made a few tacks, the master-attendant took his leave.
At three P.M. we passed between Razor island and Round island, when
a fresh breeze springing up, we were very soon out of sight of land.

The city of Rio de Janeiro is at present the capital of Brazil, and,
since the discovery of the diamond mines in its vicinity, has been
the residence of the viceroy. It has for its defence cannon planted
upon the tops of the eminences, which command its entrance;
entering 3l. 12s., and 3s. 6d. a day while at anchor; besides this, foreign vessels must pay an interpreter commission for his business with government, and on what he purchases; however, provisions are very cheap. Rum, which they make in the colony, is of a tolerable quality; and their port wine, mellowed by passing through the tropical climates, is allowed to excel in goodness.

On entering this port, after a long passage across the Atlantic ocean, the vastness of the prospect fills the mind with the most pleasing sensations. Pilling the narrow entrance between two lofty hills, the harbour suddenly widening throws like an extensive lake, where on different parts lie many scattered islands. On the left, the city, with the fortifications and white-washed walls, presents itself in a striking manner, with shipping at anchor, and boats bringing supplies from every quarter. Beyond all, to the north-west, as far as the eye can reach, a range of lofty mountains erect their rugged tops; in their bosoms, perhaps, thousands of human beings are doomed, in search of gold and diamonds, to spend their days in misery.

The Observations of the Missionaries at their Entrance and Stay at Rio Janeiro.

ON approaching the harbour the tops of the mountains were hid in clouds, but the hills near the shore covered with fruit-trees to their very tops. Several fortified islands were around us; and on the main we saw a magnificent aqueduct of about fifty arches, extending from one mountain to another. Here we began to observe marks of their superstition, for the cross was erected on the tops of the hills, and on their forts. On the Lord's day, the Portuguese and Indians, who were our attendants on board, looked on very attentively, and behaved very ferously, during our worship, though unacquainted with the language; whilst those who remained in the boat, though it was Sunday, amused themselves with cards.

A large party of us going on shore, we had leave to see the town, accompanied by two officers, who treated us with much civility. On landing we were struck with the style of a poor slave worn out with drudgery and labour, advancing with feeble crawl to the water's edge; and shortly after beheld a scene disgusting to humanity, a cargo of human beings exposed for sale, naked, in the market-place; whilst others, in companies of six or seven chained together, were traversing the streets with burdens; we have seen their masters flag them like horses or dogs, so that our eyes have been filled with tears at the sight. When shall this barbarous traffic come to an end?

The streets were full of shops of every kind; the druggists' and silversmiths' made the noblest appearance. We observed a large reservoir of water, with three fountains discharging into it, very sweet, and convenient for the shipping. Peruvian bark was 1s. 6d. per pound, cochineal 10s. We wished to procure some of the cochineal plants, but did not succeed; but we got various tropical seeds and plants at a hospitable cottager's, a little distance from the city. The viceroy's garden was beautifully intermixed with oranges, lemons, limes, and a number of other trees. There we saw a crocodile spouting water, surrounded with curious shell-work; and in another part, a boy holding a tortoise, from whose mouth issued a copious stream. The view of the harbour from one of the terraces is magnificent. The summer-houses were adorned with beautiful paintings representing the working the diamond mines, and the making sugar, rum, and other produce of the country.

We next visited the palace. The colonel commandant and his lady showed us the greatest politeness, and his lady was peculiarly attentive to our wives; and forry we were that we could make no acknowledgments in return; especially when we saw their rooted superstitions, beads and crucifixes hung about their necks; and the crosses and their saints were at the corner of every street, and before their
houses; to these they bow and cross themselves as they pass. Indeed they seem sunk in idolatry. The number of their priests is immense. The town seemed not bigger than Bristol, and can hardly contain more than two hundred thousand inhabitants.

Our attention was arrested by a grand procession of priests, nuns, mourners, &c. entering one of their cathedrals, which was hung with black, and blazing with lamps. The prayers were chanted, and choruses sung, accompanied by a band of music. The sight afflicted us; to behold such external pomp of worship, and to discover no traces of the pure undefiled religion of Jesus.

They are very jealous of strangers on account of their diamond mines, where so many miserable Africans are yearly sacrificed. We passed the military hospital, on a healthy spot near a mile from the city; but I did not visit it, says the surgeon, lest I might carry some infection on board. Not far distant, in a beautiful valley, is the viceroy's magnificent chapel; and they are now erecting a large cathedral near it, where a multitude of slaves were employed, raising a vast superstructure on a sandy foundation. I retired to my cabin in the evening, praying that the Lord would send hither his precious gospel with demonstration of his spirit and power.

Upon the whole, we had every reason to be satisfied with our reception; and embraced the opportunity of a ship failing for Europe to convey intelligence to our friends.

Though the following letter addressed by the missionaries to the directors has been published, it properly and deferently claims a part in this narrative; and with it we shall close the transactions at Rio Janeiro.

---

Nov.] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

"Dear and honoured Brethren,

"We think it our duty to inform you, we arrived at this place on Saturday, 12th instant, after a passage of seven weeks and one day. We cannot sufficiently acknowledge the great goodness of Almighty God, in the signal blessings we have been favoured with, since our departure from our country and dear connections therein.

"We have not experienced one day of real bad weather since we were launched upon the bosom of the great deep: winds and waves, in the hands of our God, have been propitious. The fiery heat of the sun, in passing beneath its directest rays, hath been kindly checked by intervening clouds or cooling gales; so that we have crossed thus far through the burning zone, without feeling those inconveniences that we were naturally led to expect. Our visitations of sickness have been partial and transient; few having been affected, and those, through divine goodness, speedily recovered. Mrs. Eyre excepted, who, through weakneis and infirmity incident on age, has enjoyed but little health since our departure; however, from the time of our arrival in this harbour, she appears greatly revived. The abundant supply of every necessary, furnished by our liberal friends, hath not suffered us to feel the smallest want. Our attention has been chiefly directed to the reading of the accounts of the islands of the South Sea, and acquiring some knowledge of the Otaheitean language, from the providential means put into our hands; other studies of a scientific nature we have not been able to pay general application to. The worship of the Most High has been duly and constantly attended, without any omission but when necessity or prudence made it warrantable. Whatever spiritual trials we individually have suffered, moments of refreshment from God and our Saviour Jesus Christ have more than compensated. Harmony and concord continue among us as a body"
engaged in one common cause. We look forward to what remains of our voyage and future operations with that concern our peculiar situation demands. Our insufficiency we feel, and where our strength lieth we know. We humbly hope and trust that the hand of God will continue with us, by his Spirit to direct us, and by his power to guard us. We give ourselves up to God, through Jesus Christ our Lord, and desire to lie placid in his arms.

Dear brethren, the whole body of missionaries, as the heart of one man, present their Christian love to the body of directors, the society, and all true lovers of Christ and his gospel. We pray the continuance of an interest in your fervent prayers for us, and for our undertaking; that we may acquit ourselves as men, faithful to the cause in which we are engaged, and be rendered mighty instruments in the hands of God for the conversion of the heathens of the South Sea: so shall iniquity stop its mouth, the wise and prudent in their own eyes be ashamed, and the mighty power of God be displayed in the eyes of the world, by his choosing the foolish things of the world to confound the wise, the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty; the base things of the world, and things which are despised, and things which are not, to bring to nought things that are.

We remain, dear and honoured brethren,
"Your brethren in the gospel of Jesus Christ,
"The whole body of missionaries,
"JOHN JEFFERSON, Secretary."
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

December 1st. The gale moderated, and the sea falling greatly, a few of the sick recovered; between decks were cleared and dried, the ship put in order, and preparations made to encounter such storms as we might now expect. The cow had suffered much in the late gale from repeated falls, and as no hay had been got at Rio Janeiro, on account of the rainy season, the little we brought from home was now expended, therefore no alternative remained but to kill the poor lean animal; this was done accordingly, but with reluctance, as her milk had been very serviceable to the women and children; we found her big with calf, which made her more regretted. In the course of the night we experienced another smart gale, which, though not quite so violent as the last, was, like it, attended with rain, thunder, and lightning.

2d. At daylight we had better weather, and the sea was remarkably smooth, but very much discoloured; the cause of which phenomenon is generally ascribed to the outfall of the tide from the great river of Rio de la Plata: we found, but found no bottom with one hundred fathom of line. At noon our latitude, by observation, was 38° 8' S. long. 50° 15' W. Towards the close of the day the sky again put on a gloomy aspect, and from a moderate breeze at S. by W. the wind veered to S. W. by W. the gale increasing, and the sea rising very fast.

3d. In the morning the sea ran exceeding high, and the wind blew a complete gale, which reduced us to a close-reefed main-top-sail and foresail. Several of our live flocks died, either by the cold or the spray of the sea, so that we were in danger of losing the whole of this invaluable preservative of health. Not only the greater part of the missionaries were sea-fick, but some of our seamen also. Mrs. Eyre, already exhausted by continual illness, seemed unable long to sustain these greater trials; and respecting those who were not sick, they, and likewise the crew, felt the uncomfortable effects of such bad weather. Being thus situated, the captain was appre-
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

Beginning that in persevering in our endeavours to double Cape Horn, our raw, unseasoned company of landmen, women, and children, might fall victims to the repeated storms and colder weather, which we might expect to meet with in the attempt: also, after doing our best, the certainty of getting round, in our circumstances, was doubtful, as in the case of Bligh and others, whose efforts, after long struggles, proved in vain.

Therefore the captain, after deliberately weighing these and the connected circumstances, relinquished a plan, which to execute required a ship's crew of hardy sailors, unaccompanied by tender women and children, and adopted the resolution of going the eastern passage; that is, to pass a few degrees south of the Cape of Good Hope, to sail to the southward of the south cape of New Holland and New Zealand, keeping in the track of the westerly winds till near the meridian of Otaheite, and then to steer to the northward for that island.

At noon we observed in lat. 39° 23'S. long. 50° W. Immediately afterwards we bore away, setting what sail the ship could bear; and this we certainly had good reason to do, considering that before we could reach Otaheite by the straightest course, we must run not less than fourteen thousand miles, whereas, from our present situation, to go by way of Cape Horn, the distance did not exceed seven thousand miles; and I am persuaded, that to some on board the desire to sail round the world was more than a counterpoise to the difficulties which might attend our passage round that cape. But since it is proper, that in all cases self-gratification ought to give place to the best devised means of obtaining the principal ends of our employment, so now all were fully satisfied that the late adopted measures were for the best.

The sea running tremendously high, we were apprehensive of being pooped by it, or otherwise receiving damage, therefore shaped our course right before it, steering N.E. by E. and E.N.E. till it gradually became smoother. In the course of the first four days we ran six hundred and forty miles by our log, and were then detained for a while by easterly winds.

But to particularize the various occurrences of so long a passage, where the objects which present themselves have already been largely treated of by men of ability and skill in natural history, would afford but little entertainment; and tedious repetitions of winds and weather only tire the patience; therefore shall deem it sufficient to notice briefly the progress we made from time to time. Our missionary journals will fill the chasm.

December 5th. Our religious exercises have hitherto not been interrupted; we have maintained the regulated daily services between decks when we could not assemble on the quarter. This day we met our dear friends in England at their hour of prayer, and sent up our petitions in union with theirs to the throne of grace for the success of all missionary labours.

6th. Fresh breezes: ran eight or nine knots an hour. How great are his mercies!

8th. A great head sea; saw several whales playing around; sometimes they approached very near, close under the stem, when we could observe them distinctly, as they came to the surface to breathe, throwing up the water to a vast height with a tremendous noise. We were struck with awe and solemnity—How wonderful and manifold are thy works, O God! Heaven, earth, and sea, declare thy glory: 'Let every thing which hath breath praise the Lord.'

The climate here, though advancing to the midst of summer, appeared to us cold as in England in the midst of winter.

The gale still blew from the west with unabated violence: an awful sea running mountains high; the clouds hanging low, thick, and gloomy; the shipuffled before the wind with surprising ease and swiftness, and shipping very little water, considering the greatness of the sea. At those times we truly beheld the wonders of the Lord in the great deep. The ship sometimes seemed hid between two lofty mountains of
4.4 ft R~T ~ISSI0NAR1;' VOYAGE

water, and then elevated to the immense summit. These sights of the marvelous works of our God excited our ideas of his greatness and glory, and increased our joy and praise; assured that this awful God is our God, and all his divine perfections engaged in our behalf. We have sometimes sat on the deck with sacred pleasure and composure, viewing the towering billows on every side, some following us with their foaming tops, and seeming to threaten our destruction; but instead of doing us any harm, only pushing us on the faster to the haven where we would be. We were unable to celebrate the Lord's supper through the agitation of the vessel, and transmuted our usual service into a meeting of prayer between decks; there confined from the sight of the sun, and the sea making often our master; but instead of doing us any harm, only pushing us on to the haven where we would be. We were unable to celebrate the Lord's supper through the agitation of the vessel, and transmuted our usual service into a meeting of prayer between decks; there confined from the sight of the sun, and the sea making often our master; but instead of doing us any harm, only pushing us on to the haven where we would be.

The immense shoals of fishes around us have often amused and astonished us; some larger marching in great pomp, followed by a train of smaller, and approaching close to the ship's sides; the

Thy shining grace can cheer
The dungeon where we dwell,
Tis paradise if thou art there,
If thou depart 'tis hell.

Though by changing our course we shall lengthen our voyage seven thousand miles, and have two hundred and eleven degrees of longitude to run, yet the speed with which we advance is amazing; in the last two days, since Friday at midnight, we have run by the log, near five hundred miles. The Lord is sending us about as he did his Israel of old, and no doubt for wise ends. Could we have gone round Cape Horn, we might probably have reached the place of our destination much sooner; but we are short-fought creatures, and in the best hands; let his will be done, who knows how most safely to lead us through the deep as through a wilderness.

The missionaries were now applying themselves to the Otaheitan language, the most diligent giving pleasing proofs of their desire and aptness to acquire it. A part of each day was also appropriated to reading the Rev. Mr. Greatheed's account of the South-Sea islands: this they styled Missionary Geography; from thence deriving considerable knowledge: their minds also became more exercised, and a difference of opinion gradually increased concerning the propriety of their separating, and which group appeared the most eligible and safe to settle in: some preferred the Friendly Isles, others Otaheite. John Harris alone was for the Marqueñas; he had long ago made that choice, and still remained unshaken in his resolution, desiring only to have one or two to accompany him; and for that purpose
was now using his influence with the young men, few of whom as yet seemed inclined to settle at the Marquesas. In consequence of the probability of such a separation taking place, a meeting of the whole body of missionaries was held, when, after a long conversation, it was moved, "That eight persons and the chairman (the captain) be chosen to draw up a code of church government for the future conduct of their little society, together with certain religious principles, to be signed by every individual."—Agreed. The same day the following persons were chosen by ballot to compose the committee: viz. Bowell, Buchanan, Cover, Henry, Jefferson, Lewis, Main, and Shelly.

At another meeting it was moved, "That two days in the week, Tuesdays and Thursdays, an hour and half each, be appointed for the discussion of some doctrinal part of God's word. The text of scripture to be appointed by a moderator, chosen out of the body, who shall publicly declare the text at least two days before the time of discussion; the members to speak in rotation, and not to exceed a quarter of an hour each, and to divide the text under proper heads, which shall be committed unto paper, and a copy of the same to be delivered to the moderator."—Agreed. Mr. Lewis chosen first moderator. The design of this plan was to improve the young men in the method of arranging their thoughts, and to excite them to a more diligent search into the scriptures. It was moved also, at the same meeting, "That Messrs. Henry and Kelso do, in conjunction with the ordained ministers, join in the regular dispensation of the word of God."—This was likewise agreed to.

Respecting the health of both missionaries and crew, we may all (two or three excepted) say that we have enjoyed that blessing abundantly. Mr. Clode was lately attacked with a severe fever, and for some time delirious, but now in a way of recovery; and Mr. Buchanan, having suffered continually by seasickness, was at present brought very low, and for some days confined to his bed, by a painful colicky complaint, which long resisted the power of medicine; while his getting worse every day increased the concern all on board, through fear of losing this humble and devoted missionary. But to our great joy, December 29th, at the time when we thought him expiring, he obtained relief, and afterwards gradually recovered. His happy experience of God's love, and joy of hope through all his illness, was a singular comfort and encouragement to all the brethren.

January 1st, 1797. Little did we apprehend on this day last year what was the decree of the Lord concerning us. We have now sailed twelve thousand miles.

Come, my soul, a year is gone, And thyself may'ft truly morn; Small the fruit to God is found, Too much like the barren ground.

This new year may be my last, Former years are gone and past; Come, my soul, arise and pray, Trim thy lamp this new-year's day.

2d. We were now making rapid advances towards the desired island; but little remarkable occurred.—The aquatic birds, which had daily visited us in great numbers since we came into this sea, seemed now to have left us, so that for some days we hardly saw one of any kind. Whales were playing round the ship, and it is probable that, had they been objects of our voyage, we might have caught some of the many we saw. There were several of the brethren who took great delight in flinging with harpoons in their hands, watching opportunities to strike the porpoises that were usually sporting under the bows, and one day Mr. Smith had the success to strike one, the blubber of which produced four gallons of good oil.

By the middle of January the committee of eight had nearly finished...
the articles of faith and rules of church government. As yet no serious
difference of sentiment had arisen among the missionaries: one now
commenced regarding those points of doctrine which have too often,
and with too great acrimony, divided the church of the living God.
It had been the great object of the directors to prevent as much as
possible diversity of opinion among the brethren, being conscious on
whichever side the truth might be found in the abstruser points of
theological tenets, that all disputes among the teachers themselves
should be guarded with the greatest precaution.

As the directors held the doctrinal articles of the church of Eng­
land in the sense usually termed Calvinistic, and in correspondence
with the opinion of their brethren in Scotland, contained in the Af­
ssembly's catechism; it was an original decision, that none should be
sent out as missionaries, who did not make a clear and explicit con­
fe ssion of their faith, agreeable to this rule. We had every reason
to believe that all the missionaries were of one mind; but it now ap­
peared, on the discussion, that two of the thirty had entertained
principles different from the rest, which occasioned some debate.
The general sense of the body was, that it would be injurious to the
work to continue those as fellow-helpers whose difference of sentiment
from their brethren might produce unhappy effects among the hea­
ten. However, after a variety of conferences on the subject, con­
ducted with the greatest calmness, that two of the thirty had entertained
principles different from the rest, which occasioned some debate.

The sensations of the missionaries on this occasion their own journals
will best tell. This was the most severe and awful storm we had yet
experienced. The sea ran mountains high, but our little and incom­
parable bark, with which our God hath blessed us, lay to under
her main-fay-sail, and mounted over the waves like a duck with
feathers. We were blessed with a calm and serene state of mind, and
enabled to cast our care upon God, which we did in a sweet prayer­
meeting between decks. In the evening the wind died away, and
the lovely stars shewed their faces. Appointed Tuesday next to sign
the articles, and observe a day of public thanksgiving for the signal
and wonderful mercies we had received.

It is remarkable, that through the voyage the Lord has usually sent
us moderate weather on the sabbath days, so that our solemnities have
been seldom interrupted.

21st. The articles of faith and rules of church government being
completed and approved by the whole of the brethren, they, at a
meeting this day, signed the same, and held a day of thanksgiving.
A separation becoming now more and more probable, they began
teaching each other the little handicraft arts they were masters of,
supposing such might be serviceable when they parted. Dr. Gilliam
gave likewise lectures upon a prepared skeleton of the human body,
and instructed them in the use of the medicines.

This afternoon we experienced a remarkable interference of Divine
Providen ce in our favour. The pitch-kettle being placed on the fire
by the carpenter whilst calking the decks, the man who was left
in care of it suffered it to boil over: immediately it blazed up with surprising fury, he had, however, the presence of mind to lift it off the fire, and prevent the dreaded conflagration. Though the cabin was so dry, and the foresail hanging down over it, which must have instantly communicated the flames to the rigging, through the goodness of God no harm was done, and the fire put out in an instant. O, the wonders of his care, who hath said, “he that toucheth you, toucheth the apple of my eye.”

Ninety-seven days had now passed since we left Rio Janeiro, and except one vessel which we met with a week after our departure, we had not in all this time seen either ship or shore, and had sailed, by our log, thirteen thousand eight hundred and twenty miles, a greater distance probably than was ever before run without touching at any place for refreshment, or seeing land. But at length, tired with beholding only a vacant horizon, and the familiar objects the sea daily presented to our view, all began to look with eager expectation of desiring a South-Sea island; which, even in the minds of those whose reason and intelligence informed them better, fancy had figured as differing from all the lands or islands on which they had ever fixed their eyes before. However, the time was now arrived when this curiosity was to be in part gratified. About seven in the morning Toobouai was discovered from the fore-yard of one of the seamen, bearing S. E. by E. eight or nine leagues off, resembling at this distance like two separate islands, but on our near approach the low land which connects the hills appeared. The wind at N. E. being unfavourable, we stood towards the island, but the sun set before we got sufficiently near to discern the natives; neither did we see any canoes. The wind at this time shifting to E. by S. we laid our course upon the starboard tack, and steering along the western side pretty near the shore, though in the dusk of the evening, saw that a border of low land ran from the skirts of the hills, and upon it abundance of cocoanut and other trees. The sea was breaking violently on the reefs, especially to the N. E. where they extend a long way off.

It is now fourteen weeks since we left saw the land, which was Rio Janeiro, and it must be confessed, it is very delightful to behold; though we were not in any want of it, neither has our voyage been attended with any inconvenience. The Lord, in providence, has supplied our necessities in a most wonderful manner. Blessed be God, we have not found the want of a drop of good water to quench our thirst, nor bread, &c. to satisfy our hunger, and here we are all the living monuments of his mercy to praise him.

The wind blew fresh from Toobouai, and the intention of our captain was not to go near this island; but, for the sake of some who were desirous of seeing it, we tacked to windward, and towards evening got within a few miles of it. He thought it not prudent to land on account of the natives being prejudiced against the English through the mutineers of the ship Bounty, who had destroyed near a hundred of them. But we trusted to visit them at some future time, to remove their prejudice with the glad tidings of the gospel of peace.

A fine breeze continuing all the night, we saw no more of Toobouai. This island was discovered by Captain Cook in the year 1777; and upon it the unhappy Fletcher Christian, with his companions, the mutineers of the Bounty, attempted a settlement in 1789. They had with them some of the natives of Otaheite, and live stock of different sorts. Notwithstanding the opposition they met with from the natives on their first arrival, they warped the ship through the only opening in the reef; then landing, chose a spot of ground, built a fort thereon, and taking their live stock on shore, they intended, had the natives proved friendly to their stay, to have destroyed the Bounty and fixed themselves there; but their own unruly conduct alienated the natives from them, who withheld their women, which they were ready to seize by violence; they excited the jealousy of the chiefs by a friendship formed with one of them in preference to the rest; they were disunited among themselves, and many longed for Otaheite: they resolved to leave Toobouai, and carry with them all the live stock which they had brought, the benefit of
which the Toobouians began to understand, and were unwilling to see them again; all collected and removed. This caused the first brawl between the Otaheitean servants, who were driving in the hogs, and the natives. Insolence and want of gentleness and conciliation, led to all the bloody consequences which ensued. The natives were numerous, and fought with great courage, forcing the mutineers to avail themselves of a rising ground, where, with their superior skill, the advantage of fire-arms, and the aid of the Otaheiteans, who fought bravely on this occasion, they at last came off victorious, with only one or two of themselves wounded, whilst the dead bodies of the Toobouians covered the spot, and were afterwards thrown up in three or four heaps. Thus finding that no peaceful settlement was now to be obtained in this place, they re-shipped the live stock, abandoned their fort, and taking their friendly chief on board with them, weighed anchor and steered towards Ohaitapeha bay in the island of Otaheite. On their passage thither, it is said, Christian became very melancholy, confining himself to the cabin, and would hardly speak a word to any person; lamenting, probably, that the resolutions he had formed without deliberation, and executed with rash haste, had now involved his own life and those of his adherents in misery. As soon as they anchored in Ohaitapeha bay at Otaheite, those who wished to stay there went on shore; but nine of the mutineers, and also some of the native men and women, remained on board. With these, Christian cutting the cable in the night, put to sea, and steered towards the N.W., has never been heard of since.

Here it may be proper, before we approach the destined island, to notice the steps which the brethren were taking, and what new regulations were made previous to their arrival. Near seven months were elapsed since they embarked at Blackwall, during which time it is reasonable to suppose, that, being closely penned together in a ship, they were now become well acquainted with each other's tempers and dispositions, and that a similarity in these would naturally attract peculiar regard and friendship. Several of the brethren having hinted to the captain which group of islands they preferred, the seniors, who had always declared for Otaheite, requested that each one should be obliged, on a day appointed, to signify in writing the place to which he wished to go, and sign the same with his name. To this the captain replied, that they might do so if they pleased; but that he himself would act as closely agreeable to the discretionary instructions given by the directors as future circumstances would allow.

By our progress to the east, the monthly prayer-meeting had been held on Tuesday morning, a quarter before seven, to correspond with our brethren at home, who met on Monday evening. A spirit of prayer and supplication seemed evidently poured out upon us in behalf of the poor heathen; every heart expanded with love, and glowed with ardent desires to proclaim salvation to them through the blood of the Lamb.

Having frequently discussed the subject of the separation of the brethren among the three groups of islands, the Marquesis, the Society, and Friendly Islands; February 27th, being the day appointed, the society met, and the business of the day was opened in the usual manner, when there appeared for each group as in the following list:

```
<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th>OTAHETE</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1.</td>
<td>Rev. J. F. Cover</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2.</td>
<td>John Eyre</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3.</td>
<td>John Jefferson</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4.</td>
<td>Thomas Lewis</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5.</td>
<td>Mr. H. Bicknell</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6.</td>
<td>B. Broomhall</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7.</td>
<td>J. Cock</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8.</td>
<td>S. Closse</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9.</td>
<td>J. A. Gillham</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10.</td>
<td>Mr. Wm. Henry</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>11.</td>
<td>P. Hodges</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>12.</td>
<td>R. Hassell</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>13.</td>
<td>E. Main</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>14.</td>
<td>H. Nott</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>15.</td>
<td>F. Oakes</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>16.</td>
<td>J. Puckey</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>17.</td>
<td>Wm. Puckey</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>18.</td>
<td>Wm. Smith</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>two children</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td></td>
<td>make in all twenty-five for Otaheite.</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>
```
The above business being settled, the captain intimated to those intended for Otaheite, that, as we were drawing near that island, it would be proper for them to choose their committee and president. This they accordingly proceeded to do; Mr. Jefferson was elected president by a great majority, and Mess. Cover, Lewis, Henry, and Broomhall, to compose the committee. Mr. Cover was appointed secretary and store-keeper, and Lewis librarian. It was then agreed, that the president, secretary, &c. should hold their office for six months, and that the committee should go out by rotation, one every three months. Matters being thus settled, they began to encourage each other to enter without fear upon their work, and by a zealous and steady perseverance therein to manifest themselves worthy of the high characters of missionaries.

Our passage from Toobouai was much longer than we expected, owing to variable winds from the N.W quarter and very unfavoured weather.

March 1st. From two o'clock in the afternoon till four it rained excessively hard; more than a tun of water was caught, which gave the missionaries afterwards an opportunity of washing their linen, and putting it in order previous to their landing. From four until seven was an interval of fair weather; but now the clouds gathering thick, and wearing a gloomy aspect, a most alarming night commenced; orders were given to furf every sail except the foresail, and, hauling it close, we lay to. The rain began heavier than before, accompanied, from nine till midnight, with sharp vivid lightning and awful claps of thunder, which, on account of its nearness, shook the Duff at every clap. The rain, attended with squalls, continued till three in the morning; then abated. The sea was not high, neither was the wind very violent; nevertheless the darkness and conflict of the elements formed a night so truly dismal, that all on board confessed they had never witnessed the like before. We therefore, say the missionaries, took to the wings of faith, and fled to the God of our mercies; and when we had sung an hymn, committing ourselves to the protection of the Most High, we retired to rest. The next morning we returned our solemn and grateful thanks for the protection of that night.

After the storm nothing material occurred till Saturday morning, March 4th, when we beheld the long-wished-for island of Otaheite, but at a great distance. At noon the extremity of the ferry peninsula bore from N. by W. to N. by E. twelve or fourteen leagues off: with the wind at N.E. we stood towards it until ten at night, then tacked three or four miles south of the reefs off Atahooroo, and standing off and on till daylight, steered to go between the west end of the island and Eimeo. The captain has mentioned in conversation what we cannot wish should be omitted, that the conflicts he endured upon this near approach to the place of his destination are not to be described; he felt something of that travelling in birth which St. Paul mentions; and his anxiety respecting his brethren and their reception was a burden almost too heavy for him to bear—happily a gracious God quickly delivered him out of all his fears.
CHAPTER VI.

Occurrences on landing at Otaheite, and during the first Visit to that Island.

[Sunday, March 5, 1797.]

THE morning was pleasant, and with a gentle breeze we had by seven o'clock got abreast of the district of Atahooroo, whence we saw several canoes putting off and paddling towards us with great speed; at the same time it fell calm, which being in their favour, we soon counted seventy-four canoes around us, many of them double ones, containing about twenty persons each. Being so numerous, we endeavoured to keep them from crowding on board; but in spite of all our efforts to prevent it, there were soon not less than one hundred of them dancing and capering like frantic persons about our decks, crying, "Tayo! tayo!" and a few broken sentences of English were often repeated. They had no weapons of any kind; however, to keep them in awe, some of the great guns were ordered to be hoisted out of the hold, whilst they, as free from the apprehension as the intention of mischief, cheerfully assisted to put them on their carriages. When the first ceremonies were over, we began to view our new friends with an eye of inquiry; their wild disorderly behaviour, strong smell of the cocoa-nut oil, together with the tricks of the arreories, leftened the favourable opinion we had formed of them; neither could we see aught of that elegance and beauty in their women for which they have been so greatly celebrated. This at first seemed to depreciate them in the estimation of our brethren; but the cheerfulness, good-nature, and generosity of these kind people soon removed the momentary prejudice. One very old man, Mānne Manne, who called himself a priest of the Eatooa, was very importunate to be tayo with the captain; others, pretending to be chiefs, fangled out such as had the appearance of officers for their tayos; but as they neither exercised authority over the unruly, nor bore the smallest mark of distinction, we thought proper to decline their proposals till we knew them and the nature of the engagement better. At this they seemed affu­minated, but still more when they saw our indifference about the hogs, fowls, and fruit, which they had brought in abundance. We endeavoured to make them understand, but I think in vain, that this was the day of the Eatooa, and that in it we durst not trade; but their women repulsed, occasioned greater wonder. They continued to go about the decks till the transports of their joy gradually subsided, when many of them left us of their own accord, and others were driven away by the old man, and one named Mauora, who now exercised a little authority. Those who remained were chiefly arreories from Uliea, in number about forty; and being brought to order, the brethren proposed having divine service upon the quarterdeck. Mr. Cover officiated; he perhaps was the first that ever mentioned with reverence the Saviour's name to these poor heathens. Such hymns were selected as had the most harmonious tunes; first, "O'er the gloomy hills of darkness," then, "Blow ye the trumpet;" and at the conclusion, "Praise God from whom all blessings flow." The text was from the first epistle general of John, chap. iii. ver. 23. "God is love." The whole service lasted about an hour and a quarter. During sermon and prayer the natives were quiet and thoughtful; but when the singing fluck up, they seemed charmed and filled with amazement; sometimes they would talk and laugh, but a nod of the head brought them to order. Upon the whole, their unweariedness and quietness were astonishing; and, indeed, all who heard observed a peculiar solemnity and excellence in Mr. Cover's address on that day.
We had hitherto received very unsatisfactory answers to our inquiries after the Matilda's crew; but at last two of them coming in a canoe: these were Swedes, dressed in the teboota and mān as the natives, and tattooed also about the legs and arms; having got on board, they were called into the cabin, and gave the following account of themselves.--The youngest, named Andrew Cornelius Lind, about thirty years of age, a native of Stockholm, said, that after the loss of the Matilda they took to the boats, and bearing down towards Otaheite, landed on the 6th of March 1792, on the south side of the island; they were immediately plundered of all they had, but afterwards treated kindly by the natives. Since that, the captain and most of the crew had gone homeward by different methods; six of them sailed one of their boats, and set off towards New Holland; but it was improbable they would ever reach thither. The other, whose name is Peter Haggerstein, aged forty, a native of Elnsös in Swedish Finland, was left here by Captain New of the Dardalus. They both spoke tolerably good English, and being well acquainted with the Otaheitean tongue, we entertained a hope that they would prove of great service.

From them we learnt, that the old man who was so solicitous to have the captain for a tayo, had formerly been king of Ulietia, was a near relation of the royal family, and of considerable consequence in the islands, being chief priest over Otaheite and Eimeo. Upon this, Māne Manne was invited into the cabin and treated kindly. He now redoubled his importunities to gain the captain for his friend, who desired him to wait till to-morrow, when he would consider of it. The Swedes further informed us, that the former Otoo had transferred his name and title of Eāce rāhe (or king) to his son, and had now assumed the name of Pomārē: that in a contest about twenty months ago with Temārē, the chief of all the south side of the greater peninsula, Pomārē's party prevailed, and subjected his adversary to a state of dependence, and soon after Tiarabōo was con-

March] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

queried; and thus the whole island became subject to him, or rather to his son Otoo, and has remained so ever since. Motārā, the chief of Eimeo, being dead, Pomārē laid claim to the government of that island; and having only the widow of the deceased to contend with, was, after a few skirmishes, acknowledged as chief, or king. Thus was the power of Pomārē and his son Otoo so greatly increased, that none dared any longer to dispute their authority.

6th. About thirty of the natives, chiefly arreoies, intending to go to Matavai, remained on board all the night, and part of the following day, till we anchored in the bay; as did the two Swedes, and slept on the deck. The missionaries watched; all perfectly quiet. At daybreak the old priest awoke, and being impatient to secure the captain, awoke him also. There was now no refusing him any longer, as even good policy was on his side; therefore they exchanged names, and Māne Manne, wrapping a long piece of cloth around the captain, and putting a teboota over his head, requested for himself a musket, some shot and gunpowder: but being told that none of these were to spare, and that he should be amply repaid for what friendly offices he might do us, he seemed satisfied. All the forenoon was employed in working up without the reefs of Opārē; but gaining little ground, at one P. M. we came to anchor in Matavai bay, Point Venus bearing N.E. by E, and One Tree Hill S. ½ W., distant from the beach about three quarters of a mile. We had not been long at anchor, when all the arreoies, both men and women, sprang into the water and swam to the shore; their place, however, was soon supplied by others, who surrounded the ship with hogs, fruit, and other articles: of these we took a little for present use, but the old priest having promised to supply all our wants by next morning, consequently little was done in the trading way.

Almost the whole afternoon it rained hard till near four o'clock, when we had some intervals of fair weather; then, the captain, Māne Manne, the two Swedes, with brother Cover, Henry, and
a few more of the missionaries, went on shore in order to examine
a large house standing on the extremity of Point Venus. They called
it E Fwharre no Pritane (the Britifh Houfe), and faid it had been
built by Pomarré for Captain Bligh, who had faid he fhould come
back and refide there. It is a large and fpacious building of an
oblong figure, one hundred and eight feet long and forty-eight wide.
In the middle are four large wooden pillars about eighteen feet
high, on which the ridge-tree is supported. About three feet within
the sides stand pillars all round, about nine feet long, and fix feet
distant from each other. On the top of these a plank is let down,
which runs round the whole house; from thence to the ridge large
poles are set up, and handfomely bound round with fine matting
about eighteen inches afunder: on this the thatch is laid, of palm­
tree leaves moft beautifully worked. About one foot from these pil­
lars, on the outside, runs a ikreen of bamboo all round, except
about twenty feet in the middle on both sides.—Thus hath the Lord
appeared to feit before us an open door, which we truft none fhall
henceforth be able to fhut.

The chief of the district (an old man named Pyteah) welcomed
them to the ifland, faid that the house was theirs, and fhould be
cleared for their reception the next day. He then fhewed them the
picture of Captain Cook, upon the back of which were written the
names of his Majefty's ihips and their commanders who had vifited
Matawai since that great navigator's time. The natives on fhore
feemed transportfed with the idea of men coming purpofely from Pre­
tane to fettle among them: this fet thofe missionaries off, who were
to fix here, in very high fpirits.

7th. Manne Manne was as good as his word, coming early
alongfide with three hogs, one fowl, bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and
a quantity of their cloth; the whole intended as a prefent for his
tayo, the captain. He made a long oration, descriptive of all the fhips
and captains which had touched at Otaheite, with the names of the
gods of Ulteria; but faid, that Otaheite had none but from him,
acknowledging the Britifh God to be the beft, and that he fhould
request Otoo to worship him, and to order the people to do the fame.

Soon after Peter the Swede arrived from a diftant part of the ifland
with more fruit, and a remarkably large hog, the two fides of which,
exclusive of the head and entrails, weighed three hundred and forty
pounds; it had on each fide of its mouth two large tufks; for me it
was far too fat for us, and as many small pigs were brought in the
courfe of the day, but little of it was eaten.

Menne Manne, the aged high-priest, had brought five of his
wives with him on board, not one of which exceeded fifteen years
old, and defired he might fleep in the cabin; and, according to the
cuftom of the country, very cordially defired Captain Wilfon, his
tayo, to take his choice, and could hardly persuade him to be
famous in declining the offer; nor failed the next morning to inquire
of them which he had chosen. This brought on a conversation on
the nature of their cuftoms; the captain explained to the old prieft,
how little fuch a ftate of polygamy was f uited to happeinefs; that
no woman could be either fo attached, faithful, affectionate, or
careful to promote domestic felicity, as where the heart was fixed
on one obje& without a rival. The old prieft did not at all relifh this
doctrine, and faid, fuch was not the cuftom of Otaheite; but the
ladies highly approved, and faid the Príanne cuftom was my ty,
my ty, very good.

Manne Manne was now very defirous for us to go to Eimeo with
the fhip, and there land the missionaries under his protection, making
ufe of all his rhetoric to perufe him, and bringing the
two Swedes, whom he seems to have much under his command, to
prove that Pomarré never acted honourably by the Englifh, or any
other, after he had done with their fervices; that themfelves had
affifted him in his wars, had been the principal inftruments of his
fuccefs; but, fince his turn was ferved, he would hardly give them
a small hog. This, and all they urged, might have gained credit
with us, as all the late voyagers have related incidents which mark
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

this chief's character with selfishness; but, on the other side, it might be inferred, that these Swedes, after they had lent their assistance, might be unreasonable, and even insolent in their demands, and by such conduct render it necessary for Pomarre to treat them with bare civility only. Therefore, concluding them prejudiced, and the old priest only arguing from views of interest, it was resolved, that as Otaheite was the most eligible island, the settlement should first be made there, and the friendship and protection of Pomarre and his son Otoo be courted by kindness and attachment to his interest, to be expressed and shown on every occasion; but never to take any part in their wars, except as mediators. In the interval of fair weather, between daybreak and eight o'clock, we purchased a few things from the canoes alongside, merely to please them; for the liberality of our friends had left us no other plea. The rain beginning again as violent as before, prevented the missionaries landing till near eleven in the forenoon; when the captain, Mr. Jeffers (president), with a few more of the missionaries, went on shore, accompanied by Manne Manne and Peter. The natives had assembled upon the beach to the number of four or five hundred, and as the boat approached some ran into the water, and laying hold of her hauled her aground; then took the captain and missionaries on their backs, and carried them dry on shore. They were received by the young king (Otoo) and his wife Téu, both carried on men's shoulders; each took the captain by the hand, and in dumb silence surveyed him attentively, looking in his face and minutely examining every part of his dress: they beheld the brethren also with much the same curiosity. The queen opened Mr. Cover's shirt at the breast and sleeves, and seemed astonished at so clear a sight of the blue veins. That this should be the case now, after so many visits from Europeans, may surprize some: but let such consider, that though the oldest and the middle-aged have been fully gratified in these respects, the young ones have as yet seen very little; for there could be but small difference between themselves and the dark complexions of the naked shipwrecked sailors who had lately taken refuge amongst them.

The captain now informed the king, through Peter as interpreter, that our only inducement for leaving Prétane to come and visit them was to do them good, by instructing them in the best and most useful things; and for this end, some good men of our number intended to settle among them; requiring, at their part, the free gift of a piece of land sufficiently stocked with breadfruit and cocoanut trees, and so large as to contain a garden and admit of houses being built upon it; that this land should be their own; that they would not, on any account, intermeddle in their wars, nor employ their arms but for self-defence; and at all times should live free and unmolested among them; to which, if he consented, they would stay on the island; if not, they would go elsewhere. Much pains were taken to make this plain; but as Otoo appears to be a vacant-looking person, I doubt whether he understood the half of it, though he signed the large house was our own, and we might take what land we pleased.

After this, Manne Manne stood up in the middle of the ring, and made a long speech, passing many encomiums on Prétane. When all was over, the king, still holding the captain by the hand, led him to the house, thence to the beach, and so on; till tired, he requested to return on board. When arrived at the boat, Otoo desired to hear the muskets fired, and, to gratify him, the four they had were discharged twice; with which compliment he seemed highly pleased.

After dinner Otoo and his wife came off, each in a small canoe, with only one man paddling; whilst they went several times round the ship, the queen was frequently bailing her canoe with a cocoanut shell. This may help to form an idea of what a queen is in Otaheite. They would not venture on board, because wherever they come is deemed sacred, none daring to enter there afterwards except their proper domestics.
He appears tall and well made, about seventeen; his queen handsome and finely proportioned, about the same age, and always carried about, on floor, on men's shoulders. The king appears thoughtful, speaks little, but surveys things with attention. The missionaries supposed something majestic in his appearance, but the captain thought him stupid, and to discover little capacity. As he paddled round the ship he was offered the compliment of firing the great guns, but he begged us not, as he was afraid, and the noise would hurt his ears.

Knowing there were women and children on board, they expressed a wish to see them, and when they walked to the ship's side to show themselves, they set up a cry of admiration and wonder. The sky darkening, they made towards shore. We had loosed our sails to dry, and before we could furl them there came on suddenly a smart squall from the N.E., attended with heavy rain, lightning, and thunder; while it lasted, the ship drove about a cable's length, from thirteen fathoms into ten.

At a meeting of the committee it was resolved, that, as the house was now clear, they should land this evening, in order to prepare for the reception of the women; but the rain continuing, prevented.

8th. It rained hard all the morning till about nine o'clock, when it cleared up, and the missionaries went on shore with their chests and beds, and took possession of their house. By the captain's desire, "I," says Mr. Wm. Wilson, "followed to assist them in planning their separate apartments. A vast concourse of the natives had gathered on the beach, watching who should land in the pinnace; among them were Otoo and his wife, carried upon men's shoulders, as on the preceding day. This, I understand, is always the custom when they go beyond the precincts of their dwelling. The queen used the same freedom with me as she had done the day before, with Mr. Cover; and, when gratified, put my shirt neck and sleeves again in order. With one holding each hand, I was led about for a considerable time, and might perhaps have been so

March] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS. 65

most of the day, had I not intimated that I had business to do within the house. He immediately walked with me to the door, but would not enter, because the house would then become sacred to himself. However, before he let me go, he introduced a woman named Whyeridge, the sister of Iddeah, and also wife of Pomare, her Otou wished me to take as a tayo. And considering that I was but a transient visitor, who knew not how far a refusal might disappoint him, I consented to exchange names, and was immediately wrapped in cloth; besides, in the course of the day, several hogs, both alive and ready despatched, were sent me as presents.

The first thing we set about with the house was to close it quite round with the thicker sort of bamboo, fixing a door on each side, and by this means to keep the natives from crowding so much upon us. The several births or apartments were next planned, and partitions of smaller bamboo begun; but in consequence of the great distance the natives had to go up the valley for these bamboos, the work went but slowly on; though one man stripped his own house to supply us. In the arrangement, the married people had a part of one side to themselves, and the single men the other side: all these apartments were at one end, and chosen by lot. Next to them were marked out a store-room, library, and a place for the doctor and his medicines. To enclose the whole, a partition went from side to side, with two lock doors. The remaining space was left for a chapel, and into it, the outer doors opened.

Several of the areois of Ulietea having arrived here about the same time as we did with the ship, they with their heivas made much the same stir in Matavai as a company of strolling players often do in the small villages of our own country. Probably the hopes of pleasing the English strangers was also a spur to their exertion, for either in our fight or our hearing they were engaged the whole day in some sport or other. In the afternoon they collected in great numbers before the door of our house, and began a kind of box-fighting or
wrestling. First forming a ring, within it stood about a dozen of the stoutest fellows, with their backs to the crowd and faces towards each other. Then the game began with an act of defiance or challenge, made by beating heavy strokes with the flat hand upon the left arm above the elbow, where this part was quite black with the repeated strokes it had received. At last one steps forward to the centre of the circle; another, who thinks himself an equal match, advances to meet him; sometimes only a smart blow or two ensues before they fall back again into their places. At another time, after advancing and gazing at each other for a while, one will suddenly plump the top of his head into the face of his opponent, and this causes him to retire in the dumps, sets all the crowd a-laughing. The worst of the game is, when one gets an advantageous hold of his adversary: a severe wrestling then takes place, and it is only at the expense of strength, and blood, and hair, that they will submit to be parted. 

Mānne Mānne sent us in three hogs ready dressed for dinner, with baked bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, &c. He laid them on a large piece of cloth, and invited us to fall to, but not before we had called upon God to bless it. We found it very good, though we had yet neither dish, spoon, knife, fork, table, nor chair. Innumerable presents came in from the various chiefs who were courting our friendship; and we were all dressed in Otaheite cloth.

During the day the house was crowded with natives, which made it prudent to keep a guard over our property, though there appeared no design nor attempt at depredation. At the approach of evening we commanded silence; and, having sung an hymn, Mr. Jefferson offered up prayer to our Lord; during the service the natives behaved very orderly and attentive: At night we requested them to retire, and return in the morning, which they did in the most peaceable manner, and we received not the least disturbance from them. We then held our usual family worship; and, having sauntered on the plenty of provifions which remained, we retired to set, admiring the wondrous providence of our God. Lord, thou hast been better to us than all our fears: grant us firmer faith in thy care, that we may be able to trust thee more in a future day!

How graciously has the Lord displayed his arm for us since leaving our native shores, in traversing a trackless ocean, and opening a door in these heathen lands, we trust, to diffuse his everlasting gospel here. May the Lord make us burning and shining lights!

The king held all our hands, and shook them, as did the queen, examining our clothes very minutely, and took particular notice of Mr. Lewis's umbrella, which, on his expanding it to shew its use, they both made signs not to lift it over their heads, lest it should, according to their customs, become thereby sacred to their own use. Their attention to us is singularly engaging.

9th. This morning the natives came to our house before seven o'clock, made a fire, boiled our water, and prepared the bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts. The king and queen visited us several times in the course of the day.

This morning also Iva Madia, the widow of Oreepiah (brother to Pomarre), lately deceased, paid us a visit, accompanied by two chief women. Oreepiah was much attached to the English; and his widow, supposing us sorry for his loss, on entering the cabin burst into tears, and continued this expression of grief till we all sympathized with her. However, this did not last long; for they soon became cheerful, breakfasted, and dined on board, as did Mānne Mānne, and towards evening they all went on shore; but as no suitable presents were yet got out of the hold, they were desired to renew their visit the next day, when some things should be in readiness for them. There, with the tayos of the crew and missionaries, filled all parts of the ship with hogs, fruit, and cloth.

Otoo paddled round the ship in his canoe, as he had done the day before, and calling out for something to eat, the captain sent him, in one of our dills, half of a roast pig, and some biscuit, with which he set off for the shore, seemingly much pleased.
The business of the house did not go on to-day with much alacrity, owing to the natives slackening in their officiousness, so that we got but few bamboos; however, in the afternoon some were dispatched, taking my word, as an excuse of the paille (an officer of the ship), that they should be rewarded for their trouble; accordingly in the evening we had as many brought to the house as would keep us employed all the following day. As on board, so at the house, successful presents were brought, consisting of live hogs, cocoa-nuts, bread-fruit, and cloth, which are their staple articles; and besides these, more ready-dressed meat was brought than the brethren and the natives employed could consume. But in the midst of this profusion, some were apprehensive of its being followed with inconvenience and embarrassments, and therefore wholly disapproved of making tayos so soon.

While the business was going on ashore, the crew were employed in weighing the anchor, warping farther up the bay, and mooring the ship with the two bowers. Peter, the Swede, also brought his canoe, and such things as the missionaries first wanted were dispatched on shore. Thermometer 76°F.

10th. The wind easterly, moderate and pleasant weather. The people employed hoisting out of the hold and sending sundries ashore on account of the mission. The crew employed in sending sundries on shore on account of the mission. At the house they were very busy fitting up the apartments for the women, whom it was intended to land in the afternoon. The brethren had informed the natives, that next day being the day of the Eatoa, no work would be done, nor any thing received; therefore, on this account, they brought what provisious might serve till Monday, but were in reality sufficient to shift a week.

After dinner the pinnace was manned for the women and children, and by the captain's desire I accompanied them on shore. Vast numbers of the natives crowded to the beach to gratify their curiosity, all behaving with great respect and very peaceable. Otoo and his wife kept for a while at a little distance, seemingly in doubt whether he should approach the women; but thinking it proper to false him, he was a little encouraged; however, he still kept silence, and all the way as we walked to the house, gazed stupidly, like another Cymon.
The house was surrounded all the afternoon by the natives, who were much delighted with the two children, and frequent for them and the women to show themselves at the door. In the dark of the evening they all retired; and this, the brethren remark, they have uniformly done since they first landed. Orders being likewise given at the ship for none of their canoes to come near on the Sunday, they supplied us in the same plentiful manner as they had done the missionaries.

As Mānē Manē had already distinguished himself as a very useful man, besides bringing several hogs, fruit, &c., the captain, to compensate him in part, made him a handsome present, leaving it to himself to enumerate the articles which he most needed; to do this he was at no loss, having great presence of mind on such occasions; therefore he ran off a long list of things which he wanted for a small schooner which he was building at Eimeo; of these such as we had to spare were given to him.

As yet we have had no reason to complain of any improper behaviour in the Otaheiteans, men or women. Neither have we lost a single article to our knowledge, though many have unavoidably been much exposed.

The goodness and love of God to us should be engraved on the tablets of our hearts. After prayer the brethren retired to rest.

Before the Otaheiteans departed they were informed no work would be done the next day, and they asked if it would be more devoted to prayer than the other days, and were told it would.

The Sunday passed very quietly, not one canoe coming near the ship; and on shore no interruption was attempted, the natives, with the king and queen, attending, and conducting themselves in peace and good order. A discussion took place among the brethren concerning the propriety of speaking to the natives upon the important subject of their mission, when it was agreed that the president (Mr. Jefferson) should address them through the medium of Andrew the Swede as interpreter. Accordingly, at three o'clock in the afternoon, they met for this purpose, several of the natives being present both within and without the house; and as soon as Andrew interpreted the first sentence, finding the discourse directed to them, they placed themselves in attentive postures. When they understood a little of what was said, they put very pertinent questions; among others, doubting whether we would bestow aught that could be esteemed a benefit equally on all. They asked, whether the message of the British God was to the towouts as well as to the king and chief? They were answered in the affirmative; and further, Mr. Jefferson, pointing to his brethren, told them that they were the messengers of the only true God; and that though all men had offended him, he was, notwithstanding, a merciful God; conferring on those who believed his word great blessings in this life, and after death took them to a state of eternal happiness. Otoo was present, but, according to human judgment, his stubborn, unteachable nature seems to be the last that any impression can be made upon. We retired to rest, thankful for the occurrences of the day, and for the promising prospects before us through the providence of our God.

13th. Wind easterly, and pleasant weather. The crew employed in hoisting up goods, and sending various articles on shore on account of the mission; two of the brethren from each party dividing a large chest of books.

The natives had perfectly understood that the prohibition was but for yesterday, for early in the morning several canoes were alongside, and in one of them, with our constant friend Mānē Manē, came several chiefs and their wives; but the principal person to be introduced at this time was the father of Pomārē, Otēw, formerly Whāpāi, who is a very venerable looking man, aged about seventy, his head covered with gray hairs, and his chin with a remarkable white beard: his name had once been Otoo; but, on the birth of his son, in compliance with the general custom, he changed it to Otēw. As usual, he presented the captain with a piece of cloth and a pig, receiving in return, and on account of his rank, two
axes, four pair of scissors, and four knives, two looking-glasses and two old shirts, which was all he asked for; and it appears that their requests always include the utmost bounds of their expectation; so that to add aught more is quite superfluous and unnecessary. When breakfast was ready, most of our visitors went upon deck, seemingly through a sense of good manners and a fear of offending, which we may suppose them to have learnt from former visitors, who, for their own sake, might have taught them thus much; for it certainly would be very uncomfortable to have them crowding at meals continually: but Manne Manne had no scruples, and, as if conscious of a right, placed himself next his tayo at table, and being exceedingly fond of the tea and our bread and butter, played rather an epicurean part. In the forenoon Otoo and the queen sent off to beg leave of the captain to send them their presents; to which ceremonial an answer was made in the affirmative; and in consequence thereof we had them presently alongside; the king's consisted of thirteen live hogs, and three ready dressed; the queen's was one dressed, six alive, and a bale of cloth; themselves followed in a large double canoe, accompanied by Otoo's younger brother, now prince of Tiaraboo. They would not come on board, but expressed a wish for a great gun to be fired; and, to gratify them, two were cast loose: Manne Manne took the match, and though almost blind at his age, he boldly fired them off; with which ad of his own courage he was highly transported. Their stay was short; for after they had paddled twice or thrice round the ship, they returned to the shore.

About four in the afternoon Pomarre and his wife Iddeah, having just arrived from Tiaraboo, paid their first visit at the ship; besides his usual attendants a number of others had put themselves in his train. When alongside he refused to come farther till the captain showed himself; this being done, he immediately ascended the side, and coming on to the quarter-deck, wrapped four pieces of cloth round the captain as his own present; then taking that off, repeated the operation with the like quantity in the name of Iddeah. While he was doing this, I thought joy evident in his countenance, and was glad to see in him a picture of good-nature very different from the morose figure which represents him in some editions of Cook's voyages; and could not help thinking that his presence, which we now enjoyed, would afford pleasure to thousands in refined Europe, who have heard so much of the hospitality and favour this prince of savages has always shown to his visitors.

The first ceremonies over, he told the captain that he would send provisions and whatever we had occasion for while we stayed at Otaheite. When seated in the cabin, he expressed his regard for the English, and called King George his friend. On this the interpreter was desired to inform him, that King George loved him, and that the cares of Pétane did the same; and that out of regard for him and his people, they had sent this ship with some of the best men, purposely to do them good; and then desired to know, whether he was pleased that part of our number should reside on his island. He immediately answered in the affirmative. A piece of land for their use was next mentioned to him; to which, after a few words with his privy councilor Iddeah, he answered, that the whole district of Matava should be given to the English, to do with it what they pleased; observing, that Pyteah, the present chief of the district, was a good old man; that it would be for the benefit of our people to permit him to hold his residence near to their dwelling-house; and that he, according to orders which should be given him, would enforce obedience from the natives, and oblige them to bring whatever the English wanted of the produce of the district.

These most important matters to us being settled, as far as they could be for the present, the chief thought it time to inquire after entertainments; and first foly-rockets, next the violin and dancing, and lastly the bagpipe, which he humorously described by putting a bundle of cloth under his arm, and twining his body like a Highland piper. When we told them that we had none of these, they seemed rather dejected; therefore, to revive them, a few times were played
first mission voyage

74

upon the German flute by Mr. Bowell and one of the seamen, though it plainly appeared that more lively music would have pleased them better.

Pomarré intimating a wish to sleep on board, it was granted; he then asked leave for his wife and servant, which was also complied with. It may be proper to remark here, that Iddeah, though still considered as the wife of Pomarré, has not for a considerable time cohabited with him, but with one of her faithful (or servants), by whom she has had one child, and is again pregnant; her younger sister, Why'reede, next cohabited with the chief, but left him through dislike for one of far inferior rank; and his present wife is a very stout young woman, but of what condition we could not learn. However, it is evidently clear, that they hesitate little about mixing with the lower orders of the people; but if such should be the consequence of these connexions, it is rarely the pride of rank suffers the poor infants to live an hour after they are born. At supper the chief devoured a whole fowl, with the addition of about two pounds of pork, and drank proportionally.

At the house all was peace and quietness with the natives, and nothing particular is noticed in the missionary journal, except a few expressions of dissatisfaction concerning their brethren leaving them to go to the Friendly Islands.

To-day received as presents twenty-two live hogs, and five ready dressed.

14th. This morning Mānā Manne and several others came on board, all behaving respectfully to Pomarré. The captain, in order to cultivate his friendship, made him a present of an excellent single-cased metal watch, with which he was very much pleased; observing, that none before ever made him a present of the kind. As we knew him quite ignorant how to manage a watch, Peter (the Swede) was directed to wind it up for him every day. Thermometer 76°. Pomarré and his attendants were with us at family worship; after which the president informed him of the nature of our mission, to teach them our God and Saviour; to learn them to read the speaking book of wisdom, and to instruct them in all useful arts; which he applauded, as he had already done at the
He came not near the ship to-day, but returned his watch very much damaged, which we suppose to be the reason why he absented himself: no doubt a hatchet would now have been esteemed a present of greater worth, though the glitter of a watch pleased him more at first.

By another letter from the president it appears that the brethren are still more afraid of the natives than before; and this in consequence of being told by the Swedes that an attack upon them is intended shortly to be made: they therefore request an addition of arms and ammunition, and further urge the apparent necessity of the whole body remaining at Otaheite. The captain wrote a few lines in answer, which brought Mr. Jefferson on board; when, in a conference with the brethren intended for the Friendly Ises and Marquesas, he laid before them the grounds of their fears, and requested they would join them. To this they said that they could not give a direct reply, but desired to have till the following day to consider the matter. This seems a mere bugbear and artifice of the Swedes.

16th. The brethren on board having debated the subject of yesterday, and concluding the above-mentioned fears groundless, and by no means causa sufficient for them to confine the whole effort of the society to one island, and thereby disappoint the hopes of many of its valuable members at home; they therefore returned their ultimate answer in the negative.

This being the day appointed by Pomarre for ceasing in form the district of Matavai to the English, the captain landed upon Point Venus; was there received by the chief, and conducted near to the missionary house. Most of the brethren from the ship, and all on shore, were present at this ceremony. Peter the Swede took, as usual, the office of interpreter. "The scene," says Mr. Bowell, "was laid before the door of the missionary house, at some distance from which a rope was stretched to keep off the crowd. Pomarre,
the business ended; Pomarre, Otoo, and the other chiefs, shaking hands with the captain and brethren. Thus a door seems opening for the gospel at Ulietea, whither some of the brethren purport to go as soon as they have the language.

17th. Wind easterly, with moderate and pleasant weather. Set up our rigging, and rafted along side fifteen butts of water, which completed our stock; and as we proposed to sail in a day or two, several articles were sent on shore to enable the brethren to go on with their work, with a quantity of nails, &c. for trade during our absence; also tea, cheese, and what else we could spare of that nature.

None of the chiefs came near us to-day, and but few canoes. The young king and Pomarre paid a visit at the house, when Mr. Jefferson took occasion to speak to him concerning the education of his children; representing it as a matter of the greatest importance both to them and the people of Otaheite, and that he would be highly blamable to neglect the opportunity which their coming afforded. The chief's mind seemed impressed with the truth of what was said, and he immediately spoke to Otoo, who returned a very unfavourable answer: "He did not want to learn English." "I have a very bad opinion of Otoo," says Mr. Jefferson. And certainly appearances are much against him; however, we may reasonably hope, that the example of our people, and the exhibition of arts which must appear wonderful in their eyes, may in time excite in his mind a thirst after knowledge. They expressed great delight on the garden engine playing, and casting water on the thatch of the house. Thermometer 76°.

18th. Wind from N. E. to E. S. E., moderate and pleasant weather; employed clearing the ship for sea. In the afternoon Pomarre and Idddeah came on board, accompanied by Mâne Manne, and Peter to interpret. A present of cloth was made the captain, and by a large chief which they had brought with them in the canoe, we could see what they expected; but feigning not to understand, as they handed it up the side, the captain inquired of the chief what he meant to do with it. He seemed greatly perplexed how to answer this question, till at last he said, that he only wanted the lock repaired. He was then directed to take it on shore to the blacksmith; but this embarrassed him more than before; and feigning no other way to free himself, he said with a smile, that it was intended to hold the present which the captain might be pleased to make to him and Idddeah; and requested that it should be put into the cabin, to prevent his people from seeing what he received. When seated below, he was asked what he would like to have; but seeming at a loss what to name, the old priest, whose wits are always ready, helped him out: and first axes ahowroo, ahowroo, that is, twice ten, or ten for himself and ten for Idddeah; then for each five shirts, eight looking- glases, six pair of scissors, six knives, fifty nails, and five combs besides these, were added to his part, one cast-iron pot, one razor, and a blanket. The whole was put into the chest, and secured by the lock, which was very good. He then acknowledged himself content; but going afterwards between decks, where the brethren had several things lying loose, he craved for something of all that he saw; but as they knew how well he had fared in the cabin, they gratified him with very little. I have been thus particular, because the incidents of this day do, in a measure, characterize the chief.

The brethren intended for the Friendly Isles, considering that none of the ordained ministers were to accompany them, chose from their number Mr. Seth Kelso to be their pastor, and urged to those on shore the propriety of ordaining him and John Harris previous to their departure. This they very readily consented to, and the next day, being Sunday, was appointed for that purpose. Thermometer 76°.

19th. The same orders being issued as for last sabbath, but two or three canoes were off in the bay, and feing that we took no notice of them, they soon returned to the shore. To-day, at the missionary house, were ordained Seth Kelso and John Harris, ministers to the places of their respective destination.
The transactions of this day being singular, a more full report cannot but give satisfaction, and tend to encourage greatly our hopes as to the ultimate object of our mission.

It having been made known that we intended to address the natives this morning, numbers of them assembled early round our dwelling; among them was Pomäre and his sister; he had been inquiring a day or two before concerning our speaking to them, and said, "he had been dreaming about the book which should be sent "him from the Eastoa."

At ten o'clock we called the natives together under the cover of some shady trees near our house; and a long form being placed, Pomäre was requested to seat himself on it with the brethren, the rest of the natives standing or sitting in a circle round us. Mr. Cover then addressed them from the words of St. John, "God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that they who believe "on him should not perish, but have everlasting life;" the Swede interpreting sentence by sentence as he spoke. The Otaheiteans were silent and solemnly attentive. After service Pomäre took brother Cover by the hand, and pronounced the word of approbation, "My "ty, my ty." Being asked, "If he had understood what was "said?" he replied, "There were no such things before in Ota- "heite; and they were not to be learned at once, but that he "would wait the coming of (the Eastoa) God." Desiring to know if he might be permitted to attend again, he was told, yes; being conducted into the house, he and his wife dined with us, and departed.

About three o'clock the ordination solemnity of the brethren Kello and Harris took place; they were set apart for their work by the imposition of hands of our ordained brethren. Brother Cover preached the ordination sermon, and delivered the charge; brother Jefferson having made the inquiry of the candidates respecting their call and objects, and brothers Lewis and Eyre prayed at the com-

March.] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS. 81

memorandum and end of the service. The communion closed the solemnity, which was to us all a most refreshing and comfortable ordinance; and for the first time the bread-fruit of Otaheite was used as the symbol of the broken body of our Lord, and received in commemoration of his dying love.

Manne Manne was present during the whole service, and very attentive, particularly during the administration of the Lord's supper; he placed himself in the circle with the brethren, and when they passed him he shifted his situation farther on, in hopes of partaking with them.

20th. Pomäre, Iddah, and all our Saturday's guests, visited us again today, bringing more cloth and some fowls for the stock. They sat down; the chief, fed by his head man, ate heartily, and drank a large share of a bottle of wine, evincing rather a covetous desire for it, as he would hardly allow Manne Manne to have a glass with him. On the appearance of rain they took their leave, wishing us a good voyage, and expressing a hope of our speedy return.

As Peter the Swede had offered to go with us to the Friendly Islands, the captain consented, thinking that he might be serviceable on some occasions as interpreter. He purposed taking with him a young woman named Tanno Mann, with whom he had for some time lived as his wife, a man the mutineers had named Tom, and a boy called Hāraway. The two last Mr. Crook, who had already made great proficiency in the Otaheitean language, thought might be great helps to him. On this account the captain permitted them to go with us also. The natives understood we were now about to leave them for some months, but the captain's intention was to lie a few days at Eimeo, and, previous to setting off for the Marqueñas, to touch again in Matavai bay, when we might probably learn how the natives were likely to behave during our absence. Matters being thus settled, we took with us Mr. William Puckey, by trade a carpenter, to examine Manne Manne's vessel, and see whether she was worthy their assistance to finish her. After dark
in the evening a canoe came alongside from Eimeo; in her was a Swede named John, whom we had not seen before; him his countrymen reported to be in a state of insanity, and by his discourse we thought him a little so. On his part, he complained much of the treatment which he had received from his shipmates since they landed; and expressed a desire to return to Europe. The captain, in answer, told him, that at present he could not keep him on board; that he was on the point of failing, and would in a few months return; in the mean while he might stay at the mission house, and if he behaved well he should have a passage with us; he is a native of Stockholm, about forty years old, and seems much reduced by sickness.

On Mr. Puckey's coming on board, some conversation passed on the propriety of the brethren's arming themselves on shore, and keeping watch night and day; which those on board disapproved. He replied to them very satisfactorily, that their intention in taking arms was not to injure the natives, much less to plant the gospel by human power; but merely as a means ordained of God for the protection of their persons and property during the absence of the ship.

ABOUT an hour before daylight we weighed, with a light air from the S. E. which taking us but slowly out of the bay, the natives, perceiving the sails set, hurried off in their canoes, eager to get a few articles more before we departed. At seven A. M. a fresh gale springing up from the N. E. attended with thunder and lightning, we left them, and by ten o'clock were off the north-east part of Eimeo, when it again fell little wind. We kept running along the edge of the coral reefs towards Taloa harbour, and, at the distance of half a cable's length off, had irregular soundings, viz. six, eight, twelve, and fourteen fathoms. The reef appeared to block up the harbour till we were nearly abreast of it, when a good entrance shews itself. With a light breeze we run close up to the south-east corner of the harbour, and let go our anchor in ten fathoms water, and moored with the stream cable to a remarkably large tree which stands close to the water's edge; the Steeple cliff at the head of the harbour, bearing S. by E.

Taloa harbour is on the north side of the island; the bottom so clear, that you distinctly see the coral, with its beautiful branches. The mouth of the harbour is about a quarter of a mile broad; the water of an amazing depth; this led into a most delightful bay, about two miles wide and three deep. This bay is beautifully surrounded with trees; not the least agitation of the water is perceptible on the beach, let the wind blow from what quarter it may, it is so perfectly land-locked. We lay under a mountain ten times as high as our topgallant-mast, and perpendicular. There is a fine fresh-water river running up some
miles, which a boat can ascend a mile or two, and ships water with
the greatest ease. It is the securest harbour I ever saw. It has a
border of low land, like Otaheite, covered with bread-fruit, coco-
nut, and other trees; and many of a different kind in the mountains,
some very like lignum vitae; one small island is wholly covered
with this wood. Being in quest of a tree of hard wood, we found one,
but the axe would not stand against it, and we were obliged
to use the hand-saw.

Here I first saw a tipapow: the Reih was quite gone; the fkin,
like parchment stretched over the bones, remained: the natives feemed
averse to our examining it. Two posts about six feet long are let into
the ground at each end; on these a broad plank is laid, and the corpse
is there extended, wrapped in cloth, to dry, and a small shed, like a
boat inverted, placed over it to keep out the rain.

After dinner, the captain, Mr. Falconer, Wm. Puckey, and Peter,
set off in the pinnace to the place where Manne Manne’s vessel was
building, and on their return gave but an unfavourable account of
her. In length she was forty-two feet, but disproportioned in her
breadth, by being fuller aft than forward, and the timbers were
too small for her size. In this excursion the captain shot a wild duck
and two small birds, and Mr. Falconer caught with the seine about a
dozen fish. All the afternoon the ship was surrounded by the natives,
among whom were several women, who expressed, by their loose ges-
tures, a great desire to be taken on board, but had the mortification
to meet with no encouragement. Several articles were offered to barter,
but no hogs, owing to the rahoo (or prohibition) being in force at
this time. This rahoo is also frequently laid upon the fish; at which time poles with
a flag at top are stuck upon the reefs, where they are not suffered to be
taken. It is not improbable that this custom might have its origin
coeval with the first peopling of the islands, or at least when they
possessed few animals, and have been introduced from motives
of economy. However this may have been, it is now become
sometimes an act of injustice and tyranny in the chiefs, whose
impolitic proceedings are extremely destructive to the general welfare.

But of this there will be occasion to speak more particularly, when
their several customs are noticed. At present we felt no inconvenience
from this law, our decks being already crowded with the hogs we
had brought from Matavai; however, had we stood in need, there
were none to be got, for in the absence of Idaeah and Manné Manne
no chief was here of sufficient authority to repeal it.

23d. Light airs of wind and pleasant weather, with a few flying
showers of rain. The crew employed painting the ship, making
a new mizen, and putting the rigging in order.

An affair happened this morning, of which the brethren made some
account: eight of them, by permission of the captain, took the jolly-
boat to a fresh-water creek at the head of the harbour, with the intent
to wash their linen, but returned in a short time, under a persuasion
that the natives meant to rob them of their bundles, and to do them
further mischief. “We put off,” says Mr. Bowell, “from the
ship, but took no arms with us; a double canoe, full of men,
also two single ones, followed us; and when the boat entered
the creek, multitudes of people were seen running along the shore,
some with white sticks in their hands: others, with clappers of
pearl oyster-shells, were feemingly convening more of their coun-
trymen together; and when we landed they were crowding from
all quarters, but still behaved peaceably; and those who held spears
threw us in what manner they used them. Their numbers in-
creasing, we thought it most prudent to keep our bundles far,
8.6

FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE [1797.]

and return to the ship; as the quantity of linen we had brought was perhaps a temptation too great for them to resist. This resolution we immediately put in practice; and we were allowed to return without molestation.

Soon after they got on board, a meeting of all the brethren was held in the cabin, to debate on the propriety of taking fire-arms on shore with them at Tongataboo. Brother Kelfo opened the meeting in the usual manner; after which the captain, as president, informed them of the reasons of being convened; and, after a long conversation upon the subject, there appeared, on a division—for taking muskets to defend their persons and property, brothers Harper, Kelfo, Nobs, Shelly, Veedon, and Wilkison—again it, Bowel, Buchanan, and Cooper. Before the meeting broke up there were some remonstrances addressed to Mr. Harris and Crook, concerning their going to the Marquesas in so small a number; to which they answered, That having long since made that place their choice, they were full in the mind, nor did they entertain a doubt of meeting with a favourable reception; and on this account they did not think it necessary for the ship to revisit them, but would rather, if the proposal met with the captain's approbation, that the ship should first go to the Friendly Islands, and then proceeding to the Marquesas, a vast expense of time would be saved, and the captain be enabled to stay a month or more to see them safely settled.—This proposal was approved and adopted as our future plan.

About thirty canoes, filled with men and women, kept paddling around us all the day; a greater number, who had no canoes, but only a log of wood, and some nothing, diverted themselves in the water several hours together, and if a small trinket was thrown in, they would dive some fathoms after it, and were in general sure to bring it up.

The night was very dark, and about eleven o'clock the watch saw a naked native standing in the main chains; and attempting to seize him, he leaped into the water, and made his escape, taking with him four yards of our electric chain.

23d. Sent the boat to the creek for a turn of water, but when it came we could not drink it, by reason of a bitterness, imbibed probably from the trees and shrubs on its banks; however, on the west side, and not far from the head of the harbour, an excellent spring of water was found. The natives surrounded us as yesterday, but with little to barter.

24th. Fine pleasant weather. Many natives from different parts of the island were to-day viewing the ship with apparent admiration; and perhaps, it is no erroneous opinion to suppose that there never was a ship in those parts so ornamented with figures to attract their attention. None appeared with arms, but all roguishly inclined, on which account we would not suffer one of them to come upon our decks; but, notwithstanding our precautions, they found means to steal the rudder out of the jolly-boat lying alongside. While we were at dinner in the cabin a canoe came close under the stern, and a tall fellow, getting up upon the back of the rudder, reached his hand up, and snatched away a book which lay just within the cabin windows; he then immediately fell back, and made a plunge in the water. This we heard, and starting up, insisted upon their putting the canoe alongside, but this they refused to do, and began to set off towards the shore, as did all the rest that were near us. Thinking this action too daring to be overlooked, and clemency, so often extended, only an excitement to greater depredations, a few small shots were fired, which made them take to the water, and skulk behind the canoe. Two of the seamen in our jolly-boat tried in vain to catch the offender, for he, with the dexterity of a wild duck in the water, eluded all their attempts to lay hold of him; and it was only with the help of the pinnace, and frightening him with a musket, that we caught him at last. When alongside, he trembled through fear of being put to death, and struggled hard to get into
the water again, but making a rope fast round his body, he was hoisted on board, and lashed up to the rigging, in sight of his countrymen, who stood ranged along the beach in expectation of seeing him punished. As Peter was on shore at this time, the delinquent was kept bound till he returned on board, and the natives, observing nothing was done to him, came around us as before. When Peter arrived, he was desired to tell the man in what light we considered his offence, and that if he or any other person was found doing the like again, they would certainly be severely punished; and that the reason why we let him go at this time was merely because we had not warned him of the consequence before. To this he said, he would not do so again, and took his leave with joy in his countenance.

The bad conduct of the captain's steward had been often noted; though the missionaries were reluctant to complain. This had at last exhausted the patience of the captain, who turned him out of the cabin before the mast. This evening, going on shore with others to bathe, he secreted himself, having contrived to get some of his things on shore unknown to any but the Swede. This caused us much sorrow of mind, as he had made, on coming on board, a profession of godliness, though his conduct had very little adorned it. We feared that this man, thus leaving the ship and indulging in all the abominable practices of the heathen, would prove a great reproach and plague to us; and so we afterwards found it to be.

Having now finished the painting of the ship, and put her otherwise in good order, the stream cable was ordered to be cast off from the tree on shore, and all things to be in readiness for proceeding to sea with the land breeze in the morning. Orders were given also that a good look-out should be kept during this night, as we had some reason to apprehend that we should be visited by thieves in the dark; therefore two muskets were placed in readiness. As we expected, so it proved; for about one o'clock in the morning, when it was very dark, a man was heard swimming under the ship's bows, close to the cable, and perhaps with an intent to cut it, a musket was fired, which set him off with great precipitation towards the shore.

25th. At six A.M. with a light air at S.S.E. we weighed and stood out of Taloa harbour, which as we cleared we found the wind more to the eastward. Several of the natives in their canoes followed us quite out to sea, expressing a greater desire to trade with us than they had done all the time we lay among them.

Concerning the people of this island we learnt but little, not caring to trust ourselves in small parties on shore, for fear they should retaliate on us the vengeance which Captain Cook inflicted upon them for stealing his goats. However, we observed in those who came alongside, that they had not attained to that frank amiable behaviour towards strangers, that the Otaheiteans have in general; neither were they so skilful in bartering; and in every point of civilization seemed far behind that people: which difference I cannot otherwise account for, than by supposing them less visited by strangers from Ulitea and the other islands than Otaheite is. For it is certain that the vast number of arrivals which resort to the latter place do not only, by virtue of their privileges, oblige to the exercise of hospitality, the parent of many social qualities, but by their addresses, knowledge of the islands, and various talents to please, they contribute to inform the minds and soften the manners of those they visit. In their persons they differ nothing from the Otaheiteans, except it be in a Jewish cast of countenance, which is here more general, and a greater proportion of their women are of a low stature, but equal in the symmetry of features.

We saw but few canoes, and those were very indifferent ones both in size and goodliness, nor were there any signs of their being possessed of many.

As for the island itself, it seems to have suffered great convulsions either from earthquakes or other violent causes. Most of the hills

Maren.] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS. 89
are high, pointed at their tops, with broken rugged sides, particularly about Tāloa harbour, from the entrance of which they have a very striking appearance. The low grounds are covered with coconut, bread-fruit, and other trees, all growing luxuriantly, and without care or culture. They have also all the roots, &c. in common with the other islands. And here the cows are that Captain Cook left with them, but they are little attended to, as it is said that they are wild, and that none of the natives dare approach them: there is no bull. We did intend to have landed in pursuit of the cows, and to have taken them to Matavai; but as all the chiefs were absent, it was thought prudent to relinquish the plan for fear of mischief from the natives.

Towards evening we saw Tethuroa, low land, about twenty-four miles from Otaheite. It consists of six or seven islets very near each other, not many feet above the level of the sea, covered with coconuts; but no bread-fruit, which they are not allowed to cultivate. It belongs to the king, but Mānä Manne claims it. The natives, about three thousand, are employed in fishing for the chiefs at Otaheite, and bring back bread-fruit and other things in exchange.

26th. About four in the afternoon we tacked the ship close in with One Tree hill, hove in our colours, and fired a gun; upon hearing of which, Messrs. Cook, Lewis, Henry, Gilham, and others came off hastily in the canoes, improvingently came away without the paddles; several canoes being near, they borrowed two, and some loose boards were in the canoe with them; with these they tried to pull her ahead in vain, the wind blowing from that point to which they wanted to go. The cross piece of the canoe, it being a double one, gave way, the lashing being nearly cut through; so they fastened a rope round the bottom, and secured it. They were, however, obliged to bear away beyond One Tree hill, and travel home on foot, leaving the canoe and her cargo to the care of the natives, who were very faithful, and brought her back the next day.

Therefore we took leave of our friends, hoisted in the pinnace, and made sail for the Friendly Islands, after sending on shore materials for a flat-bottomed boat, to be built during our absence.

Nothing could have exceeded the kindness and attention of the natives; every day they attended our worship, and heard such addresses as we were able to make to them through an interpreter. This first experiment of the ship's absence had removed all the brethren's fears; and they saw us quit the harbour only with the tenderness of parting friends, who hoped again shortly to meet and rejoice together; with whom their missionary brethren good speed in the several places of their destination; yet not without many tears.

The wind being fresh to east, we filled our topsails, and left them far astern. The brethren, who had come off hastily in the canoe, Improvidently came away without the paddles; several canoes being near, they borrowed two, and some loose boards were in the canoe with them; with these they tried to pull her ahead in vain, the wind blowing from that point to which they wanted to go. The cross piece of the canoe, it being a double one, gave way, the lashing being nearly cut through; so they fastened a rope round the bottom, and secured it. They were, however, obliged to bear away beyond One Tree hill, and travel home on foot, leaving the canoe and her cargo to the care of the natives, who were very faithful, and brought her back the next day.
Division of the Missionaries.—Voyage to Tongatapu.—Occurrences there during the first Visit.

CHAPTER VIII.

We must now interrupt the account of the transactions at Otaheite, to follow our other brethren through the deep; on the ship's return they shall be recorded.

The day following our departure from Matavai we sailed to the southward of the Society Islands, in sight of Huahine, Ulietea, Otaha, and Bola bola; then, with a fine fair wind and pleasant weather, shaped our course for Palmerston's island, which we intended to visit, as it lay directly in our way. Accordingly, on the first of April, a little before day, we saw it bearing west, distant about two leagues; then running nearer, hailed out the pinnace and jolly-boat, and attempted landing on the southernmost island; but finding it impracticable there, we bore down to the next island, which is the southernmost, and found it almost as bad to land upon as that which we had left. A squall of wind and heavy rain coming on, we returned to the ship, for fear any accident should happen to the boats. About eight o'clock the weather cleared up, and we made a second attempt, finding that by reason of the tide of ebb the surf had fallen considerably; yet there appeared no place where we could land the boats with safety. Abundance of cocoa-nut trees covered the island, and to get at them was our object; therefore Otaheitean Tom, the third mate, and one of the seamen, taking with them the end of a line, leaped into the water and ventured into the surf, where, with great difficulty, they effected a footing on the coral rocks which compose the reef, after getting their legs, arms, and different parts of their bodies, much cut with the sharp points of the coral. They had still to walk near a quarter of a mile before they got to the dry beach, so that the small quantity of cocoa-nuts which they could have brought to the boat would not have been a recompense for the trouble of procuring them; but about half-ebb we observed a small opening or gutter in the reef, into which we rowed, and found it deep enough for the boats to pass clear over to the beach, where we could leap out dry, and lie within fifty yards of the trees. We now applied ourselves to the object in view, and soon sent both the boats off loaded with cocoa-nuts, keeping the two Otaheiteans on shore to climb the trees, a task which they performed with much more ease than we could. The water had now fallen so much, that on the return of the boats they were obliged to lie at the outer edge of the reef, in a small creek about ten yards wide and twenty long, and covered from the force of the sea by the rocks projecting on each side. They were again loaded with cocoa-nuts, and grafs for the use of the goats; and it now being late in the evening we returned on board, hoisted the boats in, and made sail, having got in the course of the day five hundred and thirty cocoa-nuts.

Palmerston's island was discovered by Captain Cook on his second voyage; it consists of a group of small islands, eight or nine in number, connected together by a reef of coral rocks, and lying in a direction nearly circular. The island we landed upon is not a mile in circuit, and at high water is not more than four or five feet above the level of the sea. The soil is coral sand, with an upper stratum of black mould produced from rotten vegetables. All the inner area of the island is covered with cocoa-nut trees, which decaying and falling successively form a thick underwood; without these, near to the beach, are the wharra tree, and others of various sorts. We saw vast numbers of men of war birds, tropic birds, and boobies. Among the trees there was plenty of red crabs, dragging after them a shell in form of a periwinkle, but larger, being in diameter about two or
three inches; when they run along the ground they only put their claws out, but when we touched them, they drew themselves wholly into their shell.

We also saw the beautiful submarine grotto described in Cook’s third voyage. “At one part of the reef which bounds the lake within, almost even with the surface, there is a large bed of coral, which affords a most enchanting prospect. Its base, which is fixed to the shore, extends so far that it cannot be seen, so that it appears to be suspended in the water. The sea was then unruffled, and the refulgence of the sun exposed the various sorts of coral in the most beautiful order; some parts luxuriantly branching into the water, others appearing in a vast variety of figures, and the whole heightened by tangles of the richest colours, glowing from a number of large clams intermixed everywhere. Even this delightful scene was greatly improved by the multitude of fishes that gently glided along, seemingly with the most perfect security; their colours were the most beautiful that can be imagined, blue, yellow, black, red, &c. far exceeding any thing that can be produced by art.” This is the description which they give of this grotto, and it is nothing exaggerated, for it is certainly a great and beautiful production of nature. We beheld it with pleasure, and with the regretted, that a work so astonishingly elegant should be concealed in a place so seldom explored by the human eye.

There are no traces of this island having ever been inhabited; a piece of a canoe lay upon the beach, probably the same as was seen by Cook’s people, and which they conjecture might have drifted from another island, but as there are rats upon the island, which both they and we saw, hence a query is suggested, how or by what means they could come to this place? They suppose it might be in the canoe, which is not at all likely, because they afford hardly a place of concealment for them; and if there were men in the canoe, it is very probable that they suffered much from hunger, therefore it would be absurd to think they would not search their canoe for every hidden morsel; or, finding a rat, to suppose they would spare it. It is doubletless more just to conclude they were drifted here on some hollow tree or root, which being before their place of shelter, and torn up by some tempest, might be cast upon this shore.

On Wednesday the fifth of April we saw Savage Island, but did not get near it before dark. In passing the north end we perceived three lights, and on the west side seven more; by their motion we supposed them to be on the water, and seemingly in canoes fishing. The natives of this island showed a ferocious and hostile disposition to Captain Cook and his people in 1774, when he discovered it; on which account he called it Savage Island. His account of them shews the danger of landing among any of those islanders who have not previously had intercourse with Europeans; also the absolute necessity, when obliged to land, of being able to repel them by force when attacked. We ought to lay it down as a truth, that neither in places already known, where the inhabitants have acted constantly in a hostile manner, nor yet in new islands which voyagers may discover, are the natives to be trusted with the power of their lives; for in general they are so tenacious of their territory and of their canoes, so covetous of all we possess, and under a persuasion that all strangers are enemies, that they will, either by force or cunning, aim at the lives of those who are so unhappy as to place any confidence in them, till some friendly intercourse has been established.

We now shaped our course for Tongataboo, and on our passage thither such articles were sorted out as it was thought the brethren might with some safety take with them on their first landing. On Sunday the 9th, at ten A.M. we saw the land; and at noon the island of Eoo bore S.W. distant seven or eight leagues. At half past four in the evening we tacked to the eastward, the small island of Eoo-zige bearing S.S.W. ½ W. distant three miles, and then hove to for the night, during which we had light winds and constant rain. At daylight, it continuing still dark and hazy, we could see no land until even A.M., when it ceased raining, and the weather gradually
clearing up, Eoo-iije bore W., and Eooa S. by W.; the wind also veered in our favour from W. N.W. to N. by W., and freshening to a brisk gale we stood in for the harbour of Tongataboo. The natives of Eooa had observed us the preceding day; for a canoe with four men, which must have put off from that island before daylight, was now paddling after the ship. This circumstance gave us some pleasure, as it both evinced their desire for our articles, and a confidence in us.

Paffing to the northward of Eoo-iije, we steer’d W. S. W. to the entrance, then W. by S. and W. up the harbour, followed by the above canoe and several others, which put off from the eastern part of the main island and the islets that lie scattered upon the reef. One of the large sailing kind, with about sixty persons upon her platform, kept close to windward of us, and proved herself the better sailer by running ahead with ease, then slackening their sheet and running astern, then running ahead again, and so on; the ship, at the same time, going six knots and a half by the log, topgallant-fails and staysails set. It appeared evident, that, had they chosen, they could have run at the rate of seven knots and a half or eight knots an hour.

In paffing into the harbour we kept the north reef on board, until we came to the narrow channel which bends to the N.W., which we got through after making two or three short tacks with the tide strong in our favour; then running a little way further, paffing Makahia we hailed to the southward, and anchored in nine fathoms, on a bottom of soft sand, about three quarters of a mile from the small island of Pangimodoo, and moored with a stream anchor and cable to the S.W. Once more, through a gracious Providence, safe anchored in the haven where we would be.

Our followers were now all eager to come on board; but though we were willing to grant them every prudent indulgence, yet they were too numerous to have free access: therefore about twenty only were admitted; and by placing sentries along each side of the deck, we succeeded in keeping the rest off, though very importunate to be on board. The commodities they offered for barter consisted of hogs, bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, yams, spears, clubs (which none were without), and various articles ingeniously manufactured; but their demands were so high that but little was purchased. Neither the Swedes nor Otaheites could understand what they said more than ourselves, which not only increased the difficulty of trading with such scrupulous dealers, but embarrassed us in no small degree to know how to settle the more important business of the missionaries.

After dinner, a chief named Futtnafahe was introduced to the captain, as a person of great power in Tongataboo; and indeed such he appeared: he was about forty years of age, stout and well proportioned, of an open, free countenance, noble demeanour, and a gait stately, or rather pompous, for by it alone we should have taken him for a very great man; and by the attention with which he surveyed every object, he appeared to possess an inquisitive mind. He talked a good deal in the cabin, but all we could collect from it was, that he was a great chief, and that some white men were on the island, and that he would bring them with him on the following day. After the captain had made him a present of an ax, a looking-glass, and some other articles, he took his leave; and was hardly
from the ship when two Europeans made their appearance; they came alongside without hesitation, and, leaping on board with alacrity, gave us the unfpeakable pleasure of hearing our own language spoken by them; a pleasure which proved at once our necessity of such instruments, and our great distance from home; for in their countenance, one of them especially, there was so much of the villain marked, that in England a well-disposed person would shun them as he would a swindler or a pickpocket. However, bad as they appeared to be, as they have to act a part in future, I shall insert their account of themselves. One of them, named Benjamin Ambler, says, that he was born in the parish of Shadwell, London; and that his parents now keep a public-house in Cannon Street. He is a bold, talkative, presuming fellow; seems to speak the language fluently, and says that he learnt it with great facility. John Connelly is a native of Cork in Ireland, by trade a cooper, and is far less talkative than his comrade. Ambler says that they left London in a ship called the Otter, in which they sailed to America; and there, for the sake of better wages, left her to go in an American vessel bound to the north-west coast on the fur trade. On their passage outwards they touched at the islands of St. Paul and Amsterdam, where they made some stay, catching seals; and proceeded thence to the Friendly Islands, in hopes of procuring refreshments; but having nothing but old iron hoops to barter, the natives would not part with their hogs. This induced these two, and four more, to leave the ship; for their salt provisions were so bad as to be scarcely eatable, and so scanty as forced them upon a short allowance; therefore, dreading their case might soon be worse, they requested the captain to discharge them. This he accordingly did, and they landed upon Annamöoka, where another American vessel called soon afterwards, and being in want of freemen, engaged three of their number. An Irishman named Morgan remained at Annamöoka, and they two had been about thirteen months at Tongataboo. They are both young men, not exceeding the age of thirty.

Ambler informed us that Futtafaihe was a great chief, and preëxted over all the eastern part of the island; but that there was an old man named Tibo Moomöoe, of greater power, and generally esteemed as king over the island: at present, they said, he was in a bad state of health, for which reason he could not gratify his desire to come on board the ship first came to anchor; but that he intended, if possible, to pay us a visit on the morrow, or day following. From their high praise of this old chief, we understood that humanity to his people, and hospitality to strangers, were predominant traits of his character. This pleasing account of the chief encouraged the captain to mention to Ambler the purpose of our visit, the talents and character of the missionaries, their intentions of service and good-will towards the natives, and to point out the certain benefits which the latter would receive, if our people were suffered to live unmolested among them; at the same time he requested their opinion of men settling at this place with such views. To this, he replied, that the natives would certainly receive them gladly and treat them with kindness; but respecting property, they could give no assurance of its safety. Connelly, who seemed to speak with the greatest candour, expressed the danger their lives would be in if encumbered with iron tools, they attempted to defend themselves from private robbers, which character might apply to every man on the island when such temptations lay in their way.

As for a house, they had no doubt but Tibo Moomöoe would give them one, and also protect their persons; but were of opinion, that if all the ten lived with one chief they would not be so well supplied with provision as if they were to separate to different parts of the island. This was nearly all that passed at this time, or indeed could, until Tibo Moomöoe was acquainted therewith; for which purpose they now left us, first promising to return in the morning with his answer.

While this was passing, a large double canoe approached, in which were several chiefs, who, either with a view of obliging us,
or to shew their own arbitrary power, began driving the canoes from the ship, forcing them to the shore as fast as they could paddle; some had part of their crews on board, and could not get so quickly away, which the chiefs observing, came at a great rate under the ship's stern where they lay, ran direct over one canoe, and, as we thought, would have hurt the people, but by their dexterity in diving and swimming they escaped safe: the others seemed quite indifferent to what they had done, and there being now nothing to obstruct them, nor any further sport, they came alongside: one of them, a remarkably stout man, we were informed was admiral, or rather the navigator of their fleets, when they go on expeditions to the other islands; another of note was Feenou, who we understood to be brother to him that was so attach'd to Captain Cook. Each of them received a present, and in a short time returned to the shore, when the canoes again surrounded us to trade, demanding for half a dozen cocoa-nuts what would purchase a hundred at Otaheite. On the approach of night they all left us very quietly.

In the evening the captain and missionaries held a meeting, where it was agreed, that, if a favourable answer was received from Moomoo, some of the brethren should land as soon as possible, to examine the place, view the natives in their habitations, and see how they were likely to behave to them; after which they could more easily determine what property it was safe to take at first, and also the propriety of taking arms.

During the night heavy rain and squalls of wind from the N.W. 11th. At daylight the large double canoe came alongside again, and in her several of the chiefs who had visited us on the preceding evening: these brought two hogs and a few yams, I suppose, in return for the present which they had received. They introduced themselves into the cabin without much ceremony, and sat quietly while we breakfasted: tea they refused to take, but some ate biscuit and butter with a seemingly good relish. About ten o'clock in the forenoon Ambler and Connelly came with a present of three hogs and some yams from Moomoo, informing us that himself intended to follow. Accordingly the venerable chief was very soon alongside, but was long before he durst venture up the ladder, fearing he had not strength sufficient for the task; he at last however made the trial, but was so exhausted thereby, that he was obliged to rest himself at the gangway; thence his attendants led him to the quarter-deck ladder, where he again sat down, saying that he would not go before the captain till he was shaved; and to please him in this, Mr. Harris began the operation, and finished it much to the satisfaction of this decent chief, who then saluted the captain, and entered the cabin, followed by twenty-two attendant chiefs and servants: these squatted themselves upon the floor, but the chief was placed in a chair, which he much admired, thought he sat easy in it, and, requesting it as a present, had it immediately given to him. He attentively surveyed the cabin and its furniture, expressing his admiration of all he saw, and asking a number of very pertinent questions: as, of what wood were the frames of the looking-glasses, supposing apparently the whole to be of a piece with the gilded outside: the same of the different coloured painted woods. Nor did they seem to admire the beauty of the whole more than the neatness of every part of the workmanship. They examined minutely the jointing of the chairs and of the mahogany table, and expressed no small degree of astonishment at finding themselves so far excelled; for they cherish an idea of being superior to all their neighbours. When told that the men we had brought to live among them could teach them those arts, and also better things, they seemed quite transported. This favourable opportunity the captain improved, by mentioning every circumstance that could raise in their minds an high idea of the missionaries; interrogating Moomoo as to his willingness for them to reside there, and also what provision he would make for them: to which he answered, that for the present they should have a house near his own, until one more suitable could be provided; they should also have a piece of land for their use; and he would take care that neither their property
persons should be molested; adding, that, if they pleased, they might go on shore and examine the house, when, if they did not like the situation, he would order it to be removed to any spot they preferred for this he could have done in a few hours.

For this purpose I was sent in the pinnace, with Ambler and four of the missionaries, and landed about four miles to the westward of where the ship lay. The natives, as the boat approached, crowded the shore, apparently to gratify their curiosity only, for they all behaved peaceably, and suffered us to pass along unmolested. From the beach we had to walk about half a mile, and when arrived at the place, we found it surrounded by a fence of reeds six feet high, enclosing three or four acres of ground; on which stood five houses, two large and three small: the largest, intended for the missionaries, was thirty-six feet long, twenty broad, roof fifteen feet high in the middle, and sloping to the sides till only four feet from the ground, resting upon wood pillars, and open all round: the floor was raised about a foot, and covered with thick clean matting. On the inside there hung to the cross beams an anchor, about six hundred weight: they had made a shift to cut the ring out with hatchets, and shared it among the chiefs. It was of English form, and probably the same Cook lost in 1774, though Ambler informed us they had it from Annamooka, where it was left by an American brig.

From this we passed to the other large house, which, we were told by Ambler, was sacred to the God of Priêane, and in this old Moomooe sleeps when indisposed, in hopes to obtain a cure. On the floor were four large conch-shells, with which they alarm the country in times of danger: and on the rafters were placed spears, clubs, bows and arrows, to receive from their imaginary deity supernatural virtue, to render them successful against their enemies. The whole of this enclosure, we understood, was what the natives call an abey, of which there are several; it being their manner of laying out their dwellings, and which is properly the freehold of the chiefs who occupy them.

For this object, another and greater was, that Moomooe, being an old man, might soon die; in which case, especially if they were esteemed useful, a dispute might arise among the chiefs about whose property they should be, or who should be their next protector; and were this to happen before they had attained a knowledge of the language, they would not only be in danger of being stript of their property, but also of losing their lives.

A third objection was, that the chiefs most usually residing at Ahêfo, a place at the west end of the island, and drawing after them the greater part of the inhabitants, would in a great measure frustrate their usefulness. Therefore it was only agreed to go to this house, if they could do no better; but first to send Ambler early in the morning to Feenou Töoghowe, to propose their residing with him; and, if he willingly embraced the offer, they would immediately land with such part of their property only as they considered it absolutely necessary to take.

While Moomooe and the crowd of chiefs were in the cabin, they regaled themselves with a bowl of kava, which, though a delicious treat to them, was so disgusting to us, that we could not possibly go to dinner till they had finished, when it was near four in the afternoon.

12th. By daybreak in the morning the canoes hurried off to the ship, endeavouring which should get nearest, to trade. Among our visitors of note the first was Futtufahi, who came early, bringing Connelly with him, to speak to the captain to place five of the missionaries with him. But for the reasons above mentioned, they would not consent to live on this part of the island, nor to separate, if possible, till they were better acquainted with the language and people.
promise to visit him when they were settled gave him but little satisfaction.

At nine o'clock Ambler came off with Tōgahowe, who had already agreed with the former to take all the brethren under his protection, also to give them a house, and the land attached to it, for their use. Tōgahowe, by Ambler's account, is the most powerful chief in the island; is the greatest warrior, and in consequence thereof is not only a terror to the chiefs of Tongataboo, but likewise to those of the adjacent islands, which he visited not long ago in a hostile way, and quickly brought them under subjection. We were further informed concerning him, that on the death of a certain chief, the widow of the former Poilaha, resenting in Eōoa, sent her servant to possess the lands which the deceased had occupied, and which now belonged by right to her; but before they arrived, Tōgahowe had seized the property, and refused to deliver it up. The widow, who had many adherents, proceeded to drive him off by force; but the attempt failed on her part, and gave Tōgahowe a pretext for seizing all her possessions, and driving her and her adherents from Tongataboo. Since that he has held his neighbours in a state of fear; infomuch that it is thought when Moomooe dies he will be formally chosen into his place of great chief, or king of the island. He is a stout man, and may be about forty years of age; is of a sullen, morose countenance; speaks very little, but, when angry, bellows forth with a voice like the roaring of a lion.

As he came near to the ship the natives readily made way for his canoe, and behaved with such great awe in his presence as tended to confirm the account we had heard, and led us to consider him as the most proper person under whose protection we might place the brethren. Ambler, as above mentioned, had already informed him of our design; but for the satisfaction of the missionaries, the captain, in their presence, with Ambler as interpreter, again recited every particular of our intentions, and what we required of them; observing, that our sole inducement to come so far was to do them good, on which account we did not think ourselves under the least obligation to them for permitting us to settle in their country, as was hinted the day before by Moomooe; but, on the contrary, if they were unwilling to receive our people on the conditions mentioned, or were not desirous of their stay, the captain's determination was, to depart in a friendly manner, without landing a man. Tōgahowe seemed to understand the greater part of what was said, and made answer, that, if they chose to land, they might live there as they pleased, and that nobody should hurt them; and in the afternoon he would send a double canoe to take their things on shore. However, though the chief comprehended what we deemed sufficient for our present purpose, it would be wrong to suppose, after all our pains to make it plain, that he could have a conception of the disinterested views of the missionaries, nor yet divest himself of the idea of conferring a favour, in receiving and afterwards maintaining them.

Ambler, with Tōgahowe, had not been long on board, when he informed us of a design, which, if ever put in execution, would probably have ended the voyage, if not our lives, at this place. The plot, he told us, was to attack the ship, and at that moment every man in eight large double canoes, and in many hundred single ones, were apprized of the intention, and prepared to join as soon as the attack commenced. This was alarming intelligence; and though we suspected it a forgery of Ambler's, yet it behoved us to credit it till we had by secret and expeditious means prepared to repel them. Accordingly, the small arms were laid in readiness, and the great guns cast loose and loaded with grape shot, and every man at his quarters. We then turned all the natives out of the ship, except Tōgahowe and his attendants, likewise ordered all the canoes from alongside; and they, observing an unusual stir upon the decks, and the guns levelled at them, obeyed rather hastily; drawing up in a range ahead and aterm of the ship, where they lay in that manner a considerable time, seemingly in expectation of our firing a salute to divert them, as former navigators might perhaps have done. Finding at last

April] TO THE SOUTH SEA ISLANDS.

not think ourselves under the least obligation to them for permitting us to settle in their country, as was hinted the day before by Moomooe; but, on the contrary, if they were unwilling to receive our people on the conditions mentioned, or were not desirous of their stay, the captain's determination was, to depart in a friendly manner, without landing a man. Tōgahowe seemed to understand the greater part of what was said, and made answer, that, if they chose to land, they might live there as they pleased, and that nobody should hurt them; and in the afternoon he would send a double canoe to take their things on shore. However, though the chief comprehended what we deemed sufficient for our present purpose, it would be wrong to suppose, after all our pains to make it plain, that he could have a conception of the disinterested views of the missionaries, nor yet divest himself of the idea of conferring a favour, in receiving and afterwards maintaining them.

Ambler, with Tōgahowe, had not been long on board, when he informed us of a design, which, if ever put in execution, would probably have ended the voyage, if not our lives, at this place. The plot, he told us, was to attack the ship, and at that moment every man in eight large double canoes, and in many hundred single ones, were apprized of the intention, and prepared to join as soon as the attack commenced. This was alarming intelligence; and though we suspected it a forgery of Ambler's, yet it behoved us to credit it till we had by secret and expeditious means prepared to repel them. Accordingly, the small arms were laid in readiness, and the great guns cast loose and loaded with grape shot, and every man at his quarters. We then turned all the natives out of the ship, except Tōgahowe and his attendants, likewise ordered all the canoes from alongside; and they, observing an unusual stir upon the decks, and the guns levelled at them, obeyed rather hastily; drawing up in a range ahead and aterm of the ship, where they lay in that manner a considerable time, seemingly in expectation of our firing a salute to divert them, as former navigators might perhaps have done. Finding at last
that this was not what we intended; they wanted to come alongside again; but only a few single ones were suffered to approach; nor would we ever after permit the double canoes alongside, nor to make their rope fast to the ship.

The truth of Ambler's information we could never learn. As for the canoes steering off so readily, and lying ahead and astern of the ship, as if no mischief had been intended, it is no proof of their innocence, for cunning and indifference is the savage manner of acting till they are openly detected. What offends them is often of so trifling a nature, that, passing without our notice, their revenge comes unexpectedly. It was said that Fénou, who came in the large double canoe when we first anchored, was at the head of this plot; and his reason for it, that he received nothing in return for a pig which he brought us yesterday, which pig the captain had considered as a compensation for what he received on his first visit; but Fénou, when we saw him, flatly disowned having ever thought of doing us the least mischief; however, it gave us no small satisfaction to see the canoes dispersed, for they could not contain less than three thousand men, each armed with a formidable club or spear; so that, had they made a rush upon our decks, where were only thirty undisciplined men to oppose them, they must have succeeded.

Just as this affair had subsided, Moomoo called alongside with a present of a few yams for the captain, requesting in return a glass of red wine; saying that what he drank the day before had been serviceable to him: a bottle was accordingly put into the canoe, and he immediately left us. We were all much prejudiced in favour of this old chief, and beheld with concern that he was leaving fail to that bourne from whence no traveller returns.

Futtafahe and Myrtyle, two great chiefs, came down between decks, joined with us in our devotions, and followed all our attitudes in the profoundest silence. They would fain have engaged us to go with them; but at Ambler's persuasion, and promise to learn us the language, we agreed to fix at his house.

In the afternoon the canoe came for the missionaries' things, and was immediately loaded; Bowell, Buchanan, Gaulton, Harper, Shelley, Veefon, and Wilkinfon, accompanied by B. Ambler, embarked in it, and proceeded westward to a place called Aheefo. A petty chief, named Commyby, was ordered by Tsogahewe to go with them and see that nothing was lost. Kello, Cooper, and Nobs, remained on board to prepare the rest of the things.

13th. This morning, finding the natives crowd about us as much as ever, and likely to be troublesome, the stream anchor was ordered on board. A passage out of this harbour by the north was a desirable object, either in case of a strong easterly wind, or an attack from the natives, when by cutting the cable an escape might be effected; therefore the captain intended to go in search of it; and accordingly we were under way by nine o'clock, and, with a fine breeze from the easterly and clear weather, steered over towards the small island of Paffaa, into six fathoms, broken ground; then sailed towards Attaa, sounding as we run along in twelve, thirteen, and fourteen fathoms, until within two miles of the latter island, where, seeing the canoe coming with some of the brethren in her, we anchored in twelve fathoms, broken ground.

About three o'clock in the afternoon the got alongside; three of the missionaries were on board of her: they said that Aheefo was farther from the ship than they at first understood it to be; and the landing with goods was very bad, by reason of a flat which runs from the beach about half a mile, and over which they were obliged to wade up to the knees; and after they got to the beach, had to go further than a mile to reach the house; difficulties which made the landing of their things so tedious, that six hours were fully employed in housing them safe: this great trouble was in some degree lessened by the natives. Their persons were not molested; and though it was dark, not a single article of their property was lost. It was near one in the morning before all was safe, and the house left to themselves. They then went to rest, resigning their persons and property into the
hands of their God; and told us, when they came next day, that they never slept in their lives. In the morning the natives provided a breakfast for them after the manner of the country. At nine o'clock they set off for the ship, and, having the wind unfavourable, were just six hours on their passage. Everything was in readiness; therefore the canoe was immediately dispatched, leaving on board sufficient for another lading. And that they might have whatever was thought necessary, Buchanan and Nobis stood on board to see that such things were got in readiness.

The cargo brought on shore was surrounded by a hundred persons, who alarmed brothers Harper and Kelso; but Mytyle ordered the chests into a house near, and dismissed the people, threatening if any man, during the night, approached to steal, he should be put to death. So we lay down on mats, in perfect security, till waked by Mytyle, at one o'clock in the morning, to partake of an entertainment, which he had provided, of fish, hot yams, cocoa-nuts, &c.

Before we weighed, in the morning a woman of rank paid us a visit; she was attended by many chiefs, and a vast number of females, who were all officious in their care of the old lady, whose amazing corpulence rendered her coming on board rather difficult. After her there came four stout females carrying a bundle of cloth, not quite so large but that two of them might have carried it with ease; this was presented in form to the captain, who gave her in return such things as fully satisfied her. The ship being under sail we could not be so attentive to this great personage, as, according to their ideas of ceremony, they might expect; however, any omission of ours they found means to dispense with, by regaling themselves in the cabin over the kava bowl for about two hours; when the was told that the ship had got a considerable distance from her house; on this they hailed into the canoe, and made sail for the shore.

The respect paid to this old lady, and to many of her sex in Tongataboo, distinguishes them from the servile condition to which females are subjected in other savage states or tribes. Here they possess the highest degrees of rank, and support it with a dignity and firmness equal to the men.

Puttafahe was on board most of the day, and was still very importunate to have some of the missionaries with him.

Towards the evening the weather became dark and unsettled, the wind also variable from the westward, which, though not desirable to us, was embraced by those who long for the night, that they may put their dark designs in execution. About midnight a canoe with four men was observed lying ahead of the ship, evidently for no good purpose, but, as we suspected, to cut the cable, that the ship might drive upon the coral reef, which at this time was only a short half mile behind us; however, as we had observed them in time, we determined to drive them off without firing shot, and for that purpose the gunner and his mates laid a quantity of cocoa-nut hulls upon the forecastle. Presently, under cover of a squall, they dropped under the bow; without making the least noise, they got into the water unseen, and hurt the cable, a volley of the hulks was poured on their heads, the sudden surprise of which caused them to leap into the water, some swimming one way, and some another, whilst the canoe, totally deserted, drifted aft; a musket was also fired over their heads, that they might know those instruments of terror were in readiness by night as well as by day.

As it was very dark, we soon lost sight of the men, but thinking the canoe would prove the circumstance to the chiefs, and lead to a discovery of the offenders, we therefore lowered the jolly-boat down, and picked her up. All the while it rained hard and blew fresh, and sometimes we could perceive the white surf breaking on the reef after; so that, had they succeeded in their design, which was doubtless to cut the cable, then the ship at least must have been lost in consequence of their inatiable desire for her lading.

14th. This disagreeable night was succeeded by a morning altogether mild and pleasant; and with a clear sky and gentle breeze weagain got under way in search of the northern passage.
IO FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

if there was a safe one: and as Captain Cook, on entering in 1777, struck on rocks, and describes the way they came as dangerous, we explored farther to the westward. The wind veering to the north, we had to ply, founding in ten, twelve, fourteen, and fifteen fathoms, broken ground; an officer at the maff-head looking out for shoals: on one spot which showed white we had only six fathoms. As we drew near to the outer reefs an eligible passage was observed, for which we steered, and went safe through, leaving only one of all the reefs extending from Attataa on our starboard side: this reef is of a triangular form, and bears from Faffaa N.W. ¼ N.; and when close to it on the inner side, the north end of Attataa bears W. 35° S. and Mallenōoah E. 9° S. by the compass; and thence through the channel the course is about W. N.W.

Considering our distance from the shore, we expected to have but few visitors: on the contrary, several canoes followed us quite without the reefs; but, on account of last night's adventure, none of them were admitted on board, except our constant friend Futta-faise, who presented the captain with a fine turtle: he expressed great disapprobation of his countrymen's behaviour; said he knew the men, but as they did not belong to the part of the island over which he presided, he could not punish them.

Being now without all the shoals, we steered towards the west end, to be nearer to the brethren, and at three in the afternoon the canoe came alongside; Shelley and Cooper were in her. They reported all was well; that themselves and those on shore were perfectly content with their situation, and had abundant reason to be thankful for the favour which they experienced from the natives. The canoe was completely loaded with the last of the things which they had laid together as sufficient for their purposes till our return; but they afterwards thought a few boards might be of service in building a house more suitable than that which they occupied; as the canoe could not take them, the captain agreed to wait till the next day; however, as they had saws of every kind, there was no absolute necessity for the boards; and the weather being uncertain, we took an affectionate leave of the brethren, promising, notwithstanding, to wait till the following day if possible, and for that purpose made short tacks without the reefs for most of the night. The wind N.N.W. a fresh gale.

15th. At four in the morning we reefed the topsails, and tacked to the N.E.; at six tacked again to the westward. By this time the wind had increased to a hard gale, which forced us to relinquish the design of staying longer; our situation had now become so critical, by the wind blowing direct upon the reefs, that our concern was how to clear the island best upon either tack; to effect this, we kept our stretch towards the westward of the island, and expected to go clear of all danger; but as we approached within three or four miles of the point, bearing then about three points of the compass upon our lee bow, we saw heavy breakers ahead. In this case, to bear up in hopes of a passage between the reefs and the point, was striking a disappointment which must inevitably prove fatal, as we should then have no offing to return; therefore we tacked, to try if we could weather the north-east reefs, but soon perceived this to be impossible. The gale had increased so much, that we could hardly carry double-reeded topsails, and we found the ship was driving fast towards the reefs; so that by the time we were abreast of Attataa, we saw plainly that, except we could fetch the passage we had found out the day before, nothing remained but shipwreck. Providentially we just weathered the reef on the west side of the channel by two or three ships lengths, and running through with assurance were soon once again in safety, thankful for so signal a deliverance.

We were now in the harbour, but having no sufficient reason to anchor in so hard a gale, which also blew fair for us to proceed to the south-east on our voyage, we steered for the easterly channel out of the harbour, and were once more alarmed with danger; for in running through the narrow passage between Moonafai and Makkalah, by not hauling to the easterly in time, we nearly ran upon
the rocks. This was occasioned by the flying clouds through which the sun broke at intervals, and formed very delusive appearances upon the water. The captain was aloft looking out, and thought he saw a shoal on the larboard bow; he called to port the helm, but the appearance vanishing, he ordered it abaft. That instant we found ourselves close to the lee reef, and running directly for it. The ship was still under the influence of the port helm, therefore we ran hard down that way, and in a few seconds she was close to the wind on the starboard tack, the reef scarce twenty yards to leeward of her, and about half a cable's length to run before we must have her in stays, and upon her not missing, her safety depended. The crew exerted themselves, got the mizen set, and we had the joy to see her come about on the other tack, check the current upon the lee bow, and soon afterwards clear of danger and in good sea.

Thus, after perils the most imminent, and providential deliverances the most evident, we were preserved in health for the accomplishment of the work appointed us to do, and had planted a seed of divine truth which, we hope, will take root and flourish to the latest generations.

CHAPTER X.

TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

Voyage to the Marquésas.—Discoveries made.—Transactions at Christina.

HAPPLY extricated from the dangers which surrounded us in Tongataboo harbour, and once more puffed into the open sea, for the first five days we had favourable winds, which shortened our distance about eight hundred miles; but afterwards, during most of the time that we were to the southward of the tropic, we experienced successive gales from the eastward, with high seas and raw cold weather. The highest latitude we stood into was 39° S., where we expected to find the winds prevail more westerly, but there was not the least appearance of it; only we had much worse weather, and the ship was suffering in her sails and rigging: therefore we tacked to the northward into a more genial climate, and kept about the latitude 30° S., embracing every opportunity to get to the eastward.

The cold weather affected our Otaheiteans very much; the boy Harris, however, kept up his spirits; Tanno Manco also behaved very well; she had got clear of her sea-sickness, and by conducting herself in a modest, affable, and obliging manner, was kindly treated by all on board; she was also of a good natural understanding, evidently susceptible of improvement, and always ready to communicate; and was of great service to Mr. Crook and others who were learning the language; for by her means many of the shibboleths of the Swedes' pronunciation were corrected, and better explanations given of the words. The captain gave her a warm week's dress, and a fine morning gown and petticoat, for the Sundays; and she always kept herself clean, when dressed she made a very decent.
114 FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE [1797]

appearance; taking more pains to cover her breasts, and even to keep her feet from being seen, than most of the ladies of England have of late done. Tom was under the greatest apprehensions, and was fully persuaded that he should die before he again reached Otaheite: in one of the gales he asked the captain if the ship would not die; indeed, during most of the passage he was very low-spirited, and suffered more than the others from the cold. We could teach him nothing, and could hardly persuade him to take any exercise; while Harraway became a very useful boy in the ship, could understand almost any thing that was said, and would run to do what he was desired with great readiness. Crook taught him the alphabet; also to read several short words in the Otaheitean language, of which he printed a few for the purpose. Thus much I have thought fit to mention concerning them, because I think both Harraway and Tanno Manoo are proofs that the Otaheiteans taken young, and kept from being held up as shows by us like Omai, and from the inculcating diversions of their own island are capable of receiving instruction. However, their two were rather too old; they had heard and believed the stories their countrymen are used to relate; and perhaps all reasoning whatever would be impossible to remove the prejudices inculcated by those stories, till the Spirit of God gives conviction to the conscience.

On the 19th of May the observed distance of the sun and moon gave the longitude 223° 5' E.; the chronometer at the same time 222° 40' E. On the 24th we discovered land; at eight A.M. the extremities of a low island bore from W. 23° S. to W. 32° S. distant about five leagues; and a high hummock, at a great distance, bore W. 3° S., and another higher W. 3° N. This being a new discovery, we tacked a little before noon, on purpose to take a nearer view. Latitude at noon 23° 8' S. long. 225° 40' E. There being scarcely any wind, we made our approach but slowly, so that night came on before we got near, therefore we shortened sail, and lay by till the morning.

MAY.] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS. 115

24th. At daylight we stood towards the land, and as we drew near found it very low and in form of a crescent, with a lagoon in the middle, into which the sea broke in several parts of the south-west side, though no opening appeared that would admit a boat. We perceived that it was inhabited; therefore, when within a mile of the north-eaft side, we hoisted the boat, and putting two men in the jolly-boat, Mr. Wm. Wilson and Mr. Falconer, with Peter and Otaheitean Tom, who dressed himself for the occasion in a piece of his own new cloth, rowed towards the shore, intending to land if the natives were friendly; and as a means of ingratiating ourselves into their favour, took beads, looking-glasses, and iron tools; also some English coin, to leave as a testimony of our visit. But on our approach they collected themselves in a body to oppose our landing. As they walked along the shore, the women followed with spears, the only weapons we saw; they shook in a threatening manner, and made signs for us to be gone. Tom stood up, showed them his skin, his cloth, and tattoo marks; and spoke to them in his language, which they seemed not to understand. Intent on their safety only, and the defence of the barren spot they inhabited, they acted as if we were known enemies, viewing us with little curiosity or astonishment. Finding that all our manoeuvres to conciliate them had no effect, and that even to approach sufficiently near to give them any thing would expose us to a spear or a floor, and perhaps oblige us to fire upon them, we returned to the ship, and hoisting the boat up, steered for the higher island, which bears from this W. N. W. about nine or ten leagues.

This was named Crescent island, on account of its form; it is fix or seven miles in circumference, and lies in lat. 23° 22' S. long. 225° 30' E.

There were many of the wharra trees upon it, and some others of a useful kind. The shore is grey coal sand and stones thrown up by the violence of the sea, forming a wall at the south-east point about twenty or thirty feet above the surface; on this point there were three
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE [1797.

piles of coral fl:ones; two were built round and fmall, and one fquare. the fides of which might be about twelve feet and fix in height, with a hole at one fide, feemingly to creep in at.

The natives whom we faw, were twenty-five in number, including three or four women carrying children at their backs; and they probably were all that are on the ifland. They are of a light copper colour and of middling stature; there is a fimilarity in the accent of their lan­guage to the other iflanders with whom we are acquainted, but the dancing of the sea against the fhore prevented Tom from hearing fo distinctly as to understand them.

Some were quite naked, except a piece of cloth round their middle; others had a large piece of cloth thrown over their fhoulders, and reaching half way down the leg; one, who perhaps was the chief, wore a piece of very white cloth round his head in form of a turban. We could not perceive they wore any ornaments.

Upon what they fubfifted it was difficult to imagine, for they neither have bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, or any fruit-trees whatever; nor could we, with the whole ifland in view, fee one canoe wherewith to fift. so that they muft either be tranfient vifitors from the high ifland, or if permanent fettlers, and in any degree fenfible of their fituation, muft be miferably wretched indeed.

It was noon when we left Crescent ifland, and soon after we had a frefh breeze northerly, attended with fqualls and rain, which lafted about an hour, then cleared up, and gradually declined to little wind; fo that for a while we made but little way. At three P.M. a gale sprang up at E.S.E. and it again became fazy with rain. We directed our course W.N.W. towards an ifland with two high hills that lie contiguous to each other, and are fo lofty as to be difcovered when diftant fourteen or fifteen leagues. These, for diftinction's fake, were named Duff's mountains.

When within three leagues, we faw a reef ahead, and the fea breaking very high upon it; this obliged us to alter our course to N.N.W. which we expected would lead us clear of every danger which lay on the caft fide of the ifland; but in this we were mis­taken; for after running thus about an hour we had a better view, and it appeared that Duff's mountains were part of an ifland about three leagues in length, with several of considerable height and extent to the fourth and fourth-eaft of it; the whole forming a group five or fix leagues long, lying in a direction nearly N.E. by N. and S.W. by S.; and a reef which lies off about three miles from the main ifland, and probably encircles the whole as a defensive barrier, extended as far each way as we could fee with the eye. Upon this reef were several dry spots, upon which clusters of trees grew, and appeared like fo many small low iflands without the higher ones. It was now the dusk of the evening, and we had one of thofe half-drowned spots ahead, bearing N.W. by N. and others in fight beyond it; and uncertain what dangers more might lie in our way, it was resolved to fpend the night within the fpace we already knew; and accordingly we hauled our wind to the N.E. under an fazy foul. The natives on the north end of the ifland had obferved our approach, and they, to alarm their countrymen, as foon as it was dark made a large fire, which at times prefented a very curious phenome­non, appearing like fix or feven detached lights, then prefently joining showed as if the fide of a mountain was wholly in a blaze. This light, which they kept burning till near daybreak, proved a real benefit to us as a guide; for the night was very dark, with variable winds and fqualls, and heavy rain.

At fix in the morning the north part of the iflands bore N.W. diftant two or three leagues; when, with a frefh gale from the N.E. we fteered W.N.W. clofe to the reefs; and from this fation obferved it to trend fouth about five miles, then to the S.W. farther than we could fee; thence we hauled towards the northermif part of the reef, where was a small iflet, upon which we affambled about fifty natives armed with fpears; and as we paffed the place where they ftood, within a quarter of a mile, we obferved boys taking fstones off the beacl, and making geftures as if they would throw
them at us: the men also shewing marks of a hostile disposition, walked along the shore to keep abreast of the ship, but as we left them flat they retired behind the trees. These trees seemed to be of the same worthless kind as those at Crescent island; the natives also, in colour, stature, and dress, exactly the same as those we saw there. We observed no canoes, though it is most probable they have some, as these people must have come from the high island either in a canoe or by wading, which latter seems impracticable. The main island, and those scattered about it, are, as before noticed, all high, and the reef keeping the sea quite still about them, they present a view romantic, wild, and barren: the valleys, however, appear covered with trees, but of what kind we could not perceive, though some said they could distinguish cocoa-nut trees; and it is certainly likely they should have the fruits and roots common to the other islands, and must have abundance of fish.

The tops of the hills, to about half-way down, are chiefly covered with sun-burnt grass; and in some places there are spots of reddish soil, as on the middle grounds of Otaheite.

The group was named Gambier’s islands, in compliment to the worthy admiral of that name, who, in his department, countenanced our equipment. Duff’s mountains, which lie in the centre, are in lat. 23° 12’ S. and in long. 22° 36’ E.

We had now got sufficient eaffing, and were in the way of the trade-winds, therefore kept on our course to the northward; all on board in good health, and in no real want of any thing. But as the passage from the Friendly Islands had already been longer than we expected, the captain thought it necessary to push on for the Marqueñas; and on this account, though we had reason to suppose ourselves in a dangerous part of the ocean, we ran by night as well as day; only put the ship under a proper sail for altering our course on any sudden emergency.

26th. At half past five in the morning, just as the day broke, we thought we saw low land ahead, and seeming to be very close, wore ship and flood from it about a quarter of an hour, then tacked towards it again, when the day prevented to our view the imminent danger we had escaped. For that part which we were running for, and many others, were even with the water’s edge, the sea washing over them into the lagoon; and it is very probable, that, had the weather been hazy, or the day not so near, we might have struck before we either saw the rocks or heard the sea beat upon them, as it made but little noise. The island is in length about seventeen miles from east to west, and in breadth about eight or nine miles; and upon the reef which encloses the lagoon, there are several clumps of trees, but no cocoa-nut or other fruit-trees that we could see, nor any sign of inhabitants. This island, lying in lat. 21° 36’ S. by observation, and in long. 22° 36’ E. by chronometer, is probably the same called Lord Hood’s island by Captain Edwards, who discovered it in the Pandora, 17th March 1791. We continued our course, and in two or three hours were out of sight of it. In the dusk of the evening of the following day we thought that we saw high land on our lee beam; but judging that to run down to put the matter out of dispute would be taking us too much to leeward, we left it for some future navigator to determine. However, if it really be an island, it must lie nearly in latitude 20° 30’ S. and about the longitude of 22° 18’ E.

28th. At noon we observed in latitude 18° 34’ S. and about three in the afternoon discovered another low island bearing N. E. As it is not ly’d down in any of the charts, and the wind at N.W. being against us, we kept our stretch towards it, and as we drew near found it a lagoon island, with patches of trees on different parts around it. On the north-west end cocoa-nuts were growing, and near them a clump of lofty dark-coloured trees. Two clumps also of the same kind stood at a little distance from each other on the south-east part; these last we named Turk’s Cap and Friar’s Hood.

At half past seven o’clock we tacked within a mile of the north end, then took the topgallant-sails in, hauled the courses up, and
during the night made short tacks under the topgallant. In the morning, the 29th, we found ourselves farther off than we expected, owing to the leewardly current; and the wind changing to N. N. E. with our larboard tacks aboard we stood in, and at eight o’clock had the south point of the island bearing E. § N. distant three miles. Shortly after it fell little wind, and we lowered the jolly-boat down, rowed close to the shore, and tried to effect a landing, but found it impracticable, on account of the high surf which beat upon the coral rocks. Supposing we might find a better place, we rowed along shore two or three miles, till we came to the south-east side, but had the mortification to find it everywhere the same, therefore we returned to the ship. Observed at noon in lat. 18° 24' S. the extremes of the island from N. 14° W. to N. 56° W. We had seen no signs of inhabitants, and having lost hopes of finding a landing-place, the captain had determined to leave this island and proceed on our voyage as fast as the unfavourable winds we then had would permit.

In the course of the night we had puffed to windward of the island, and at fix in the morning had the north-west end bearing S. W. by S. and the sea being then smooth encouraged a hope of procuring a few cocoa-nuts for our people, and herbage for the goats. Therefore we again shaped our course towards it; but, before we came near it by four miles, it fell almost calm; so that, as the ship went but slowly down, we hoisted the pinnae out, and I, with the third officer and a boat’s crew, with Peter and Tom, set off in her. When we had got about a mile round the point, all in the boat (except one man and myself, who were but indifferent swimmers) got into the water and effected a landing, though the surf was very high. From the edge of the reef they had to walk about a furlong, up to the knees in water, over a hard coral flat, before they came to the trees; and while they were gone, I shot three or four man of war birds, and tried to catch some of the beautiful fish which swam without the surf; but they were too shy of the bait. Sharks of various sizes were very numerous.

At noon they observed at the ship in 18° 14' S. the north-west end bearing S. S. W. by W. a mile and a half; and an hour after, in rounding the point not more than a cable’s length off shore, founded with ninety fathoms of line, but found no bottom.

We had already hauled off a few cocoa-nuts; but this method was so tedious, that all we could procure by it would not repay the trouble. But just about this time it was low water, and the surf fell remarkably, so that by putting the boat’s stern to the rocks I leaped out, without so much as wetting my feet. This both encouraged those on shore to go on, and being observed from the ship, induced them to send the jolly-boat with more hands to assist us. And now we were in hopes of getting a plentiful supply without difficulty or danger; ignorant that it was possible only at low water thus to pass and repass. This we were to learn afterwards by unpleasant experience.

The land at this end of the island is about three furlongs in breadth; upon it the only cocoa-nut trees grow, and upon that side next the lagoon, consequently the farthest off from us. The way to them, by passing through the other trees, is also very rough and bad; but by searching, we found a pleasant road along the side of a creek, leading from the sea into the lagoon, and sufficient in depth to admit the jolly-boat, when the tide was up. Therefore this was proposed as our plan: to get as many nuts as possible before four in the afternoon, and then bring the boat in for them. Accordingly, by that time we had got about three hundred; but, contrary to our expectations, as the tide rose the surf increased to so great a degree as to render it almost impossible either to get them or ourselves safely through it. However, to put it to the trial, the jolly-boat was brought abreast of the creek, and by watching an opportunity was rowed through the surf, but not without striking on the rocks, by which we knew there was no chance for the pinnae to get in. As there were thirteen of us on shore, the small boat was insufficient to carry off the whole. To make it still worse, we saw the wind was increasing, and the sky become overcast with dark clouds. Therefore, being
thus critically situated, it was adopted as the most prudent plan, for
those who could swim but little to make the first attempt in the jolly-
boat, and for the others to stay on shore all night, and so swim off to
the boats in the morning. Accordingly, four of our number were
pitched upon to make the effort, and they probably would have suc-
cceeded, had not two others, who thought themselves as bad swimmers
as any, jumped in, and thereby making the boat too deep, she
grounded on the rocks, where the sea broke, and filling her, it
was with difficulty they got back into smooth water. This failure
damped all our spirits, as we were very anxious to have some more
hands on board to work the ship, lest she should be blown to leeward,
and not be able to get up to us again. Thus urged by necessity, the
third officer, with two men, made a second attempt, and succeeded,
but not without being again half filled with water. When clear of
the surf, they rowed to the pinnace, and both returned to the ship,
to inform the captain of the disagreeable news of myself and nine
more, including the two Otaheiteans, being left on the island.

Our situation on shore was extremely uncomfortable and alarming;
however, to make the best of it, after seeing the boats safe off, we
walked up to the large clump of trees, and being thinly clothed and
quite wet, we endeavoured to make a fire; but after Otaheitean Tom
had tried two hours in vain for a light by friction, we were reduced
to the necessity of passing the night without a fire. About ten o'clock
it began to rain very hard, and continued till three in the morning,
when low water was fast approaching, and nothing now remained but
a chance of getting off at the place where I stepped on shore at the first.
Accordingly, we returned thither, but were greatly disheartened to find
it as bad as every other place: we resolved, however, to watch till the
time of low water was over, certain that if no opportunity offered
then, we must content ourselves where we were, and that perhaps
for months, as the ship was now driving fast to leeward. Low
water at last came, but the sea was still so rough that Otaheitean
Tom, Mr. Crook, and some more, walked up in despair towards
the clump of trees, to try if possible to procure some dry wood, with
which to get a light and a fire, which they found much in need of,
being wet and cold, the wind blowing through their thin clothing. But, to our great joy, they were scarcely gone, when the sea at intervals became smooth; one man got off to the stage, and was hauled to the boat. We instantly called them to us, and by embracing every opportunity, swimming to the stage one by one, we at length got all safe off. On trying to haul the grapnel up, we found it had fallen into the hollows of the coral rocks, which obliged us to cut the rope and leave it behind. These hollows add greatly to the danger of swimming off to the boats, for if the sea forces up or retires suddenly, there is a risk of falling into them and being hid under great flakes of the rock. The dread of this, and of drowning in the surf, banished from our thoughts the sharks which swam thick about the place. We now rowed towards the ship, which had drifted about four miles to leeward. The captain was overjoyed to see us, as were all the crew. The boat was hoisted in, and we made sail, fully determined never again to venture a landing upon one of those low half-done islands, except obliged thereto by want or other absolute necessity.

This received the name of Serle’s island, in compliment to a gentleman of that name now in the Transport office, and author of Horae Solitariae and other valuable works. The latitude of its centre is 18° 18' S. long. 223° E.; it is in length from S.E. to N.W. seven or eight miles, and in breadth four or five; it has a lagoon in the middle, where we observed several small rocks above water. The reef without and the lagoon within abound with fish, several of which were of the most richly varied and beautiful colours that can be conceived. As Mr. Robson walked by the side of the lagoon in the night, he observed thousands of young sharks swimming close to the shore. Mullet are very plentiful, and when low water left part of the reef dry, several spotted eels issued from holes, and on our approach reared upon their tails, attempting to defend themselves with open mouth. The birds were the same as at the other low islands; and besides there was here a bird about the size and colour of a lark, which we had not seen before; and during the night we heard one whistle like and equal to a blackbird: indeed, by their various notes, there was reason to suppose this place gave shelter to many different species, with this peculiar feature, that they sang almost all the night long, though it rained and was very dark. We saw some rats, plenty of the red (shell) crab, and a kind of land lobster, which even the Otaheiteans were strangers to.

The trees are various as at Palmerston’s island; but the cocoa-nuts are scarce here, and only found on the north-west end: those which form the clumps are peculiar; they grow about sixty feet high, with large trunks from four feet to four or five yards in circumference, dividing about half way up into large branches, with a broad dark green leaf. As the soil is very thin, many of these trees had fallen, their branches had taken root, and were again grown up to five or fix trees as large as the old one. The wood appeared to be of no use but to burn. Under shelter of this grove there was regularly built a mora of stones, with one stone at a little distance placed upright; we also found the remains of two or three huts, and a plain space, with only one circular cut near the end. At one place close by these were strewn on the ground vast quantities of clam shells. All which proved the island to have been once inhabited; but whether the persons had emigrated elsewhere, or become extinct, there was no remaining evidence whereon to form a conjecture, as the latter is as probable as the former; for it is likely they would be no more than the crew of one canoe, who, by the number of clam shells, must have subsisted here a considerable time, perhaps till their canoe was rendered fit to transport them to another island. It is likely also, that the cocoa-nut trees, as they grew so partially and so near the mora, were of their planting; and by the few of these which had fallen in the usual manner, we suppose it could not be more than fifty years since they were first planted.

One circumstance here is very striking, which is, that however small in number the wretched refugees might have been, a mora,
or place of worship, was thought by them indispensably necessary; it proves, that, however their ideas of supernatural beings are bewildered, they still universally hold the same tradition among them: and notwithstanding the inhabitants of different islands give their peculiar names to their guardian deity, the manner of worship being everywhere the same, proves the tradition originally to be from one source.

Concerning the formation of these low islands the opinions of men are various; but whether such a mass of matter grows like a shrub, or be the work of millions of animalcules, is what I must leave to the learned. It appears, however, that in their perfect state they come no nearer to the surface than where the sea breaks upon them. The part of this island that we were upon I suppose to have risen about two or three furlongs in breadth, and by the force of the sea against the outer edge the parts projecting were broken off; these, as the sea drove them towards the lagoon, would strike other parts and force them off; and a heavy storm coming on would, with irresistible violence, drive them up in a ridge at some distance from the sea-side, and near to the edge of the lagoon. This is evidently the case here.

The first ridge lies within one hundred yards of the lagoon, and about three furlongs from the edge of the reef next the sea. The second ridge runs within ten yards of the first, and the furrows between is about ten or twelve feet deep. The other ridges, of which there are many, are nearly about the same distance, and the furrows the same, differing only in proportion as we may suppose the storms to have done which threw them up: these being composed entirely of large coral stones, prove this to have been the cause; and the ridges lying lengthwise in a direction about north and south, demonstrate that no other than gales from the westward could have produced this effect on this side of the island; and it is known, that winds from that quarter, though not excessively strong, raise a more hollow and heavy swell than any other. At present, about a furlong from the outer edge of the reef, the stones, after running over a flat of
CHAPTER XI.  

Occurrences at the Marquesas.

When we had got within four miles of Resolution bay, we saw two men paddling towards us in a small, wretched canoe, which they kept above water by constant bailing. Not knowing their intention to come on board, nor receiving them of any use if there, we kept all sail set, and passed close by them with great velocity; this they observed; and being more anxious to come aboard than we imagined, one of them leaped into the water, caught a rope we hove to him, and expertly hauled himself hand over hand to the quarter-galley, where we took him quite naked. At first he looked round the cabin with surprise, but soon recovered himself and ran upon deck. He was tattooed from head to foot, in so much as nearly to hide his natural colour; he talked very fast, and was tolerably understood both by Crook and the Otaheiteans: the earnestness which he expressed was to induce us to tack and pick up his comrade, who he gave us to understand was his father; and that if we did not take him in, it would be impossible for him to reach the island in so wretched a canoe, as the wind blew strongly. However, to ease him of his fears, we took the father on board and the canoe, in tow, but the canoe went to pieces and drifted away, which seemed to give them little concern. The wind, as we drew near the land, became variable and squally, and as we were stretching towards St. Dominica, to avail ourselves of a favourable flaw, the captain gave orders to tack towards the bay. This both the natives opposed, and made signs, that by keeping on the same tack until we run far-
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

Our Otaheitean girl, who was tolerably fair, and had a comely person, was notwithstanding greatly eclipsed by these women, and, I believe, felt her inferiority in no small degree; however, she was superior in the amiableness of her manners, and possessed more of the softness and tender feeling of the sex; she was ashamed to see a woman upon the deck quite naked, and supplied her with a complete dress of new Otaheitean cloth, which set her off to great advantage, and encouraged those in the water, whose numbers were now greatly increased, to importune for admission; and out of pity to them, as we saw they would not return, we took them on board: but they were in a measure disappointed, for they could not all succeed so well as the first in getting clothed; nor did our mischievous goats even suffer them to keep their green leaves, but as they turned to avoid them they were attacked on each side alternately, and completely stripped naked.

The chief above noticed is named Tenae, eldest son of Honoo, the reigning prince in Captain Cook's time; he came in a tolerably good canoe, and introduced himself by presenting the captain with a smooth staff about eight feet long, to the head of which a few locks of human hair were neatly plaited; and besides this, he gave a few head and breast ornaments. Observing a musket on the quarter-deck, he took it with care to the captain, and begged him "to put it to sleep." He received an axe, a looking-glass, and neck-chains to hang it to, also a pair of scissors; the latter, an article much prized at the Friendly and Society isles, he was either indifferent about, or totally ignorant of its use. Two of his brothers, who were present, expressed not the least desire for any thing; they all seemed to have a thoughtful cast in their countenance, such as men acquire who are struggling for subsistence and can hardly get it, though they would frequently break out into wild fits of laughter, and talk as fast as their tongues could go, and this the women did as well as the men. It appeared that this was a very scarce time with them, for they kept complaining they were hungry and begging for victuals all the while they were on board; to some we gave a little, but they were too numerous for us to supply all; as for the women, they are in that state of subjection, that, if they got any thing and could not conceal it, the men took it from them. Towards evening those who had no canoes, and who were by far the greatest number, leaped all together into the water and swam on shore.

Our intention of settling two men among them being made known to the chief, he seemed highly delighted with the proposal, and said that he would give them a house and a share in all that himself had. After this he went on shore; I followed with Mr. Harris, Mr. Crook, Peter, and Otaheitean Tom. Tenae received us upon the beach, and conducting us a little way desired we would stop, as we thought, to gratify the natives, for they formed a ring around us, those nearest the centre fitting, to let those behind look over their heads: Tenae's sister not following the example of the rest, he reproved her, which brought tears from her eyes. This shew continued about a quarter of an hour. Afterwards we proceeded up the valley, accompanied by the chief, his brother, and many of the young natives. The road was very indifferent, by reason of tree roots that cross it, and large stones which lie in the way; and being all up hill, we were pretty well tired by the time we reached the chief's house, though we refreshed thrice, at which times they brought excellent water in cocoa-nut shells from a rivulet that runs down the valley. The bread-fruit and cocoa-nut trees, with a variety of other sorts, afforded a comfortable shade from the heat of the sun. Tenae conducted us to one of his best houses, intimating that it was for the use of the brethren, and that they might occupy it as soon as they pleased. To convey an idea of what this and all their best-built houses are like, it is only necessary to imagine one of our own of one story high with a high peaked roof; cut it lengthwise exactly down the middle, you would then have two of their houses, only built of different materials. That we now occupied was twenty-five feet long and six wide, ten
feet high in the back part, and but four in front; at the corners four stout stakes are driven into the earth, on which are laid horizontal pieces, and from these to the ground are bamboos neatly ranged in perpendicular order, about half an inch distant from each other; and without them long blinds made with leaves are hung, which make the inside very close and warm: the door is about the middle on the low side. They do not use the leaves of the wharra tree here for roofing, as at Otaheite, but common broad leaves, which they lay so thick as to keep the water out; but the greater part of their houses are miserable hovels.

The inside furniture consisted of a large floor mat from end to end, several large calabashes, some fishing-tackle, and a few spears; at one end the chief kept his ornaments, which he showed to us; amongst other things, he took out of two bamboo cases, two bunches of feathers of the tail of the tropic-bird, not less than a hundred in each bunch, forming a beautiful and elegant ornament: upon these he seemed to place a great value.

They made no offer of anything to eat, except a few cocoa-nuts; nor did I see that they had any other thing in use but these and the four mahi. Hogs and fowls were walking about, but in no great plenty; indeed this appeared to be their scarce season; for when we first landed one fellow ran to me and stuffed a piece of mahi into my mouth, thinking, no doubt, that at this season of scarcity he was doing me a great kindness. However, in other respects, Tenae treated us very well, and the people were evidently glad to see us among them.

On our return to the ship, the captain met the two brethren in the cabin, to know their sentiments of this place, and whether they were still in the same mind to settle upon it. Mr. Crook observed that he was encouraged by the reception they had met with; thought the chief had behaved exceedingly well, and approved of the house assigned them, the place, and the people; and concluded by saying, that though there was not the same plenty here as at the other islands, he had no objections to stay, as he never before nor since his engagement had comforts in view; therefore the present state of the island was not to create a disappointment to him. However, appearances gave him reason to think that they had their plentiful seasons here as well as at the other islands. Mr. Harris delivered his sentiments with hesitation, as if fear had taken possession of his mind: his opinions were quite contrary to Crook's; he disapproved of everything, and judged the scene before him a solemn one; and, in short, seemed entirely to have lost his firmness and ardour. However, as the kind reception by the chief and his people had obviated every direct objection to them, it was agreed to go on shore the next day, take their beds with them, and make a trial; after which, if they thought it unsafe to stay, and assigned their reasons, they might then return on board, as no compulsion was intended.

It is remarked, that honesty is no virtue of a South-Sea Islander, especially when our articles lie exposed to tempt him. The natives here had not hitherto appeared solicitous to barter with us; but some of them last night had found means to lift the glass cover off one of our best compasses, stole away the card and needle, and fitted the cover on as before. We spoke to the chief and several others about it, but found all our endeavours to recover it by mild means ineffectual; and, rather than use any other, the affair was dropped. However, they seemed to be conscious of having done something amiss by their not coming to the ship till long after breakfast, when our decks were again crowded with both sexes in the same naked state as on the preceding day.

In the afternoon Mr. Crook landed with his bed and a few clothes; I accompanied him, to see how he was received. Mr. Harris declined going, willing to stay on board and pack up their things in small parcels, for the convenience of carrying them up the valley. The chief's brother departed from the ship with us, and Tenae himself received us at the beach, and treated us with respect and kindness, as on the day before. We proceeded up the valley, followed by a
vast concourse of people, some of whom carried the baggage, and deposited it in the house assigned for the brethren; but a short time after it was removed, and ourselves conducted to another house of larger dimensions, about a hundred yards distant from the first.

This house stood on a square platform raised with stones, having a wall about six feet high on the lowest side (for they are all built on a declivity); in the inside was a kind of escutcheon in memory of Hônou, the chief's father; it was very curiously wrought with small reeds, laid upright, oblique, and horizontal, and about eight feet in height, forming a side of a pyramid. There was a drum at each end, made like those the Otaheiteans use, but much longer. Nearly adjoining, and upon the same platform, was another house, built on a small eminence, leaving a space in front, where were placed two rude figures of men carved in wood, nearly the size of life; behind these, against the side of the house, were three other escutcheons, wrought in the same manner as the one above mentioned; that in the middle, which was the highest, had the figure of a bird upon the top, and the reeds which composed the whole being stained of various colours, produced a beautiful and solemn effect. The house had no door or opening of any kind; but as my curiosity was a good deal excited, I opened a hole in the side of it, to see what it contained, and beheld a coffin fixed upon two stakes about a yard from the ground. Just at this time Tenae came up, and seeing I was not angry, I again opened the hole and pointed to the coffin; he instantly cried Hônou! and repeated it several times, by which I knew it was his father, and thought him pleased to see me notice the honours he had paid to his memory. The coffin was cylindrical, and bound about with various coloured plaiting made of the fibres of the cocoa-nut. This sepulchre, Crook's house, the trees, and every thing within the platform, was taboo or sacred, and must not be approached by women.

I left Otaheitean Tam to bear Crook company the first night, and then returned on board. In walking down the valley, I observed

\[ JUNE\] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

that it was well stocked with bread-fruit trees, but none of them were ripe; cocoa-nuts were not so plentiful; there were plantains, the ahee-nut, and some other fruits. These are chiefly enclosed by square fences of stones about six feet high, within which the owner's house stands, but some of the orchards are so over-run with weeds, that they mark more the division of property than industry or labour. When the boat came for me, they brought as many of the natives as they could contain, they availing themselves of that opportunity to save the trouble of swimming. The chief's brother was with me, and wished much to go on board, but I refused to take him, as it was near dark: this hurt him so much, that he shed tears as he walked away.

8th. The weather still pleasant, but, as before, heavy gusts of wind and rain from the mountains.

The natives crowded on board to-day, in such numbers that with difficulty we carried on our work at the rigging; the females were more numerous, and all in the same naked state as before, which induced our people to bestow upon each a piece of Otaheitean cloth. It is proper to observe, that these women dress decently on shore; but when they have to swim, as their cloth will not stand the water, they leave it behind, and cover their nakedness with a few leaves only.

In the forenoon the captain received a letter from Crook, wherein he expressed his perfect satisfaction with his new lodgings. As night drew on, he says, he was left to his repose; and after committing himself to the care of the Almighty, he went to rest, laying his clothes upon the ground near his hammock; but to his surprize, when he awoke in the morning, there were none of them to be seen, and he began to think he should have a bad report to give after the first night's trial, but before he had time to launch out into unjust surmises, the chief came with every article carefully wrapped up in a bundle. Soon after the letter, Tenae, Crook, and the chief's brother, came on board; they were thrown into the cabin, and every endeavour...
made to treat them kindly. The captain made Tenae a present of an ornamental crown, which delighted him greatly; he also gave him a piece of cloth, a hammer, and some gimlets; but what most took his fancy was a large conch-shell; for these they barter eagerly, pigs or any other thing; one of them gave our cook a broad axe for a conch; but it may with truth be said, that they are in such a state of nature and ignorance, or rather stupidity, that notwithstanding many iron tools, &c. have been left among them, they have never yet thought of employing their powers to learn their use: therefore they set but little value upon what we have, except they can find it, which always enhances the worth of the article. Nails and tools they think nothing of; cats and goats they fought after with some solicitude, and got some of the former; but of the latter we had only females on board. The conch-shells they use when they go a-visiting from one valley to another, and as they gain the summit of the hills, they blow them with all their might, and take great delight and pride in listening to the long reverberating echoes.

Tenae was now more familiar than at his first visit, and surveyed the cabin with a degree of attention, but not with the penetration and discernment of the Friendly islanders. Happening to touch the wire of the cabin-bell, he was struck with astonishment and savage wonder; he rang the bell again and again, and puzzled himself a quarter of an hour to find whence the sound proceeded. Tenae has a thoughtful cast of countenance, and looks much like the chief and father of a village, and to see him thus employed raised our pity, to behold a man on whom nature, perhaps, had bestowed talents capable of exploring her mysteries, thus confounded with a rattle; but, alas! in these regions, remote from all the paths of science, the talents and virtues of insulated genius lie hid in darkness, and, like the beauties of the rough marble, wait the skill of the polisher to bring them forth.

It was not a little affecting also to see our own seamen repairing the rigging, attended by a group of the most beautiful females, who were employed to pass the ball, or carry the tar-bucket, &c.; and this they did with the greatest affiduity, often beseeching themselves with the tar in the execution of their office. No ship's company, without great restraints from God's grace, could ever have resisted such temptations; and some would have probably offended, if they had not been overawed by the jealousy of the officers and by the good conduct of their messmates.

In the afternoon Mr. Godsell landed a chest and several parcels for the missionaries, which were taken safe up to the house. Tom and the boy Harraway stayed on shore this night, for the purpose of rendering Crook what service they could; and in the evening our visitors left us in good time, as usual.

On the 9th the pinnace was sent on shore again with more things. Crook still resolving to stay, attached himself to the place, took to eating the salt mahoe, and contented himself with the food the island afforded, which is not of a very delicate kind; for the mahoe being made in small quantities here, and cleanliness little observed in the operation, it is not so good as at Otaheite; but he says that they always serve him first of the best they have; and as he hopes to get pork once or twice a week, and fresh fish as oft as he pleases, he thinks he may live contented without casting an eye to the luxuries of Otaheite. Tenae had adopted him as his son, an act they ever after hold as sacred, esteeming him in the same light as his other children; this they explained to Crook, who, from the pains previously taken to learn the language, understood almost all they said. The chief being informed that Mr. Harris intended to stay, desired Crook to invite him on shore; but he could not be persuaded, which was certainly doing wrong, as he should have embraced every opportunity of learning the real state of the island, and thence judge of the practicability of settling upon it, before the day came when he must either go on shore or leave Crook alone, without being able to assign such clear reasons as landing in time might enable him to do.
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE [1797.

10th. About two o'clock in the morning the moon was totally eclipsed; but the roughness of the weather prevented our observing it with sufficient accuracy to be of any use. The wind at this time came in very heavy gusts from the mountains, and just as the eclipse ended our cable broke; the best bower was immediately let go, and brought the ship up in forty fathoms water at the entrance of the bay.

11th, Sunday. The natives crowded off as usual; but on being told that the ship was taboo for that day, they all swam back to the shore.

12th. The chief and his brothers came on board with Otaheitean Tom, who informed us that the boy Haraway had left them and gone to the other side of the island; and as he had said nothing concerning his intention, they thought he meant to remain, for which Tom blamed him very much; but the captain, to try Tom's own regard for his country, which he had constantly praised to the skies since we came here, ordered him to put his things into the canoe and go on shore also, signifying as the reason, his being privy to Haraway's elopement. The poor fellow declared his innocence, and with tears in his eyes collected his trifles and put them into the canoe, and before he went over the side shook hands with all the crew, then put off with a heart ready to break with sobbing and crying; when he was gone a little way, the captain called him back again, but it was some time before he became reconciled and cheerful. On the other hand, several of the Marquefans were continually plugging the captain to take them to Otaheite.

13th. While we were at dinner one of the natives stole a pump-bolt, and was making off with his prize, when Mr. Godfell detected him, and with the help of the gunner prevented his escape. The thief all jumped overboard, and made for the shore. The thief we lashed up by way of punishment, and showing him a loaded musket, he fully expected to be shot. A man of some consequence, who had come in the same canoe, brought the chief's second brother, with two pigs and a plantain-leaf, to intercede for the offender, who was his father; these we refused to accept. It was affecting to see the son kiss and embrace his father, and take their last farewell; however, not to prolong the anguish, we took up and discharged the musket, and then liberated the culprit. He could not at first believe that he was not shot, but when set free, and presented to his son, both of them appeared so overwhelmed with joy, that they could hardly trust their own eyes; dumb gratitude and conferration had deprived them of the power of speech. We added a solemn warning to them in future against such practices, and sent them ashore with the pigs, which we refused to accept, that they might see we had no advantage in our view.

14th. This morning the wind blew with such violence that we parted from our best bower; and as the ship was still unrigged we were under the necessity of either letting go another anchor, or drifting to sea; accordingly a spare anchor which we had in readiness was let go in fifty fathoms water, and one hundred and forty fathom of cable veered out before the ship brought up. We were now about a mile and a half without the entrance of the bay; and the wind continuing to blow as hard as ever, we became apprehensive that the ship might be drove off the island, therefore manned the pinnace, and set Mr. Harris on shore with all his things. The afternoon we employed in putting the rigging in some order, and bending the sails, as the captain intended to work into the bay the next day if the weather permitted. The latter part of this day we had very heavy rain; but notwithstanding the roughness of the weather, and the great distance we lay from the head of the bay, several of the natives swam off to the ship; but as we were so very busy, they were not admitted on board, only to rest in the boats alongside, and then return; some took no rest at all, but seeing by the others that the ship was taboed, they swam back of their own accord; a great exertion, especially to the females, as the distance both ways could not be less than five miles.
15th. Early this morning we hove up the anchor, and worked close in to the head of the bay, having as much wind as our double-reefed topgallant would carry, which makes the working in dangerous, as the wind is so variable, that sometimes when the ship was close to the rocks she would hardly come about. We anchored at noon in our former station, or rather nearer the shore; but were drove without it again. All the afternoon we were at work sweeping for our small bower, and just as it grew dusk we swept the buoy-rope, and made a man-buoy fast till the next day. We also unbent the stays, that the job at the rigging might be completed.

On the 16th we hoisted the long-boat out and got the anchor on board, but postponed our search for the other till the rigging was put in proper order. On Sunday the 18th we again tabooed the ship; indeed this was the only successful mode we had of keeping the natives away. On Monday we hauled the seine at the head of the bay, and caught about six dozen small fish.

20th. Mr. Harris and Crook came on board, and held a meeting with the captain respecting their stay. Mr. Harris complained of the poverty of the place, said he could not eat the maha, &c. Crook declared his determination to stay, even though Mr. Harris should leave him. The result was, that they both went on shore to make further trial before our departure. Several of the natives on board as usual.

On the 22d a native stole the cook's axe, and setting off with his canoe, was near the shore before it was known; when he saw the pinnace chasing him, he paddled to the rocks, hauled his canoe up, ran into the bushes, and so got clear off. They had now become so active in stealing, that the sailors had scarce a knife left among them. To remedy this, as soon as they came in the morning, each man chose a young lad as his stowkeeper, who followed his master closely all the day, with his knife, marling-spikes, &c. hung to his neck; and this saved them, for they always proved very faithful.

June.

23d. The boats were sent to sweep for the best bower anchor, and caught hold of it; but trying to heave it up, the rope broke; and night approaching, it was left till next day. This evening we observed the bay to be unusually agitated, for which we could assign no cause, as the wind was easterly, with moderate weather.

On the 24th, the fisherman, whom we hauled in at the quarter-gallery at our first coming, swam off at break of day, and informed us that Mr. Harris had been on the beach all the night with his chiet, and had been robbed of most of his things. This affair at first gained little credit; for we could not suppose him so impulsive as to bring his property down without sending notice, that a boat might be ready to receive them. But, on dispatching the jolly-boat to know the truth, we found it to be really the case. He had come down in the dusk of the evening; and as none from the ship were on shore, the boats being employed at the anchor, and the ship lying too far from the beach for him to hail, he spent an uncomfortable night, sitting upon his chiet: about four in the morning the natives, in order to steal his clothes, drove him off the chiet; and, for fear they should hurt his person, he fled to the adjacent hills. Mr. Falconer, who went to bring him off, found him in a most pitiable plight, and like one out of his senses. The surf was so high that they could not land, and were therefore obliged to haul the chiet and its owner off by means of a rope. The reasons he gave for leaving his partner abruptly, besides those already mentioned, were such as he might naturally have expected: Tenae, it seems, wanted to treat them with an excursion to another valley, to which Crook readily agreed, but Mr. Harris would not consent. The chief seeing this, and desirous of obliging him, not considering any favor too great, left him his wife, to be treated as if she were his own, till the chief came back again. Mr. Harris told him that he did not want the woman; however, she looked up to him as her husband, and finding herself treated with total neglect, became doubtful of his sex; and acquainted some of the other females with her suspicion, who accord-
ingly came in the night, when he slept, and satisfied themselves concerning that point, but not in such a peaceable way but that they awoke him. Discovering so many strangers, he was greatly terrified; and, perceiving what they had been doing, was determined to leave a place where the people were so abandoned and given up to wickedness: a cause which should have excited a contrary resolution.

To-day we put a new tow-line in the boat, and swept the best bower anchor with it; hove it up with the long-boat, and got it once more safe to the bows; the rigging was also completed, and we began to think of taking our departure. This was intimated to Crook, who still remained steadfast in his resolution to stay in the island, desiring only such implements of husbandry, and other things, as might facilitate and extend his usefulness among the people; observing, that his happiness would have been greatly increased had his devoted situation been with a friendly and agreeable assistant, whose conversation and sympathy might have comforted him in the time of trouble: but since the Lord had ordered things otherwise, he thought that it better suited with his character and profession, to resign himself to God's fatherly care, and rest in his promises, than to quit a station where a door of usefulness was so evidently opened: and should his blessed Saviour make him the honoured instrument of preparing the way for some of his more able servants, he should at least have the happiness to reflect that his life was not spent in vain.

Crook is a young man of twenty-two, remarkably serious and steady, always employed in the improvement of his mind, and applied with great diligence to the attainment of the language. He also possesses a very good genius, and I have no doubt will contrive many things to benefit the poor creatures he lives with; and as the valley is capable of great improvement, I should not be surprised to hear of this and the islands adjacent becoming very plentiful places by his means. He has various kinds of garden-seeds, implements, medicines, &c.; an Encyclopædia, and other useful books.

26th. To-day the captain went on shore for the first time, and

took with him Mr. Falconer. Their intention was, to ascend to the summit of the hills, and view the neighbouring isles. They landed, and were followed by a crowd of the natives, who were exceedingly glad to behold the captain in their village. After taking a little refreshment with Téné at his house, the chief's second brother accompanied them up the mountains, which are so steep, that in many places they were obliged to haul themselves up by the branches of trees that grow upon them. The captain did not reach the top, but Mr. Falconer did: whence he had a view of Trevenen's island to the west, Rio's and Dominica to the north, to the east St. Pedro, and Magdalena to the south. The ridge at the summit of the mountain is quite narrow, and every where covered with trees. The chief pressed him much to fire his musket against Trevenen's island, and was highly pleased with his compliance. On their return, Téné entertained them with a roasted hog, but not being very fat, some of the bystanders observed that it was not good; which affected the chief so much, that he walked aside in a pet, and was not reconciled till the captain said it was good, and refused to eat, except the captain came and sat beside him, which he accordingly did. In the evening they returned on board, followed by Crook and the chief, who came to take leave; accordingly, after several articles were put in the canoe, we had him an affectionate farewell, and parted. His manly behaviour at this season did him great credit; the tears glittered in his eyes, but none fell; nor did he betray the least sign of fear to enter upon his work alone.

27th. At four in the morning we weighed, and stood out of the bay with a light air easterly. At seven, we observed a canoe following us, in which was the chief's brother and our old fisherman, who had kept heartily the evening before on parting with us, and partly because the captain would not take him to Otaheite: at present they brought a note from Crook, with a letter for his sister, and requesting some soap which had been forgot. Accordingly, the quantity before packed up for him was put in the
canoe, and a present of an axe given to each of the messengers, who preferring to go to Otaheite, left us very reluctantly. We now shaped our course for Temese's and Sir Henry Martin's islands, intending to observe their relative situation to Santa Christina, as we had reason to suppose them erroneously marked in the sketch we had on board.

Concerning the customs and manners of the people about Resolution bay, we learnt but little besides what is already related in our daily transactions; for, except myself for a few hours on the first two days after our arrival, and the captain and the third mate on the last day of our stay, no person was on shore from the ship. But, finding this was likely to be the case, I wrote a number of queries to Crook, whose time being likewise much taken up with his own affairs, he had not leisure to make the necessary inquiries to answer them all. But, from his knowledge of the language, I think that what he says of a few may be depended upon, and they are as follow:—

Their religious ceremonies resemble those of the Society Islands. They have a mora in each district, where the dead are buried beneath a pavement of large stones, but with such exceptions as in the case of the chief Hōwō. They have a multitude of deities. Those most frequently mentioned are Opooamme, Okeco, Oenanoe, Opeepeete, Oono, Onetaw, Fatte-aitapo, Ooneye; but none who seem superior to the rest, though the extent of my information is small on this head. They only offer pigs in sacrifices, and never men.

The chief Tēnae presides over four districts, Ohtahao, Tahawao, and Ihinah, all opening into Resolution bay, and Onopoho, the adjoining valley to the southward. He has four brothers: Areowataytay, Natoofoa, Oheephee, and Tōwermee; but none of them seem invested with any authority; and Tēnae himself with less than the Otaheitean chiefs.

There is no regular government, established law, or punishments; but custom is the general rule.

"As to their food and manners, like most uncivilized nations, they have no regular meals, but eat when they are hungry, and none not in a great quantity at a time, this being their fearce ration. When they have a hog, they eat of it five or six times a day; and when without animal food, they use the roasted bread-fruits, fish, maboe, pudding made of it and other vegetables, ahee-nuts, and a paste made of a root resembling the yam; and this they do often through the day. The women are not allowed to eat hog, and are probably under other prohibitions as at Otaheite, and seem much more servile to the men, and harshly treated. They are employed in making cloth and matting, but not in cookery, except for themselves. I have never observed any of the men, from the chief to the tōwae, at work, except a few old persons making cords and nets. The rest idle about, and bask in the sun, telling their stories, and beguiling the time.

"The chief is said to have three wives; the youngest is with him here, the others in different parts of the island. He has several children, some of which live with him here, and others with their mothers. Observing a pregnant woman, I asked her how many children she had; she replied, Three. I wished to know if they were by the same man; she said, Yes. I asked further, if he had any other wife; she said, No. Whence I am led to suppose, that, though Tēnae has more wives than one, this is not usual, and may be the privilege of the chief. They seem to be very fond of their children; and when I went up the valley I saw the men often dandling them upon their knees, exactly as I have observed an old grandfather with us in a country village.

"Their particular customs I am not yet able to describe; but I learn, the son must not touch the clothes of the father, and must walk before him on the road; and if the father not touch any thing, nor eat victuals which have passed over the head of the son. Before the age of puberty, the operation of slitting the prepuce is performed; and all the men are tattooed, even to the very lips and..."
"The diseases are few, I have indeed hardly observed the appearance of any; and they are as yet happily free from that fatal malady which has made such ravages in the Society Islands."

Refpecting the persons, dress, canoes, &c. of these people, we found them exactly as described in Cook's Second Voyage, where he says, that "for symmetry of shape and regular features, they perhaps surpass all other nations." Not a single deformed or ill-proportioned person was seen upon the island; all were strong, tall, well-limbed, and remarkably active. The men are from five feet ten inches high to six feet; their teeth are not so good, nor are their eyes so full, as those of many other nations; their hair is of many colours, but none red; some have it long, but the most general custom is to wear it short, except a bunch on each side of the crown, which they tie in a knot. Their countenances are pleasing, open, and display much vivacity. They are of a tawny complexion, which is rendered almost black by the punctures of the whole body. They were entirely naked, except a small piece of cloth round their waist and loins. These punctures were disposed with the utmost regularity, so that the marks on each leg, arm, and cheek, were in general similar."

The women are rather of low stature, though well-proportioned, and their general colour inclining to brown. We observed that some, who, on our first arrival, were almost as fair as Europeans, by coming off to the ship and exposing themselves to the sun, became afterwards quite dark-coloured. But a few of these were punctured or tattooed. The chief's sister had some parallel lines on her arms, others flight punctures on the inside of their lips, and even upon their eyelids. They wear a long narrow piece of cloth wrapped two or three times round their waist, and the ends tucked up between their thighs; above this is a broad piece of cloth, nearly as large as a sheet, tied at the upper corners; they lay the knot over one shoulder, and the garment hanging loose reaches half way down the leg.

"Their canoes are made of wood and the bark of a soft tree, which grows near the sea, and is very proper for the purpose; their length is from sixteen to twenty feet, and about sixteen inches broad. The head and stern are formed out of two solid pieces of wood; the former is curved, and the latter ends in a point, which projects horizontally, and is decorated with a rude carved figure, having a faint resemblance to a human face. Some of the canoes have a latten fall, but they are generally rowed with paddles." However, except the one Tane had hauled up on the beach, and two or three more, the rest were so indifferent as hardly to swim when there was a breeze of wind.

The only tame fowls are cocks and hens, and their quadrupeds only hogs; but the woods are inhabited by small birds, whose plumage is exceedingly beautiful, and their notes sweetly varied. We left cats and he-goats, and were sorry we had no he-goat to give them, as they were so fond of these animals, that the chief took them and Crook wherever he went.

28th. Before daybreak we saw several lights upon Trevenen's island; and as we ran along the east side in the morning we observed two or three sandy bays, whence fertile valleys run towards the central hills, which are broken and rugged, rising in several places into lofty cones, that give the island a very curious appearance. From one of the bays there came off a canoe with four men, who after a length of time came alongside, and got a few articles from us, for which they had nothing to give in return, but seeming afraid of us, put off immediately. Behind the north-east point a large double canoe lay, with about twenty men in her; they kept close to the rocks; we hove the ship to for them, but they also seemed afraid, and kept aloof. At this time we saw a single canoe put off from a fine bay on the north-west side; this canoe was built exactly like those at Santa Christiana, and had the same kind of latten fall; they came close to the ship and talked boldly, and when they saw Tame Manoo upon the deck, one of them stood up and made some very laisser-faire gestures. We invited them alongside; where they sat at
came, but had lost their courage, for they trembled with fear all the while they flail. From them we got the native names of the islands, as marked in the chart. They wished us to anchor in the bay, but this we had no desire to do; so we made them presents and took our leave. They were four well-made men, differing nothing from those about Resolution bay, except in being rather less tattooed; their canoes, though built after the same fashion, are neater and stronger; their houses also, as seen from the ship, appeared to be superior. The bay on the north-west part of the island seems eligible for shipping, and may be distinguished by a small but high islet lying off it, and a beautiful and regular row of cocoa-nut trees behind a fine white sandy beach.

From the north end of Trevenen's island we run N. by E. twenty-four miles, to within a mile of the south-east point of Sir Henry Martin's island, which point is high and craggy: close to the westward of it is Comptroller's bay, large, and secure from the reigning winds. At the entrance, and near to Craggy point, there lies a small rock above water, in appearance like a boat. At the head of the bay we saw some houses in a cove, a vast number of inhabitants assembled upon the beach, and several canoes hauled up near them. All the valleys about this bay appeared fertile, many of the hills were covered with trees, and the interior parts seemed more habitable than at any other of the Marquefas. Westward of Comptroller's bay lies Port Anna Maria, where the Dacalus lay; and beside thee, I think it highly probable that there are other good anchoring-places about this island. Captain New describes the inhabitants of these islands as a handsome race of people, and extremely hospitable, which is certainly greatly in favour of those who would settle with missionary views, especially when the superior natural advantages of the island are taken into the account. It being five o'clock in the afternoon when we got off Craggy point, we bore up, and, running down the south side, took our departure for Otaheite, anxious to know in what circumstances we might find the brethren whom we had settled there.

JULY.

CHAPTER XII.

Return from the Marquefas to Otaheite, with the Transactions which had passed during our Absence.

29th. HAVING bent our course for the Society Islands, we proceeded on our voyage with a favourable gale.

July 30. We fell in with Tiookea, a lagoon island, many of which lie scattered about this part of the ocean, and render the navigation in dark weather dangerous. We saw smoke ascending in various parts, one falling canoe in the lagoon, and two men following us along shore. They appeared dark-coloured, had a piece of cloth tied round their middle, and each carried a spear in his hand. Cook visited this place on his second voyage. A lieutenant and the two Mr. Forsters landed; the islanders received them by touching noses, a common mode of salutation all over the South Sea. They found here various plants, particularly a vegetable which the natives bruise and mix with shell-fish: this preparation they throw into the sea, where they perceive a fluid of fish, and intoxicking them, they are caught on the surface of the water, without any other trouble than that of taking them out: the name, they say, which this plant bears among the natives is enow; but here the Mr. Forsters have evidently mistaken the quality of the plant for its name: snow, in the language of the Society Islands, means bad, and is doubtless in this instance used by the natives to intimate that the plant was noxious or poisonous. But this mistake only shows how easy it is to fall into others of a similar nature.

By observation at noon we made the centre of Tiookea in latitude 14° 30' S, and its longitude, by the chronometer, reduced from the
Marquesas and afterwards back from Otaheite, to be 146° 29' W., which is 1° 12' W. of what Mr. Wales makes it. Had we not made Otaheite very exact by our chronometer, we should rather have been silent than supposed an error in so good an authority as Mr. Wales. However, to be certain of this point is of consequence, as the longitude of several others of the small islands is deduced from it, and this is the island a person would choose to make first in coming from the Marquesas.

Latitude observed at noon 14° 29'; the south-west end of Tiookea bearing E. N. E. three miles; and the extremes of an island to leeward, called Oura, from W. 3° N. to W. 27° S.

For the other islands we saw on our passage, see the chart.

6th. At seven in the morning we saw the high land of Otaheite; and at noon, being close in, we ran between the Dolphin bank and Point Venus reef, and came to anchor in Matavai bay in thirteen fathoms water, and immediately moored ship. The natives crowded off, all exceedingly glad to see us; the brethren followed in a flat-bottomed boat, which they had been desired to build for the purpose of pulling the shallow entrance of the river with the goods. The report they gave was pleasing to us all. They had, in general, enjoyed good health. The natives had constantly observed the same respectful behaviour towards them as at first, and had never failed a day to supply them abundantly with all kinds of provisions. Respecting the purposes of the mission, it was a point of which they could not as yet say anything more than that appearances were encouraging. From the little experience they had gained of the people, they supposed them teachable; and though rooted in the traditions and prejudices of their ancestors, they hoped that a knowledge of the language, and perseverance in their duty, would have a great effect upon the rising generation. Their example had already restrained the natural levity of the natives, and overawed them; so that they seldom attempt to act a heea within their hearing; and when they come near on the Sabbath, they always behave with decency. Their dress and manners also exhibited great improvement on the side of modesty.

However, in their own department, there had been some difference of opinion concerning their interior regulations. Considering their small number, their committee and the office of president had been dissolved; the office of store-keeper, &c. had also been changed, and all public measures were debated, disapproved, or adopted, by the body; a majority settling the matter. But their own journals will give the most accurate statement of their proceedings during our absence.

March 26th. The ship quitted the bay of Matavai this day, and was soon out of sight. Our brethren who last departed from the ship in a canoe had an unpleasant return, by reason of the wind, and were obliged to land at a distance, but got to their companions in the evening, and received their canoe and its contents the next day.

27th. Brother Puckey informed the brethren respecting Eimeo, and the vessel he had gone thither to examine. He advised, that as Mainne Manne and his people had been exceedingly friendly, they should launch the vessel, and bring her to Matavai bay to be completed. Puckey and Lock were accordingly appointed to go to Eimeo for this purpose. A consultation was held respecting Micklewright; though all condemned his conduct, the majority prevailed, that, if he professed repentance, he should be received. Some of the brethren thought he ought to be wholly separated from them as a hypocrite.

28th. A considerable present came from Pomarré and Iddeah of all sorts of provisions, offering us; when these were expended, they would send a constant supply.
29th. We are daily visited by the king, queen, Iddah, and many of the natives. Some of the Otaheiteans, whom we have with us as helpers, speak many English words, and are eager to be taught the art of reading; they have already learnt most of the characters of the alphabet, though our necessary avocations have prevented us from paying much attention to this point, or from employing ourselves in the acquisition of their language. We have provision in great abundance: a gracious Providence evidently favours our design.

31st. Visited by the king and queen; complained to them of the destruction occasioned by the rats. They sent in immediately four cats.

April 1st. Visited by the king and queen, and Mawroa the husband of Pomare's sister, a man of good sense and great authority: he brought a chest to be repaired, and requested Wm. Puckey to be his tayo; he hesitated at first, but, on the representation of the Swede how much he could serve us, he consented.

3d. Took three Otaheiteans to assist in our cookery and attend our hogs. The king and queen brought a large present of cocoa-nuts to brother Cover and his wife, desiring to become their adopted children, and promising to regard them as their father and mother. Pomare and Iddah brought a larger in the evening, and begged them to receive the king and queen as their own progeny. The women crossed the river to visit the garden and the country around; the king followed them, and paid them every mark of attention, directing them to the best roads, and ordering his attendants to provide cocoa-nuts for their refreshment. It is incredible to see the quantity of provisions poured upon us: we have not less than a waggon-load of fruits, besides the multitudes of hogs and poultry. Surely the Lord hath done this.

4th. At a quarter past eight o'clock we assembled for our monthly prayer meeting; were revived with the consideration of the thousands of God's people who were remembering us, and at the same throne of grace praying for our success among the heathen.

5th. Our daily royal visitors have taken up their abode of late at Matavai, on purpose to be near us. Pomare brought a chair to be repaired, which the captain had given him, with a muller and fowling-piece: these we excused ourselves from repairing, except the chair, till thesmith had set up his forge; but he left them with us. Their huts very much resemble a travelling camp of gypsies.

6th. Early this morning Oseo sent ten men to prepare wood for erecting the blacksmith's shop. Our brethren from Eliebo returned, and made us the pleasing report, that they had been very kindly received by the natives, who never attempted to steal any of our tools, and were ready to give us every assistance. Brother J. Puckey, on the Lord's day, had addressed them by Andrew; they heard attentively, and said it was very good; but it could not be of use to them to change their religion, as the brethren would soon leave them and carry away the book. We assured them we would return and teach them again very soon. The natives replied, if any of the chiefs embraced our religion they should follow. The vessel they had planked up, so that she would be fit to come over in a few days. Micklewright's conduct was very distressing to us; none of our remonstrances could keep him from the natives.

8th. One of the arrears, the tayo of brother Henry, came to us with his wife big with child: they were taking their leave of us, in order, during their absence, to destroy the infant which should be born, according to the ordinance of that diabolical society. We thought this a proper opportunity to remonstrate with them against this horrid custom. The mother felt with tenderness, and appeared willing to spare the infant; but the brutal chief continued obstinately bent on his purpose, though he acknowledged it a bloody act, pleading the
established custom, his loss of all privileges, and the dissolution of the society, if this should become general. We offered to build them a house for the pregnant women, and take every child which should be born into our immediate care. We threatened him, that such an unnatural act would exclude him from our friendship for ever, and more, that the Eatoa, our God, would certainly punish him. He said, if he saw the arreoies destroyed by the Eatoa for it, he would desist, and asked if their forefathers were suffering for these practices. Our brethren failed not to open to him the wrath of God against all ungodliness and unrighteousness of men. On this he walked off dejected, but not apparently determined to desist from the evil or danger of his ways. A few days afterwards he came, and promised, if the child were born alive, he would bring it to us; and on another visit afterwards with his wife, renewed his promise, on forfeiture of our favour.

Manne Manne returned from Opère with abundance of clothes and provision for all the brethren. We took the opportunity to inform Pomärre, that next day we should speak to them the parow no Eatoa, the word of God; and invited them to come, which they promised.

9th. Brother Lewis preached from Thou shalt not kill, to the king, queen, Mânne Manne, and a number of the natives, who heard with serious attention, and said, "My ty te parow no Prêtote, imi "tiperahai mydide, imi pōhē rōā te taata: Good is the word "of Britain, not to kill children, not to sacrifice men." The high-priest whispering something, we asked him what he said; he answered, he told the people to leave off their wicked ways.

Pomärre and Iddeah came at noon, and going into the married brethren's apartment, found them conversing with the arreoies on the evil of destroying infants. Iddeah was particularly addressed on the subject, as she too was pregnant by a tooutou who cohabited with her, and was also of the arreoie society. Pomärre and Iddeah had for some time ceased to cohabit; he had taken another wife, and the one of her servants; but they lived in the same state of friendship, and with no loss of dignity. The brethren endeavoured to convince her of the dreadfulness of murder, in a mother especially. They promised to receive the child immediately, and it should be no trouble to her; but she was fallen, and made no reply. They then addressed Pomärre, and entreated his interference in suppressing such acts of inhumanity; and to give orders that no more human sacrifices should be offered. He replied, he would; said, that Captain Cook told him it should not be done; but did not stay long enough to instruct them. One of the brethren then said, "that we were come for that express purpose, and hoped he would hearken to our counsel; pointing out all the danger and disadvantage to themselves; and warning them, that if they despised our instructions, and continued in their wicked practices, we should leave them and go to another island, where we could hope for more attention. Pomärre was evidently affected by what was said, and especially could not bear the thought of our leaving him; and promised he would use all his authority to put an end to these practices. He indeed appears of a teachable disposition and open to conviction. Mânne Manne came in during this conversation; and we told him freely, that if he offered any more human sacrifices he would utterly forfeit our friendship, and must consider us as his enemies. He replied, he certainly would not.

On this we informed him, that our Lord knew his heart, whether he was sincere in his promises.

We renewed our attempts with Iddeah, invited her to continue with us, and suffer our women to take care of her child; that her example would have the happiest effects upon the nation; and knowing her eagerness for European cloth, we promised her three shirts, and any other articles, when the ship arrived; yea more, that we would report her conduct to Queen Charlotte and the British care ladies, to whom nothing would more endear her; and that the next ship would assuredly bring her very valuable presents. She said the child was safe born; had it been Pomärre's, it would have lived; but
that now they were arrested—and marched off with her paramour, who sat by and heard with utter indifference.

In the afternoon we again addressed the natives through the interpreter. We asked them if they understood what we said; they answered, Yes, and that it was very good. Among our auditors was Mawroa, the husband of Pomare's sister, widow of Motuaro, the late chief of Eimeo. In conversation with us, he said he was resolved to throw away the gods that could neither hear, nor see, nor speak, and worship the English God. He put several questions to us, particularly, whether it was not lawful for a man to have one wife: we told him, assuredly; it was an ordinance of our God: to which he replied, "My ty, my ty, very good.

10th. A wet day. In the intervals of the showers went in quest of a situation for erecting new habitations, the pretext not having the land so good around them, and being a very sandy soil. We did not fix, but the majority seemed desirous to build on the spot which the mutineers had chosen, as having the advantages of soil, as well as the easterly breezes from the mountain; several waterfalls near formed a meandering stream through the valley; the foot of the mountains abounded in bread-fruit and cocoa-nut, and the land appeared suited for cultivation, being cleared of trees which had been burned down by the mutineers; with an opening to the west, which let in a beautiful view of Matavai-bay, and a distant prospect of Eimeo.

12th. This day Iddeah appeared again in public, and Mæne Manne communicated to us the afflictive intelligence that she had murdered her new-born babe. It was therefore resolved by the brethren, that no more presents should be received from Iddeah; and that our marked disapprobation of her conduct should be shown whenever the came to our house. Commenced a weekly lecture to the brother Henry spoke from "The Son of Man is come to seek and save that which was lost," the king and many Onoheemas were present.

13th. Pomare and Iddeah came with a vaft present of hogs and vegetables, which were separated into four parcels. We asked Pomare from whom they came; we thankfully accepted his, but refused to touch that which Iddeah offered, and affignd our reasons, which Andrew communicated. She was highly offended; said she had the right to do with her children as she pleased, and should observe the customs of the country without minding our displeasure; and walked off with her tontou, leaving the present behind: a new chieft which had been made for her, being her own materials, was given her, and she carried it off with her. Yet her unnatural crime did not utterly pass unpunished; a dreadful milk abscess brought her under the surgeon's knife, and repeated sharp rebukes; yet her heart appeared still hardened. She is a bold daring spirit, and much more warlike than her husband Pomare. As we would not receive Iddeah's present, we wished Mæne Manne to distribute it to the natives, instead of which he carried it off to his own house.

Yet even this is but one among many unnatural crimes which we dare not name, committed daily without the idea of shame or guilt. In various districts of the island there are men who defec as women; work with them at the cloth; are confined to the same provisions and rule of eating and dressing; may not eat with the men, or of their food, but have separate plantations for their peculiar use.

It is remarkable, that with all these horrid vices fo predominant, in our presence they never shew an umbrage or commit an act unfairly; indeed they profess hardly to know what we are, and suspect we are not Englishmen, or like any others they have ever visited their island.

It may be worth a remark, that Iddeah had not been absent from our house two days before the appeared as if nothing ailed her: with so little inconvenience do the most painful operations of nature affect those of that happy climate.
**FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE**

1797.

The natives looked to Thaddeus at the minister, as if eager to devour every word that was spoken. "My heart," says W. Puckey, "was much engaged in secret prayer for these poor souls."

15th. Wanted plank for the blacksmith's shop; told the king. He said, "Harry-mie, come along." I thought he had some ready; I went with him and six men; he carried me up the valley, and searching every house took what he liked; many of the people stoutly resisted, but his men would not leave a plank. I told the king, with whom we exercised the most entire familiarity, that he was a thief. "No," says he, "it is the custom of Otaheite."

The king was carried on men's shoulders, and through such dangerous places, that he ran the greatest risk of breaking his bones; but he must not alight, as every place his foot touches becomes sacred and his own ground. At last we arrived at a territory of his own; when alighting, he took a majestic stride, and stalkirig on, "Puckey," says he, "is this as King George walks?" I told him, Yes. Having gone about three miles I desired to return, though the king would have gone farther, notwithstanding the rain. He then gave me a hog, and made the people from whom he had taken the plank carry it down to our house.

I waited two hours, but the rain not abating, I pushed homewards; in crossing the river I had like to have been carried away by the stream, and cried out; one of our servants immediately plunged in, and brought me safe to land, though drenched to the skin as I had been the whole day.

16th. This day we thrice addressed the natives by our interpreter, and with their usual attention; but as soon as they retired, they fell, like children, to their own light amusements. The Lord grant the seed sown may take firmer root in their hearts!

17th. Having given in the plan of the flat-bottomed boat which was to be built against the captain's return, it was approved. Pomáre, on application, ordered five men to attend me; I had liberty to cut down whatever I chose, and had not proceeded far before I found an excellent pourow tree, sufficient to build a vessel of any burden; it most resembles ash, but the wood is harder; it grows crooked, and is very capital for timbers and knees. The natives with me desired me not to do any thing, but only to mark where and how to cut, and they would do the work.

18th. Not able to work through pain in my back, my tayo and his wife coming, they desired to chasten me, which gave me great relief. The shop being finished, and brother Hodges with Hassell at work, the natives crowded round him, but vastly frightened with the sparks and hissing of the iron in water. Pomáre came, supremely delighted with the bellows and forge, and catching the blacksmith in his arms, all dirty as he was, joined noses with him, and expressed his high satisfaction. After work they went going to bathe themselves in the river, when the young king laid hold of an arm of each, and went down with them to bathe. His queen, Tetua, followed, and said to Hassell, "Ha see no tavye, Go into the wa-ter," but they signified they wished she would leave them first; on this she retired; she often bathes at noon-day attended by twenty men, seldom ever having any women to wait on her.

20th. A native stole a box for the sake of the nails; we seized and confined him for three hours, and then liberated him, informing him, that, should any be caught in future, they should be more severely punished. Soon after Pomáre and Manne Manne brought a peace-offering of a pig and plantain-leaf. The leaf we accepted, but we said we could not receive the pig, having forgiven the offence.

21st. Two of our brethren went with three natives to procure more wood: we went up the valley; it is about seven miles long and a quarter of a mile broad, with very little defcent, which makes the river meander slowly through it. It is covered with trees, except a few verdant spots from whence the wood is cleared. The mountains on both sides are exceedingly high and perpendicular, covered with...
his vessel. The brethren at Eimeo were most hospitably entertained; but Micklewright, the steward, having warped the Swede, and disinclined him to us, he made a variety of excuses for not interpreting to the people as usual. Having an address translated, brother Cover desired to read it to them, which Mânne Mânne approving, under the shade of a spreading tree they sung, “Salvation, O the joyful sound,” &c. and after prayer read the address; at the close of which Mânne Mânne exclaimed, “Very good fellow!” and on asking the natives if they understood what was read, they replied, “Yes, it was very good.” They then crossed the bay, fully answering Cook’s description. The face of this island is very romantic: the land around it is like the ruins of a splendid fortification. The district of Watawy is less mountainous and better cultivated than any at Otaheite; the soil deep and good. We retired to rest on some Otaheite cloth laid on the boards of the vessel. Brothers Bicknell and Cock worked at the vessel, whilst Cover, with Andrew, with much difficulty was preparing a translated address; obliged to omit many sentences for want of words. Set off for Otaheite; slept at Popo bay in the canoe, very uncomfortably. The wind increasing, we were driven to leeward, and just made Attahooroo. Earnest to reach our house for the Sabbath; we set off on foot, and left the canoe with the natives.

On the way we visited the tupapow of Orapiah: he is in a sitting posture, clothed in red cloth, under a shed, a native attending day and night, and offering provisions to the mouth of the dead corpse, which not being received, he eats them himself. We reached home after twelve o’clock, very much fatigued, not having put off our clothes since we left Matavai.

29th, 30th. Our brethren were actively employed, sawing plank for the boat. The natives are vastly surprized to see us cut so many boards out of one tree, two being the most they attempt; they are amazed to observe the facility with which we work all our tools.

Going to the blacksmith’s shop, I observed a chief peeping in; I
of Otaheitean cloth, and over it an officer's coat doubled round him. At his first approach he appeared timid, and was invited in; he was but just seated when the cuckoo clock struck, and filled him with astonishment and terror. Old Pyetea had brought the bird some bread-fruit, observing it must be flaved if we never fed it. At breakfast we invited Temarree to our repast; but he first held out his hand with a bit of plantain, and looked very solemn, which one of the natives said was an offering to the Eatoa, and we must receive: when we had taken it out of his hand, and laid it under the table, he sat down and made a hearty breakfast.

Brother Cover read the translated address to all these respected guests, the natives listening with attention, and particularly the priest, who seemed to drink in every word, but appeared displeased when urged to cast away their false gods; and on hearing the names Jehovah and Jesus, he would turn and whisper. The people were examined by the brethren if they understood what was said, and repeated a considerable part of what had been delivered, and seemed greatly pleased.

9th. Temarree accompanied the king and queen, and laid to dine with us. He is, we find, of the royal race, and son of the famed Obeerea. He is the first chief of the island after Pomarre, by whom he has been subdued, and now lives in friendship with him, and has adopted his son. He is also high in esteem as a priest. His name of Eatoa engaged our conversation. We told him the Eatoa could not die, as he must. A by-standing native said, "that he must be a bad Eatoa indeed; for he had himself seen one of his kind killed with a musket; and that they were no gods who could be killed." These priests pretend to great power, as forcers, to kill and make alive; and the people are in much awe of them; but we set their power at nought.

12th. We received afflicting intelligence that Micklewright and the Swede had fired upon the inhabitants at Eimeo: this grieved...
and alarmed us. We dispatched a letter to our brethren then with Pomáre, advising them of what had happened, and hastening their return. With these men we determined to have no more intercourse.

13th. The birthday of little Otoo Hassell; but this name is so sacred here, that every word into which Otoo enters is prohibited, and may only be used in speaking of and to the king.

14th. The tayo of Puckey returned from Oparre, and brought a present: it being the Lord's day, he declined accepting it till the next morning. Fewer natives attended the worship to-day than usual.

15th. Our brethren returned in consequence of our letters, all but brother Main, who feared one night with Temarree: he joined us the next day.

16th. The account they give is, that they made the circuit of the greater peninsula, and entered Tiaraboo, which Pomáre represented as of very difficult travelling; so they returned by the south, and were everywhere kindly received, and most hospitably entertained by Temarree, who prevailed on brother Main to be his tayo, and gave him and brother Clode each a double canoe, shewing them all his stores and fire-arms which he got from the mutineers; the guns, however, by the policy of the Swedes, are all bent. Pomáre, and the king and queen, would fain have detained them, not meaning themselves to return to Matavai till the ship comes. Every evening and morning the king, or some of the people, reminded them of the parow, or prayer, and joined with them attentively; but sometimes the natives were noisy and interruptive: however, the brethren daily maintained their worship, and on the sabbath retired, and enjoyed sweet communion with God.

Their singularity of manners in this part of the island, which had not been visited by them, their singing, and asking a blessing on their meals, excited surprise and laughter, though probably not the laugh of contempt; for everywhere they were treated sumptuously, and sometimes on a table, with plates, in the English fashion. We

cannot omit an observation here made by one of the brethren: "Yet all this kindness is not the gospel: we are as gods among them, we should be wretched, if they believed not our message."

"A priest, who pretended to great power in witchcraft, produced a rush wrapped up in the form of a bird, and shewed me," says one of the missionaries, "how they worshipped their god by this instrument, and intimated that it gave the divine response as our bible. To a curious person it would have been a feast to examine, but my bowels yearned over their ignorance and idolatry.

"The same priest very kindly anointed my legs, which were much affected, with the juice of an herb, which gave me more relief before morning than all the applications I had made for three weeks before; so that they are not destitute of some medical knowledge, probably the result of experience."

Passing into Tiaraboo, we visited Pomáre's youngest son at Matowee, his district, the fettled and most populous we have seen. We stopped at Wytorea, as Pomáre said the next district was not friendly to him; but we went ourselves and returned, and met the same civilities everywhere.

On our return, brother Broomhall, through fatigue, and catching cold, had one day a severe feverish attack. One of the priests told him this sickness was inflicted upon him by the Otaheite Eaatoo, who was angry, and would kill him. Broomhall said he was not at all afraid of their god, who was a bad god, or rather no god; that our Jehovah sent it, and would remove it the next day. The saying instantly spread among the natives; and brother Broomhall began to fear he had spoken too hastily and unthinkingly of his speedy recovery, and that God might be dishonoured if his illness increased; he therefore looked up earnestly to God in prayer to heal him. The priest came to him again and again, as he turned in his bed, and asked if he should be well to-morrow? He said, he sniffed his God would remove him. He had a refreshing night's sleep, and on the morrow found himself recovered, and rode. Many of the natives that
day questioned him if he was well, and seemed astonished at his recovery. The priest, among the rest, desired to know if the Pretanee God had sent away the sickness; he said, Yes; and took this occasion to speak to him about their superstitions, and urged that the gods which he and his deluded followers worshipped were not gods; but the priest insisted that they had gods, and a great many, and that they prayed to the good ones to keep away the bad ones; and if he did not bless the food, the bad gods would enter into the men and kill them. Brother Broomhall replied, that they were under no apprehension of the bad god entering their food, let him pray as much as he pleased, he should eat without fear; but the priest said, We did not wish to do him harm, and walked off confounded. This circumstance shows we must expect opposition when we have acquired the language, and go forth among them to testify that their deities are evil. O that we may rejoice in being counted worthy to suffer for Christ's name sake!

The accounts of former navigators as to the populousness of the country are greatly exaggerated. We think that not a fourth part so many will be found as Captain Cook supposes, perhaps not a tenth.

In this excursion we visited one chief, in whose house were many wooden gods, of different names: the god of the sun, and moon, and stars, of men, and women, and children, &c. They had each a wooden axe or hammer in their hands, which, the priest said, was to kill those who offended them, unless they offered a sacrifice or atonement for their crime. When they offered anything, whether men or hogs, or a canoe, they say, “Take this, and be not angry.” Yet to these wooden representatives they seemed to pay little respect.

19th. Held a very profitable meeting, to express the feelings of our minds respecting the work in which we are engaged. Haffell and Hodges went to seek free sand at Oparre, but found none. Every house offered them sand if they would stay the dressing; and at Pomarré's a hog was immediately killed and dressed; they got twenty pine-apple plants; and as they returned they were met every where by the people with apples, cocoa-nuts, and bread-fruit; and one man forced upon them a basket containing a roasted fowl and bread-fruit, which they brought home. “I took occasion,” says one of them, “to speak against their intoxication with yava. They said it only made them dance, and tobacco did the same. I with it never had been brought here by us.”

19th—23rd. Several succeeding days are only marked with ordinary occurrences. Happily to-day our sister Henry increased our number with a healthy female child, after a safe and easy delivery. Thus, instead of death making inroads among us, and in a climate so different from our native soil, not one of us is debilitated with disease. Surely the desire of every heart is to devote all our strength to the glory of the great Author of it.

27th. The boat goes briskly, and will soon be finished. Two of us went to examine the coral reef before the mouth of the river; on the inside the depth is very irregular; in some places the water is two or three fathoms, in others a boat can scarcely pass. The bottom is beautiful; branching trees of coral, with small fish of the most beautiful and vivid colours swimming in the midst of them. Our canoe upset, but no danger ensued.

28th. This evening, after divine service, I walked,” says W. Puckey, “with a native who had been some time with us; and from the beautiful scene of creation around us, I took occasion to discourse of Him who made all these things. He said, The God of Pretanee made all things there, but not at Otaheite; that one of their gods reached up, and stuck the stars in the sky; and that Mawwa, a being of enormous strength, holds the sun with ropes, so that he may not go faster than he pleases. I endeavoured to undeceive him respecting these tales of their priests; and, pointing to the houses at Oparre, told him they were no gods who were placed there, but the work of men's hands; for there the three great gods, Ooroo, Tanu, and Taroa are, to whom they only sacrifice in great extremities, when the priests say they are angry.
I asked the young man, how they knew they were angry. He said, 

"By speaking to us. I asked how this was done; he laughing said, 

on these occasions, a priest wrapped himself in a bundle of cloth, 

rolled up like a ball, and spoke in a sharp, shrill, squeaking voice, 

that he was angry; fetch me hogs, kill a man, and my anger will be ap-

peased." I endeavoured to shew him the folly and knavery of the 
imposture, and regretted my want of words and language to make 
myself better understood. May the Lord hasten the happy time, 
when the power of the gospel shall take root in the hearts of these 
benighted people!"

29th. Resolved, without delay, to erect a building for Mr. Lewis 
to print a vocabulary and grammar; and that each member have a 
copy, and one be sent to the directors.

30th. Mânne Manne sent his tuyo, Mr. Cover, a present of a 
double canoe, three goats, and about twenty fowls; with these came 
the old man, and spoke to Mr. Cover, wherein he 
expressed a desire to have some of the carpenters sent over to Eimeo, 
to assist in finishing Mânne Manne's vessel. We much suspect the 
truth of what it contains, it is as follows:

SIR,

"Upon the request of your friend Mânne Manne, I must inform 
you, that he desires your brethren would come over to us as soon 
"as possible; and if no more than one can be spared, that he would 
"bring a few along with him, by means of which we may be able 
"to proceed in finishing the vessel, which, at the present time, is in 
danger of being burnt down to ashes, on account of a spite that "Pomâre's wife has against the old man and me, and even your-
"selves, for us telling her that she was in the wrong in killing of 
her own child. She has ordered the people in almost every district 
of Eimeo to seize upon the old man, and kill him, and us, and 
every one that should take his part. We were assaulted the 8th of "this month by an insurrection of about three hundred men, be-

TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

"longing to our own place, that came on purpose to infult us; but 
"we being forewarned a few days ago of their intentions, they did 
"not succeed to their wish, as the steward and I were on our guard; 
"and, as soon as they began to insult the old man, by firing a round 
"or two amongst them they dispersed without the loss of any life, 
"or hurt, except one man that was wounded by me, at the first 
"onset, with my cutlass. They have now asked our pardon, and 
"begged peace; but are still very mistrustful of them, as they have 
"removed what little they have to a distant part; that we are under 

the necessity of keeping a good look-out at night, for fear of them 
"setting fire to the house, which they have threatened to do. So 
"if you cannot spare any of the brethren to come over, please to 
"send word by the bearer of this what you think is best to be done. 
"And, if any one should come, I would advise them to bring some 
thing of defence with them, as that would greatly add to the secu-
"rity of ourselves, as well as that of the vessel.

"He has likewise fulfilled his promise to you, by sending you a 
pair of canoes, three goats, and some fowls. He has also sent by 
the bearer two pieces of red cloth, which he wishes you to get 
made into an uniform coat, turned up with black or blue, and to 
"have it done as soon as possible, so that the bearers of this may 
bring it back with him when he returns, which will be some time 
in going round to Tiaraboo.

"For my own part, I am sorry I could not come over to you, on 
account of the old man being afraid to stay by himself amongst 
those troublesome neighbours of ours. We are still contented, and 
will be more comforted by hearing that you and your brethren 
"enjoy good health, unity and concord amongst yourselves, and 
peace with the natives. I have no more news at present, and 
therefore remain, with esteem, your friend and well-wisher,

(Signed) "ANDREW CORNELIUS LIND."
At a meeting of the brethren, where this letter was read, it was thought unsafe for any of them to go to Eimeo while there was cause of apprehension and danger. Neither could they at that time spare a few, as they were employed in much necessary work of their own. But they agreed that the coat for Manne Manne should be made with all possible dispatch.

We have strong intimations given us that Micklewright and the Swede intend to seize Manne Manne's vessel as soon as she is fit for sea, and make for Port Jackson.

This afternoon our boat being completed, with the help of the natives, we got her out of the house, and launched her into the river. It is twenty-two feet long, six broad, forty-six inches at each end; the bottom seventeen; height two feet six inches. Forty natives and two or three brethren jumped in as she went off, and rowed down to the sea; she moves very swiftly, considering her flat bottom, draws only two inches of water, and is about six tons burden.

June 11th. Held our preparation meeting for the Lord's supper; brother Jefferson, leader: a precious and profitable season; great open-heartedness of heart. Where any grievance had subsisted, each acknowledged his fault, and expressed tender mutual forgiveness; and much blessing followed.

12th, 13th. Employed in fitting up a printer's shop. Visited by a number of strangers, and by Whysoa, the younger brother of Pomàiare, with his wife, a very elegant woman: fitted up a bedstead for him, with which he was highly gratified.

14th. Enjoyed the ordinance of the Lord's supper. A large body of natives assembling round us, we embraced the opportunity of reading to them an address, translated by the Swede, which they read to one another.

15th. About fifty people crossed the river, sent from Pomàiare with provisions, consisting of three hogs, bread-fruit, coco-nut, and mountain plantain, which each man carried at the ends of a pole passed over his shoulder.

16th. The monthly prayer-meeting at nine. How many holy hands are lifted up for us!

17th. The natives who live with us pilfer us; one of them this morning confessed, and implored his companions. They charged principally two persons who had left us; these were sent for, and one of them being taken, owned the stealing of a large axe, and a check shirt. He was imprisoned, but the stolen goods being brought back by his friends, he was released with a reprimand; a cleaver was also found at Attahooroo, and brought back. The other thief being at the island of Eimeo, the natives set off in a canoe to take him. In the evening I spoke to the young man we had discharged, reminded him of the kindness we had shewn him when ill, and his ingratitude; he said, with tears in his eyes, he was a taata eno, a very bad man.

18th. Dr. Gillham having his clothes stolen while he was bathing, three or four of us pursued the thief; he fled. Hearing a drum, we hastened to the place, and having intelligence the thief was there, we pursued him, and seized him finely dressed for dancing; about a hundred fled in a minute; we begged them not to be frightened, as we only wanted the thief, whom we brought off, and chained to a pillar of the house; yet he contrived to go off with the padlock but being pursued, it was recovered, and he was dismembered. None ever think of resisting; yet, strange to tell! though they will run any risk to steal, they scarcely ever use what they get, but lay it up. Pomàiare and Otoo have each more articles than any among us, yet they produce none, wear only a piece of cloth round them, and are ever craving for more.

19th. Brother Cover baptized the infant daughter of brother Henry, and preached a very judicious discourse on baptism. Many of the natives were present, and looked with wonder, as if inquiring, what can these things mean? They all expressed great pleasure that a white woman had produced a child among them, and are exceedingly fond of
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE [1797.

the consequences which might result from it, we were induced to recall five of our brethren who were on leave of absence in the district of Paparua and Tanarua. We hope you gave no cause to the natives to commence such an assault. If it really originated in the breach of Iddeah from the part you took in reproving her for her crime, fear not her displeasure; the Lord who hateth iniquity is able to deliver you out of her hand. You ask our advice, what is best to be done? we really know not how to counsel you in this respect, but hope your persons by this time are out of danger of Iddeah’s resentment. Should it continue on the cause you suggest, we should afford you protection under our roof. 

A fact was reported to us this day, which, if true, was shocking. In one of Captain Cook’s visits he left a great monkey, who was made a chief at Ataahoro; he had a wife and thirty servants, and abundance of every thing; they called him Tautoahe harrat, the great man dog. One day the woman seeing him catch the flies and eat them, which they abominates, she ran away into the mountains; the monkey and his touts pursued, but being met by Tenarea, who was jealous of his authority, he knocked him down with a club, and killed him.

One of our brethren this afternoon sitting in his birth writing, a young girl came in, and expressed her surprise that we behaved so different to them from what all our countrymen had done. He told her that such practices were wicked, and that if we did such things our God would be angry. "Oh," said she, "but I will come to you in the night, and then none can see us."—He replied, "No.
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

A thing can be hid from our God; the night to him is as bright as the day, and there is no darkness or shadow of death where any of the works of wickedness can hide themselves. But, if you first put away your evil customs, then we should love you.

14th. Visited by Mawrē, with a vast supply of vegetables; three areenties accompanied him, amazingly fat, and tattooed all over. This society is constantly wandering about from island to island. They are the finest persons we have seen, are said to have each two or three wives, which they exchange with each other; and inhumanly murder every infant that is born among them. Wherever they go, they exercise power to seize what they want from the inhabitants, go, they exercise power to seize what they want from the inhabitants.

19th. Got up the flag-staff forty feet high, rigged like a mast, but had like to have lost my life in procuring it from the mountains, whither we went. The natives climb like squirrels. I followed them till the rock became perpendicular, and I dreaded, when I looked down, how to descend again without being dashed in pieces. I committed myself to God, and holding by little pits in the rocks very slipperily with rain, descended trembling; one hold failing, I must have gone headlong down the precipice; indeed, without the help of the natives, I never could have got down at all. I immediately offered them all the fish-hooks and beads about me. One stranger only accepted a fish-hook, the rest refused to take any thing from me; and he who took the hook said he would go and get the pole we wanted.

A chief had a hog ready dressed for us, and said, any poles we wished should be sent on Friday. As we came back we found the river much swollen with rain, and were carried over in many places by the natives. The valley was full of apple-trees loaded with fruit, and hundreds lying on the ground neglected.

On the 24th several natives came from other districts where the bread-fruit began to be scarce, to gather some from the trees in Matavai; upon which those of the district, considering the brethren as proprietors, came and complained to them, saying, that except they prevented it, there would be no fruit left. Accordingly two of our body were dispatched to talk with them, and claimed their sole right to all the produce of the trees. The strangers promised to come no more, only
begged permission to take what they had got, which was granted; and also a canoe lest them, the better to convey the fruit home.

The old chief, according to promise, brought us the poles, for which a knife was given him, and some red feathers, which greatly delighted him. Went to Oparre in our boat for wood; hospitably entertained; visited the morai, where the great god Oono resides, represented by an ugly piece of wood; saw there several altars and flulls of men who had been sacrificed. One of the altars was forty-five feet long, supported on pillars of the bread-fruit tree about seven feet high; the other about twelve feet square, and on the top an arched lid like the tilt of a waggon; here the wooden god was laid. One flull we offered split acorns, and in the midst of the morai a fish pool with a young turtle. Oh! when shall all these horrid scenes be closed, and Christ alone be exalted?

25th. Service as usual. The natives are very fond of being dressed; we have sent clothes to several, which at first they honestly returned; but they have committed some petty thefts, and we hardly know what to do with them: we are both to punish them, yet impunity emboldens them in depredations.

A native coming into our apartments, a brother took occasion to speak to him about God. He owned the Otaheitean gods were enough, for they ate men, hogs, bread-fruit, &c. This the Protestant God did not, and was "a good fellow," an English term he had picked up. He observed also, that, when we spoke to the Protestant god the good rain comes, and when we do not the good rain goes away, and the hot sun having fallen on two faceless females.

26th. A great quantity of bread-fruit was brought to-day to make mahi, as the time approaches when ripe fruit will be scarce in the district for two months. It is truly wonderful to see how Providence has furnished this place as soon as the bread-fruit fails in this district it is ripe in another, so that we never want. Cocoa-nuts and plantain we have all the year round, as the cree apples get ripe on one tree, young ones come on in another. Few trees ever lose their leaves, and are only defirite of fruit for about two months.

27th. A present came from Pomarre for the two brethren who work at the forge; a pair of good canoes, seven lobsters, a number of fine shells, seven or eight couple of fowls, two large hogs, with a quantity of Otaheitean cloth; and a message to come to him for more whenever they wanted.

28th. A looking-glass was stolen by a female native from the women's apartment; we resolved to expel the man and his wife till it was restored. Held our monthly meeting before the communion in great union of hearts.

29th. Had a nest of six young rabbits; if they prosper, the hills will soon breed them in abundance. Met before the communion happy unanimity prevailing among us, and unreserved freedom of communication. Paid a visit to Oparre; most hospitably entertained by Mawoa; he appears a friendly friend. About half the beautiful valley in which he lives belongs to him; went with him fishing with a small seine; caught plenty of salmon-trout.

30th. Preparing letters for the return of the vessel, and our usual employments.

July 1st. Otoo sent a message, directing us to discharge certain persons from the house, whom he described as great thieves; at the same time he nominated others, whom he wished to recommend to us in the capacity of servants. These the brethren knew to be the creatures of Otoo, or, more properly, a part of his mischievous gang, and saw clearly and without unjust suspicion, that he wanted them in for no other purpose than to deal with the greater facility; therefore his motion was rejected. Though it was true many things had been stolen, yet we did not think the servants guilty; but Otoo's having his own men constantly going about the district stealing from the poor natives wherever they see, sufficiently characterizes them, and would deter our people from keeping any of them about the house.
5th. A grand assembly of arrivals visited Pyeteah, and began their sports on the other side of the river; many came over the river, and heard brother Cover, forming, as usual, a half-circle before him.

6th. A great shout of the natives this morning, "Te pâhe, Te pâhe," brought us out of our house, and to our great joy the white falls shone before us; went many of us on board, and rejoiced with the captain in the perfect health and safety of all the crew.

CHAPTER XIII.

Transactions during our Stay at Otaheite, and Survey to ascertain the Population of the Island.

The transactions of this second visit will deserve a distinct consideration. The joy of meeting was great, but the stay of the ship being no longer necessary, a speedy departure was announced, and every preparation begun: among these was the discharge of the remaining cargo, and those treasures of iron and steel that were to be now finally divided between the missionaries at the Friendly and Society Islands. Accordingly, on the 6th of July, Mr. Harris being landed with his property, in the evening the captain went on shore, when a meeting was held, where the public journal was read, and various matters were discussed concerning the proceedings of the society, and how they should divide the things in the ship between them and the party at Tongataboo; when it was agreed to choose two brethren to act in their behalf, and two for themselves, under the inspection of the captain.

7th. This morning the four missionaries appointed to divide the goods began their work; the captain superintended, and Mr. Jefferson acted as secretary, taking an account of the various articles which each party received. This business, it was foreseen, would cost much time and trouble, but as no other method could be devised of giving all parties satisfaction, the captain promised to stay till the first of August, which would also give the brethren time to finish their letters. The captain observes with pleasure, that the two brethren appointed to represent their brethren at Tongataboo were most attentive to their interest, and rather a larger share was allotted them than if two of themselves had been present.
An invitation was sent to the wives of the missionaries, who, agreeably thereto, dined and spent the day on board; they expressed much pleasure on finding us all in good health and spirits, and left us in the evening highly delighted with their visit. As for the natives, they crowded on board, few coming empty-handed: many of them were in the English dresses which had been given them by the brethren; and several of them spoke many phrases of broken English, such as, "Welcome again; Glad to see you, Captain Wilson."

8th. Idiah sent a messenger this morning to know if she might come to our house. On consultation, we agreed that brother Cover should go and speak with her; and that if she expressed any concern for her cruelty to her infant, and assured us she would no more send us with such conduct, we should be glad to receive her. In this she acquiesced, though we have no great prospect of a change; she, the acquaintance, though we have no great prospect of a change: she drank tea with Mrs. Cover; and continuing with us till dark, returned much pleased with her reception.

9th. To-day being Sunday, not one canoe was seen off in the bay, and the whole district appeared remarkably quiet. Mr. Cover and Lewis came on board to act as chaplains for the day: the former preached in the forenoon from the second epistle of Peter, chap. iii. ver. 18; the latter in the afternoon from Philippians, chap. i. ver. 28. Andrew the Swede came from Eiméo, and presented the 10th. Andrew the Swede came from Eiméo, and presented the captain with a fine turtle, Mawróa, a kind friend to us and the missionaries, brought a hog and a great quantity of bread-fruit; his wife, named Aowh, was with him; she was formerly the wife of Motuara, chief of Eiméo, the real sister of Pomárre, and mother of Tetua, the present queen, Otoo's wife: she is a very intelligent woman, and Mawróa himself is better acquainted with the islanders than any man we have conversed with. Aowh informed us, that in the family of which she was a branch, the reigning prince had been called Otoo; which name passed to their first-born, whether male or female, the infant it was born; the custom obliging the father ever after to take some other name. I mentioned before, that the grandfather of the present Otoo changed his to Otey, his father to that of Teina, and next to that of Pomárre, and so on; for having lost their royalty by the birth of their child, they may change their names as oft as they please, but not before. Otey was the father of Pomárre, Oreepiiah (lately deceased), Pytouah, chief of Wapiawno, and Aowh. Pytouah is an arroioe of the first rank, has a rough, disfiguring look, and is much addicted to ava drinking: he was amongst our visitors of this day, and received a present: they were exceedingly glad to see us, and expressed much attachment.

It has already been noticed, that some of the brethren had made a tour of the island, and supposed the number of inhabitants on both peninsulas to be about fifty thousand: this sum, though less than a quarter of what Captain Cook calculated them at, was still thought by us as greatly exceeding the population. Therefore Captain Wilson agreed with Peter to accompany me in a circuit of the island, and to try some method of estimating the number of people in each district. On Tuesday the 11th we accordingly set off, having first engaged a man to convey us across the numerous rivulets which we must necessarily pass, and two others to carry my linen and what things Peter wanted. It was about noon when we landed near One Tree hill, and began the journey eastward through the interior of Matavai, where the land is far from being clear of underwood; for the best roads are unpleasant by reason of the long grass, which bears a bur called by the natives peer-pee, and adhering to the flocks becomes painful: the flies were also very troublesome. The bread-fruit and cocoa-nut trees abounded in perfection, and afforded an excellent shade from the heat of the sun. In this district there are also the wild cotton trees, some of which were in bloom, but being of a very inferior kind made no luxuriant show; some spots were planted with ava and sugar-cane, and in some places the latter was growing wild.

The river of Matavai receives its supplies from the lofty moun-
tains which heretofore form the interior of the island; then running a winding course down the valley, and through the low grounds of the district, passes close by the missionary house, and disembogues at the extremity of Point Venus. At the entrance from the sea it is so shallow, that no vessel drawing above two or three feet water can enter it; nor can they proceed farther than a quarter of a mile. When we came to its banks, Peter shewed me the spot where he displayed his first feats in their wars, and which ultimately ended so much in favour of Pomarre and his son Onoa. I desired him to give me some account of them. He immediately complied; but dwelt so much upon his own performances, as rendered it difficult for me to separate the essentials of the story from his frivolous boasting.

The first war, he said, happened in 1793, when he had been but five months upon the island. It seems, that a chief named Whanno had succeeded in wresting the district of Whapiawno from Pytouah; and conscious that by this usurpation he would offend Pomarre, he prepared to attack him first, but did not conduct his plans with so much secrecy as to prevent his designs coming to the knowledge of Pomarre. The latter, though not a warlike chief, prepared to oppose Whanno with all his strength. Peter and Andrew were engaged, with the Jew, who was a good marksmen. Whanno had to assist him almost every chief on the north-east side of the large peninsula. When all was ready, the latter chief sent word to Pomarre of what he intended; and a day or two after entered Matava1 with all his men, almost every chief on the north-east side of the large peninsula. When all was ready, the latter chief sent word to Pomarre of what he intended; and a day or two after entered Matava1 with all his men, Iddeah was at that time on some business at the eastern part of the district, and nearly fell into their hands; they chased her to the river, where Pomarre's party fquad to receive them. Iddeah got safe over, and placed herself in the front of the men; when one of the enemy, holding that the rest, ran across the stream, and aimed a stroke at her; and would, but for Peter, who stood close by, have effected her death: he running to her aid, and facing the man hit his club, wrested it out of his hands, chased him back through the river; and more of the party coming up, the man was killed. The body of Whanno's troops had retired a little back; but one skulking behind a tree was shot. This threw all the rest of Whanno's men into a panic; they precipitately fled. and in great confusion: two more were slain in the chase, from which Pomarre returned victor. This secured to him the districts of Matava1, Opaire, and Tenaha, all he seems then to have been possessed of. Five or six days after this he met his men, now flushed with success, and proceeded to Whapiawno. Whanno and his men were afraid; a running fight took place, one woman was killed, but the warriors fled to the mountains. However, in three days they came down and renewed the combat, and were now severely beaten, not less than twenty-five of their number being slain; which, considering their fewness to close in battle since the introduction of a few muskets, was certainly a great number. This victory entirely crushed Whanno, and by it all the northern side of the peninsula, from Matava1 to the isthmus, became subject to Pomarre and his son Onoa. Still they had powerful enemies who were meditating a grand attack upon them; these were Wyebeus, king of Piaaaboo, and Temaire, chief over all the districts on the south side from the isthmus down to Attahooroo; over the latter district was young Towha, who wished to remain neuter, but his from Pomarre to join his party, though he was more inclined to favour Temaire, and was afterwards charged with having secretly concerted matters so as to gain him the battle. Temaire encouraged his men by telling them that he had muskets, powder, ball, and white men, as well as his adversary; and that themselves were more numerous than Otoo's party. The whites he had were Connor, an Irishman, and James Butcher, a Scotchman, both of the Matilda's crew. Accordingly, about a month after the battle of Whapiawno, these powerful adversaries met in the district of Attahooroo; but being afraid of each other in no small degree, the first day was spent and nothing done. In all their movements they surrounded the white men, trusting more in them than ever an Atlantic.
did in his elephant. On the second day the onset began; but in a short time Towha's men, who were in front, ran away, and all Pomare's followed their example; which was afterwards charged on Towha, as his preconcerted scheme: Peter, Andrew, and the Jew, however, stood their ground, and shot four men. Butcher and Connor were obliged to run for their lives, and Oammo, the father of Temarre, was killed by a musket shot. These advantages brought their party back to assist them; all their adversaries fled, and a complete victory was gained for Pomare, whom they found at a great distance from the fight, quite overcome with fear, and lying flat on the ground, held fast by the roots of a tree. When they acquainted him with their success, he would hardly believe it, but continued to lie like one out of his senses; so little courage did this chief of the victorious army possess. The routed party fled to the remotest districts; some took refuge in the hills; one man in particular got up a very dangerous precipice, and threw large stones on his enemies below, and kept his station till he knew their rage had subsided. The consequence of this battle was, that Temarre became subject to the victors; was obliged to give to Otoo the great mơat at Pappara: also every other privilege of the supreme chief. A house was built by Otoo in all his districts, where some of his servants constantly reside, and he occasionally visits; they represent his sovereignty, and none dare to pass them without stripping, the same as to himself. However, notwithstanding these things, the power of Temarre was still very great; he was left in possession of all his districts, and exercised the office of chief priest of the Eimeo on the title of the island.

Towha being charged with treachery, was stripped of his district, and obliged to live as a private man in Pappara. Wytheass had fled to Tiarebo, where in a short time after he was defeated, and reduced in a like manner as Towha to a private station, and Otoo's younger brother made prince of his kingdom.

Pomare being now in possession of all Otaheite, thought of revenging the injury the chief of Eimeo had formerly done by destroying his canoes and the houses of Matavai. With this intent he left his party against that island, where his sister Wyreede Aowhi made some resistance, but even of her men being killed, she was obliged to acknowledge the conqueror, and take up her residence in Otaheite. In her stead Ideadah and Mane Mane were made chiefs of the island.

Thus Pomare (the Otoo of Captain Cook), on whom the favour of the English had drawn many enemies, and who at different times was chased and straitened by them, that, afraid of this life, he has frequently entreated his visitors to take him off the island, had now, at a very good time, extended his power far beyond all former example, and that without either courage or talents for war comparable to his enemies; so that I cannot but ascribe it to the providence of the Almighty, who ordains all things for the counsel of his own will, and for the accomplishment of his glory and gracious purposes. In whatever way these events are viewed, they certainly are much in favour of the mission; for it is clear, that those employed in it can proceed in their work with greater safety than when the natives were continually engaged in war.

Leaving Matavai river we came to the eastern part of the district of Mataroa, called Teahoonoo, over which Wyreede Aowhi presides. She and her second husband, Mawroa, were at Oparre, where they also have a dwelling. Their house in this place is exceedingly neat and clean; before it is a platform of gravel stones carefully levelled and smooth, and at the front of this a regular row of cocoa-nut trees; and by the side of the house a pure rivulet of fresh water runs from the hills. The low land hereabouts is not more than a hundred yards wide. Her servants were busy preparing a brown dye from the bark of a tree called mohoo, which they broke small into a bowl of water, and letting it lie till softened, they bruised it till the liquid became of the colour they wanted. We next ascended a high hill called Tappayey, which runs into the sea, and separates Ma-
tavai from Whyripoo. The hill is included in the former district, a great stone on the east side being fixed on for the boundary of each.

From Tappahay the small district of Whyripoo extends near a mile, the shore straight, and the low ground about two hundred yards wide; it has also a valley of small extent. We walked about half way along it, and stopped for a while at the house of Inna Madua, the widow of Oreepiah. She was absent, but her head servant Aheine Eno received me kindly, and would have dressed some fish if I had promised to wait; but wanting to go further, I declined his offer. This man having a shrewd, intelligent countenance, I desired Peter to communicate to him the purpose of our journey, and to ask how many persons he thought usually resided in Whyripoo; assigning for our motive the wish of the carees of Pretane to render them service according to their numbers: when he instantly suggested a mode, which I afterwards adopted. He said, that in Whyripoo there were four matteynas, and to each mattey whole there were ten tees; and by these he estimated the number of men, women, and children, to be about two hundred and fifty. I desired him to explain what a mattey whole was, and what was a tee. The former, he said, was a principal house, distinguished either by a degree of rank in its ancient or present owner, or by a portion of land being attached to it; and sometimes on account of its central situation to a few other houses: that the mattey whole sets up a tee (or image) at the morai, which entitles it to the liberty of worshipping there; and the other houses in the department of the mattey whole claim a part in the same privilege, and are thence called tees: that in some matteynas there are eight or nine persons in the family, in others but two or three; and that it frequently happens, that a mattey whole or a tee is totally deserted. Therefore, from this account, and what I afterwards saw of the thin population, I allow but six persons to each mattey whole, and the same to a tee, as the latter is often occupied by a larger family than the former, and as both terms do sometimes apply

According to the above, the number in Whyripoo is

| Matteynas | 4 | 6 | = 24 |
| Tees      | 40 | 6 | = 240 |

Aheine Eno, the name this man at present went by, means a bad woman; it seems that his mistress Inna Madua was a character of this kind, and had got this name from the natives; but not liking it, transferred the name (though not the odium) to her servant. This district did belong to Whapiawno, but was lately presented by Pytouah to his brother's widow.

The next projecting hill which obstructed our passage is called Row-row-​are; it divides Whyripoo from Whapiawno: we paddled it by the sea up to the ankles in water, and then had to walk round a bay about a quarter of a mile wide, when we came to a fine border of low land, which at this part, being the west entrance of the district, is about a furlong and a half wide, in length coastwise a mile and a half, and at the east part not quite a furlong wide; thence to the east end of the district the hills run close to the sea, and the road lies over rugged sharp rocks. There is a fine valley which opens about a mile east of Row-row-​are, abounds with fruit-trees a considerable way up, and is inhabited. This is the only valley that runs quite across the island; on the opposite side it opens into Pappar, a little well of the great morai.

Pytouah resides at the west part of the low land; and as it was too late for me to reach another district, I proposed staying here for the night. Both himself and his wife I knew were at the ship, but his head man, or overseer, very readily dressed a pig; and after we had dined I took a walk through the district, and Peter with me. The houses here were all neat and well built, and there was bread.
fruit in abundance. We stopped at one place where three houses stood, and inquired of the owner, how many matteynas were in the district; to answer this he took some small rods, and naming each matteyna as he counted them into Peter's hand, made the whole number thirty-two, including Whyripoo, for which he counted the same as he had got before; therefore, deducting four, the number is twenty-eight. In some, he said, were ten tees, in others nine, eight, and seven, and made the same observations on their being peopled as Ahéine Eno had done; therefore, as I could not get the tees exactly, I counted as under: viz.

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Matteya (7)</th>
<th>Tee (9)</th>
<th>Tee (8)</th>
<th>Tee (7)</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>7 of 10 tee = 70</td>
<td>7 of 9 tee = 63</td>
<td>7 of 8 tee = 56</td>
<td>7 of 7 tee = 49</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9 × 6 = 54</td>
<td>8 × 6 = 48</td>
<td>7 × 6 = 42</td>
<td>6 × 7 = 42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>396</td>
<td>180</td>
<td>men, women, and children.</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Before we got back to Pytouah's house it was dark, and they had all gone to rest but one man, who showed me to a new house, where, for want of bed or bed-clothes, I slept on the ground, and spent the night very uncomforitably; and might have spent it worse, had not Peter, towards morning, lent me a blanket, which he had brought as a necessary article in travelling round Otaheite.

12th. At daybreak we proceeded on our journey, and passing several good houses, came to the river, which is here three feet deep. My man Charles took me on his shoulders, and carried me through with great ease. When we had gone a little further we came to a very bad road, having to walk over the stones fallen from the rocky cliffs which project here. One place was very dangerous; it is called Oratatahah. We had to ascend the cliff half way, and pass along a narrow path where was hardly room to fix the feet. The rock is quite perpendicular; and, had we fallen, it was near twenty fathoms above the sea, which beat violently against the base. Here it is said Pomarre once fell, but the tide being up at the time, when he found he was going, he threw himself well off, and received but little harm. When we had safely passed this spot, we sat down on the rocks to breakfast on the remains of Pytouah's pig; for it is the custom here, that whatever their hospitality provides for strangers, the fragments of it are always brought away. About nine o'clock we came to a deep rock which terminates Whapitaewno, and forms the west point of a small bay. The eastern point is called Owahoona. Between the two is a small district called Wharoo-My, over which Wynee Aowh presides; it has a valley running up a little distance; it has but one matteyna and nine tees, equal to sixty persons. A little further east is another small district belonging to Mânne Manne, called He-wow; it has two matteynas; in one there are seven tees, in the other four, which makes the number of inhabitants seventy-eight. Mânne Manne, who has several of these estates, was at Eimeo, and the care of the place was in the hands of Teboota, his head man, who was at this time carrying on the building of a large house for the old priest. Teboota presuming on his master being tayo to the captain, insisted on my staying to refresh at his house, and immediately began dressing a couple of fowls and a young pig. In the interim the people ran from every quarter of the district, in order to gratify their curiosity; yet when they had all got together and sat down, I could count no more than thirty-five, which is certainly no sign of extraordinary population. After receiving a good dinner from Teboota, and much kind treatment, my followers packed up the fragments, and I paid our generous host with a draft on the captain for a pair of scissors; and as they have no doubt of the specified value of the paper, and have learnt how to negotiate the notes, he seemed quite rich. What a commencement of civilization!
little inward makes a curve. The low land on which the houses are built forms in each place a kind of triangle, the inward corner of each being joined to a valley, formed by steep hills on each side, which are covered with trees to their summits, and running in a winding direction; they afford a view remarkably wild and romantic. Rivulets of excellent water run through both districts, which, notwithstanding, hardly deserve to be mentioned for fertility.

Otoo has one of his royal houses in Honoowhyah, and, in passing it, my company was obliged to strip. Nearly opposite is a small stock advanced into the sea, sacred to the feet of Otoo; for none besides dares to stand upon it; and I think he deserves to stahl: the statute of Folly, if ever he raises his own living image there. In walking along, about forty people came with great eagerness to gaze; had the place been populous, I think more would have come.

Rounding another hill, we came to the district of Nahnu Nahno: it belongs to Pomarre, and is much like those I had lately passed in appearance and population; it has three matteynas and eighteen tees, which makes the number of inhabitants one hundred and twenty-six.

The next dividing hill is called Pepe-pec; we walked round it over sharp rocks, which are a kind of basaltites. A little further eastward there is a gentle slope from the hills towards the beach, and upon this slope are many cocoanut and bread-fruit trees, but no house or inhabitant. After passing this we came to the district of Oroayree; in the middle of it the low land is about a furlong wide, narrowing towards the extremes. The shore is a flat rock; the coast bending out and in. I stopped at a chief's house; his name is Noc Noc; and had the following account: namely, two matteynas and twenty-two tees, equal to one hundred and forty-four inhabitants. This chief had a double canoe just finished; it was the largest I had seen, measuring in length fifty-eight feet, exclusive of a long board which runs over the fore part; the stern was twelve feet high, though a-midships only three feet and a half. The two were fastened together in the usual method by rafters, upon which a platform was made, where a house was intended to be placed for the principal persons to sit or sleep in; and this I suppose is one of the larger war canoes, though not suited for expert manoeuvres.

Having done my business here, I intended to have gone a few miles further, but had not proceeded many yards when I met Poppo, the tayo of Dr. Gillham, who entreated me to stay all night at his house; which offer I accepted, being rather fatigued with travelling over bad roads all the day. Poppo was very affiduous to entertain me well. A pig was instantly killed, and a comfortable bed prepared. Here about forty people collected. The supper, which was very good, was served up with salt water. Before I went to rest I made my kind host and his wife each a small present, and in return they gave me the cloth which composed my bed, and also an upper garment.

13th. At daylight we renewed our journey. Poppo accompanied us to the end of the district, which is at a hill called Annaboo: from hence I first got a sight of Tiaraboo, but still at a considerable distance from it. The district we were now come to is called Wah-wainah. The low land is here about a quarter of a mile broad, and the same in length; behind are lofty hills, forming two valleys, whence run large rivulets of water, which, after intersecting the low ground in several places, unite near the sea, and form a deep and rapid stream. In fording it my man Charles was up to the middle, so that in rainy weather it must be impracticable to cross at all. The coast along the district bends in; the beach is black coral sand, and on it the sea broke violently.

We stopped at a house as large as that of the missionaries, where were several natives, but none possessed the intelligence we wanted; therefore one was dispatched to bring a proper person, who informed us that in the district were four chiefs, of whom Roob was principal; each is over a matteyna; two of these matteynas have eleven tees each, one fifteen, and one sixteen; the number of people is accordingly three hundred and forty-two.
Proceeding thence, the next hill (or cliff) we came to is called Boo-te-awmoo, which divides the latter district from Hedeah, which last runs quite to the isthmus. Off this place where we now were, and distant about a mile from the shore, there lie two small islets; the westernmost is called Booroo, the other Whare-arra-roo. From these Charles informed me that a reef runs quite down to Matavai; it lies about two miles off shore, and has in some places only four and five fathoms water upon it.

Turning the point of Boo-te-awmoo, the land bends southward towards the isthmus. When we had got a little way we stopped at Peter’s friend’s house; he was by trade a fisherman, who supplied his neighbours with fish, and received from them canoes, hogs, fruit, roots, and cloth. He had been on the reefs, and came in while we dined with some lobsters and mullet, of which he gave us a part, and I paid him with a pair of scissors. At this house were about twenty persons collected, including the family. We left this place; and as I walked along the district, I observed more weeds and underwood than in any part of the road which I had passed in while we sailed with some lobsters and mullet, which obstructed all passage but by the sea-side. The houses were thinly scattered, and as thinly inhabited; in most of them they were building canoes, but none of a large kind. They all had iron tools; the hatchets were taken off the shelves, and fixed as adzes. I inquired for a stone hatchet, which will soon be a curiosity to themselves; but they had none: also how long it took them to build a canoe with iron tools; they answered, about one moon. I then asked them how long they formerly were in doing it with their stone hatchets: at this they laughed heartily, and counted ten moons. When we had reached nearly opposite to Bougainville’s harbour, the natives directed us to a chief’s house, where we found Inna Madua, who, since the death of her husband, is chief over all Hedeh: though this was not her dwelling-house, the nevertheless assumed the command, and ordered a dinner instantly to be dinned. In the interim the old chief gave us the name of every matteyna in the district, from Boo-te-awmoo to the isthmus, as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>Matteyna</th>
<th>Titi</th>
<th>Matteyna</th>
<th>Titi</th>
<th>Matteyna</th>
<th>Titi</th>
<th>Matteyna</th>
<th>Titi</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Raa-mun</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>Tootah</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Rah-serey</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Matataheyabo</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Raa-mun</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Raa-mun</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Raa-mun</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Raa-mun</td>
<td>6</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>3</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>Tootah-boa</td>
<td>5</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

This may be thought but a small number for so large a district, especially when the magnitude of Captain Cook’s and Lieutenant Corner’s estimations is considered; but according to the best of my judgment, after passing through it, and paying every attention, I think even this small number exceeds the truth; and surely it is no argument in favour of great population, that at this house where I got the account, no more than thirty people should be collected at any time while I staid, including Inna Madua’s retinue, and those whom eager curiosity brought to see me.

When we had dined, Peter informed me that it was too late to proceed, as he knew of no good lodging-house but at too great a distance; therefore we fasted where we were for the night. My bed and Peter’s was laid at one end of the house. Inna Madua presented me with more cloth for sheeting, and I gave her in return a pair of scissors, a looking-glass, and some trifles I had purposely brought to...
answer such occasions. In this house was an epitome of their general employments; at one end women were pading cloth together; some men were making fanet and lines, while some slept, and others were drinking ava; this last they drink in an uncool manner, by one, two, or three at a time, and out of a small cocoa-nut shell; whereas at the Friendly Islands, one or two hundred form a ring, and from a large bowl they share nearly all alike; but it seems to be so scarce here, that none except the earees can be lavishly addicted to it. This evening I learnt that, besides the members of the arreoy society, it is the common practice among all ranks to strangfe infants the moment they are born. A perpetrator of this horrid act was among those whom curiosity drew to visit us: she was a good-looking woman, and esteemed by the natives a great beauty, which I supposo to be the inducement that tempted her to murder her child; for here the number of women bearing no proportion to the men, those esteemed handsome are courted with great gifts, and get so accustomed to change their husbands, to go with them from place to place, and run after the diversions of the island, that rather than be debarred these pleasures, they flite a parent's feelings, and murder their tender offspring. As no odium whatever is attached to this unnatural deed, many hundreds born into the world are never suffered to see the light. When either father or mother are disposed to have the child, they sometimes succeed, but not always; for if the woman says she will not rear the child, the man in general submits to her will; on the other hand, when the proves humane, and he is steady to his cruel purpose, the infant is often saved, for the orders matterst to some neighbours shall interpose, and if the child is not infantly put to death, they dare not do it afterwards; but the most inoffensible become as fond of their children as any refined people can be. I shall only notice farther, that both parties do oftener make up their minds to save the male than the female, which partially accounts for the disproportion of the sexes, and is none of the least causes of the thin population; for the men that are not wealthy in cloth, hogs, or

**FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE**

July.] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

English articles, wherewith to purchase a wife, must go without one; and this leads them to prosecute the great crime of onanism to an excessive degree, and renders them unfit to cohabit with women: but all their vices of this nature are too shocking to be related. When the arreories destroy their children, they say it is to retain the privileges of their society: but what excuse can those make who are not of their number? It is said of Gelon, king of Syracuse, that having conquered Carthage, he made it the chief article in the treaty of peace, that they should abolish the custom of sacrificing their children. And while humanity reflects and shudders at the behaviour of the Onthesians, one can hardly help indulging a wish that either the sword of a Gelon, or rather the spirit of the Prince of Peace, were applied to oblige them to relinquish their abominable and unnatural practices.

14th. About six in the morning we arose, picked up our things, and proceeded on our journey. Inna Madina accompanied us to her proper dwelling, which lies near a mile farther on. Here I thought I got a sight of an European garden; the plots of avo-ground were laid out in such nice order; each bed formed regular parallelograms, trenches two feet deep, and disposed with a great degree of taste; the whole enclosed with a fence of bamboo. Her house, which was full one hundred feet long, stood on the east side of the garden. At this place we parted from her, and walked about two miles along an irregular coast, where the low land in most places is very narrow, and hardly a bread-fruit or cocoa-nut tree to be seen. We then came to another dangerous cliff called Pah-rah-tou-tea. As we paffed along the side next the sea, the footing was extremely narrow, and the fight below tremendous. Descending the opposite side, a valley opens, running between lofty hills, with a triangle piece of low land near a fur-long in length, and a river of considerable depth and breadth. Close to the sea the passage is narrow; there we forded, and ascended a steep hill, from the summit of which we had the choice of two roads; the inner one was much out of our way, and by the outer we must
defend the cliffs: however, thinking this no worse than those we had passed already, we took the latter, but presently came to a most alarming place, about six yards wide, where there appeared neither place for hands nor feet. Here I was at first afraid, and had thoughts of going back; but with the help of the Otaheiteans, who are used to this work, I got along safe. Observing an old man had followed us from Inna Madia’s house, Peter inquired what he wanted; he answered, that Inna’s mother had ordered him to follow, and if I gave any thing away in the district, he was to seize it, and take it to her.

When we had got within a short mile of the isthmus, in passing a few houses, an aged woman, mother to the young man who carried my linen, met us, and, to express her joy at seeing her son, struck herself several times on the head with a shark’s tooth, till the blood flowed plentifully down her breast and shoulders, whilst the son beheld it with entire insensibility. I was not aware of this action to prevent it, but as it continued it without mercy on herself, I spoke to them angrily, and obliged her to desist. The son seeing that I was not pleased with what was done, observed coolly, that it was the custom of Otaheite. When we had gone about a furlong farther we put up for the night, at a house which lately belonged to a woman with whom Peter had lived, but she was now dead. She had been wife to Richard Sinnet, one of the unfortunate mutineers, who was lost in the Pandora, and by him had two fine girls, who are now about six or seven years old; they are of a fair mulatto complexion, and very lively and talkative. Since the mother’s death Peter has taken care of them; they were glad to see him, and received each a small looking-glass, as did also the woman of the house. When we had retied a few minutes Peter informed them that since the sun was at such a height we had not eaten any thing: this being known, it was impossible to behold with indifference the joy which those kind people expressed on having an opportunity of entertaining me; they instantly drest a couple of fowls for my dinner, and a pig for the...
fame of which I have noticed before. Besides this, it merits the name of a desolate district, from the few hovels it contains, and its thin population. However, the place where I now was might be deemed an exception; it is about a mile long, and a furlong wide; and is better furnished with hovels, inhabitants, and fruit-trees, than any place of equal size in the district.

When we returned to the house we found a servant whom Pomärre had sent to meet and conduct me to the place in Tiaraboo where himself and retinue were preparing for a great feast; but as this took me out of the way of my intended route, I should not have consented to it, had not Peter frequently mentioned the precipices at the east end of the island as impassable by any but the natives; who, though even accustomed to it, were frequently dashed to pieces; and that, without running that risk, the account I wanted could be equally well got from the chiefs of the several districts, who would be with Pomärre on the south side of that peninsula. Therefore I agreed to accompany the man across the isthmus next morning.

15th. At daybreak we rose. Peter then asked me whether I durst sleep in a house where there was a corpse; and shewed me the skull of Richard Sinnet’s wife, wrapped in cloth, hanging to the roof of the house. It seems that he died at Eimö, and was there put upon a tupapow till the body was dried; the head was then cut off, and brought to this place, where he had possessed several acres of ground.

Departing from hence, we ascended a hill, moderately high on the Otaheite side, and walked about a mile over a fine piece of land, which slopes gently from the middle class of hills to the isthmus, and is all along covered with a stratum of rich brown mould, fit for the purposes of agriculture than any spot on the island; a few trees are scattered upon it; but on large spaces there is nothing but grass and fern. The isthmus seemed covered with trees quite across; and beyond it, on the Tiaraboo side, the land for three or four miles appeared exactly like that I was now upon, covered with fern, and level at top, but broken, or rent as it were, into chasms or deep hollows, and rising with a gradual ascent towards the lofty mountains which occupy the middle and eastern divisions of Tiaraboo. At the south side of the isthmus, where we defcended to cross, a cove about sixty yards wide, and of depth sufficient to admit a ship, runs close up to the low neck: it would be an excellent place for a ship to moor in, if a safe passage could be found between the large flakes of coral which lie without it; and I do not think this impossible, though, except commerce were brought thither, it would be unnecessary.

Besides this cove, we crossed two more shallow ones, and then entered the first district of Tiaraboo, called Tea-howtow. Here the low ground is so marshy, that at every step we sunk almost knee-deep. It is also covered with underwood, but abounding in bread-fruit and cocoa-nuts. Further eastward the ground is more dry and hard; and we fell in with a few hovels, where canoes were building, and the women beating cloth: they informed us that the district contained one matteyna and thirteen tees, which make eighty-four inhabitants. The next district is Wyoo-roo; the chief’s name Vee-vee Roo-rah: it has fix matteynas, containing forty tees, which make two hundred and seventy-four inhabitants; and with respect to the soil, fruits, &c. is exactly like Tea-howtow: the low land in both is scarce a furlong wide, and the coast waveing.

It now began raining hard, which obliged us to stop where was a chief who knew Peter. His canoe was hauled upon the beach, and the little houfle taken off it for him and his wife to sleep in. And this is their common practice; so that wherever they land, if in a large canoe, they always have a houle in readiness. While we sat under an adjoining shed, and the chief and I were exchanging presents, a boy picked my pocket, but, finding himself discovered, he dropped the booty; however, the chief was so enraged, that he immediately went in pursuit of the boy, and intended to punish him severely if he caught him.

The rain subsiding, we set off again for Mattahwey, which was the next district, and where Pomärre was with his retinue. On our
way we were met by the young king, son of Pomärre, and his betrothed wife, both carried upon men's shoulders; he asked for an axe, scissors, &c. but I had none to spare, therefore desired him to go to the pahie (thip), and they should be given him. He also asked Peter several questions concerning the places and people he had seen on his voyage with us. At last we reached the head-quarters, which were no more than a few canoe-houses and temporary huts, the best of which was occupied by Pomärre; and to it I was conducted. As for himself, they said he was at a house farther on, busy with his servants in preparing cloth, but that a messenger was gone to inform him of my arrival. Accordingly he came in a short time, expressed much joy on seeing me, and saluted noses; he also inquired for the captain, and most on board. When I asked him his reasons for not going to Matavai, he answered, that at present he could not possibly go, it being a very busy time with him, having to collect canoes, cloth, hogs, &c. to give away among the different chiefs and arrears, who would attend him to the great feast at Pappara, which was to take place in a few days, and for which all the island was looking up to him. This excuse I had reason to believe, for public care seemed engraved on his countenance. However, as he could not go himself, he had sent his prime minister Iddelah; who, I told him, would not receive so many things as if he had gone himself. He said, he did not mind the things so much as the captain's friendship.

I had desired Peter, that if a mawhoo came in our way, he should point him out; and here there happened to be one in Pomärre's train. He was dressed like a woman, and mimicked the voice and every peculiarity of the sex. I asked Pomärre what he was, who answered, "Taana, mawhoo," that is, a man, a mawhoo. As I fixed my eyes upon the fellow, he hid his face; this I at first construed into shame, but found it afterwards to be a wimanish trick. These mawhoos chose this vile way of life when young; putting on the dress of a woman, they follow the same employments, are

under the same prohibitions with respect to food, &c. and seek the courtship of men the same as women do, nay, are more jealous of the men who cohabit with them, and always refuse to sleep with women. We are obliged here to draw a veil over other practices too horrible to mention. These mawhoos, being only six or eight in number, are kept by the principal chiefs. So depraved are these poor heathens, that even their women do not despise these fellows, but form friendships with them. This one was tayo to Iddelah.

And here we are furnished with another impediment to population, and may ask how such a people can possibly have a numerous progeny.

At this place most of the chiefs of Tiaraboo were assembled; their canoes were hauled upon the beach; and before their huts vast quantities of provisions were hung upon stakes driven into the ground; and more were arriving from the neighbouring districts; all which was perhaps no faint image of the ancient Hellenic and Grecian camp.

From the different chiefs I got an account of Tiaraboo, as follows:
At night I spread my bed in the same house where Peter, Pomarre, and several others lay, but little rest could be had; as one or other was talking all the night. Pomarre asked Peter many shrewd questions concerning the places and things he had seen on the voyage, and more particularly about the natives of Tongataboo, as the red feathers, and various manufactures from thence, have given them a high idea of that people. Nothing grows on Otaheite but what they mentioned, to know if they had the same; and whether they had good land, good canoes, and fine women. They also inquired much about the Marqueñas, and spoke of the people there as being as far inferior to themselves in civilization as they really are to Europeans. However, they appeared highly delighted with the relation Peter gave them of these countries: but when he spoke of the wonderful things of Europe, they at first expressed surprise; but not being able to form conceptions of the things he related, their pleasure quickly slackened; whereas the people of the Friendly Islands and Marquesas are in almost all things similar to themselves; alike in person, manners, and dress; are tanned, have canoes, bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, and plantains, as well as they; and without these articles they admit of no country to be really valuable, though they do not deny our superiority in every thing else. At this time Pomarre and his retinue particularly regretted their want of ships; and knowledge to conduct them to foreign countries; and, addressing himself to me, said, in a tone of concern, that they were able to go no further than Uleriua or Hauheine; and that at the risk of being driven they knew not whither, to perish: whereas we could sail for many moons, and in the darkest nights and strongest gales, and after all could come exactly to Otaheite. These were the very ideas he expressed. In answer to which, I told him, that we once were in the same predicament, and knew nothing; but that good men brought the speaking paper into our country, and taught us to understand it, by means of which we learnt to know the true God, to build and conduct ships, and to make axes, knives, scissors, and the various things which he saw we possessed: also that his sayo...
Captain Cook had told the earoes of Preitane, that neither the king of Otaheite nor his people understood the speaking paper, nor how to do these things. Therefore they had, out of real regard for him, sent the good men at Matavai, to teach him, his children, and people, as we ourselves were taught; that, as chief of the island and regent for his son, it behovetl him to send his children and the natives to attend to their instructions; for, if they neglected the present opportunity, no more good men would come to them, but they would remain in ignorance for ever.

I believe he paid as much attention to this as lay ill his power, and said it was my ty (good), and so went to sleep.

16th. In the morning it rained very hard, which confined us to our quarters till nine o'clock, when the chief and all his servants set off to work at the cloth; and as I intended to rest all this day, I followed soon after, and found them buffed on large pieces of cloth, about thirty yards long, and four broad; they had them stretched along the ground, and doubling each, by laying others upon them, cemented them with a paste. Poorre was as busy as any. Here I saw the mawhoo also, who wrought with equal dexterity as the women.

At a proper time of day a fine roast pig was brought for dinner, part of which was given me, the rest went to the chief; but I observed those around him took so large a share, that himself made but a scanty dinner: and this may be the reason why his head man brought victuals in the dark, on the two nights I stayed there. It seemed that the hogs were not plentiful here, or they were keeping them till the feast.

17th. I rose to take leave of Pomarre, and informed him of my intention to return to the ship by the south side of Otaheite nooie, and would therefore thank him for the use of a canoe. He immediately ordered one of the best single ones, which Peter was to keep after our arrival at Matavai; he also put in it two large hogs, and sent a man to Wyere (the first district we should land at) to prepare another. I had given him a pair of scissors and what I could spare; and now he begged a piece of cloth, which the chief gave me where we stopped on account of the rain; having got it, he called his eye on what I used as a bed, as if desirous of that also; but observing his disposition began to work, I had him farewell, not without feeling on the occasion. He was much affected, and said, if possible he would come and see the captain, and desired me to speak a good word for Idaeth, that she might receive opys (axes), paonies (scissors), &c.

Leaving this place we paddled to the weftward, and having a strong current in our favour were soon past the isthmus, and landed in the first district, called Wyere, over which Maahehanoo (a woman) presides as chief; to her the son of Towha is betrothed: they are both young, perhaps fifteen years old; he has the most lively, piercing countenance of any youth I saw.

A person named Tootahah, who is also descended from the earoes, lived here as guardian to Towha and Maahehanoo; he seemed well acquainted with many of our customs, and could speak several English words. Previous to bringing a young hog which they had prepared for dinner, Tootahah drove four stakes in the ground, making a table of boards upon them, placed an English plate before me, and tried to apologize for not having a knife and fork, and such things as he knew we had on board. Thus, for the first time, I dined in style among them. After dinner they put a pig into the canoe, agreeably to the order of Pomarre, and made some other presents, which I repaid as well as I could, and left them.

This is a very good district; the low land is of various breadths, as twenty yards, a furlong, and in some places half a mile. Next to it are hills moderately high, forming valleys of small extent; and beyond are the lofty craggy mountains, which are covered with trees to the summit. The districit westward of this is called Wyoreede, and answers the same description; the hill which separates them is called Rooamo, where the land bends in, and a little further a point runs off, and a quarter of a mile without it is the small island.
2.06. FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

Ote'arrawah. Another small islet lies about a mile further along the coast, called Tahmow.

As it now began to rain hard, we landed to take shelter in the houses, which are here, as in other places, but thinly scattered: when it cleared up, Peter and I walked along the beach, while the toutous paddled the canoe. Foot-paths intersected the low ground, but it was bad walking on them, on account of the weeds and long grass being wet with the rain; and the trees in some places standing close to the sea, obstructed the way by the beach, and forced us again into the canoe; and just as it was dark we reached Attemoonoo, a small district situated between Wyoreede and Pappara, and there hauled up the canoe. We thence walked to Temârre's house at Pappara, and found him quite intoxicated with ava. When they had brought lights I said my bed down, and being tired with the fatigues of the day, went immediately to rest.

18th. Temârre had risen early, and gone to a place considerably to the westward; to worship at a morai he had there, but left word to dress a pig for me. In the interim we applied to a intelligent elderly chief for the number of matteynas and tees which we had paired, who counted them, as follows, viz.:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
<th></th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>Wye're</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>42</td>
<td>444</td>
<td>Maahâhanoo.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Wyoreede</td>
<td>13</td>
<td>151</td>
<td>1044</td>
<td>Tuyrâhêey, wife of Te'mârre.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Attemono</td>
<td>2</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>156</td>
<td>Temârre. The above are also under him, and he is under Pommare, or Otoo.</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Pappara</td>
<td>17</td>
<td>157</td>
<td>1044</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ah-aheinah</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>105</td>
<td>678</td>
<td></td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

After waiting till near eleven o'clock for breakfast, I found, on enquiry, that the hog they were dressing was so large as to require three hours more to do it sufficiently; therefore I was obliged to content myself without breakfast, and had but a faint hope of a dinner without staying all day for it.

TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

The great morai of Oberea stands on a point a little to the eastward: thither I went, to have a view of so great a curiosity. Oto has one of his representative houses here; and in poking it, some of his servants, judging whether I was going, followed me, and were very affiduous in explaining every thing to me. This morai is an enormous pile of stone-work, in form of a pyramid, on a parallelogram area; it has a flight of ten steps quite round it, the first of which, from the ground, is six feet high, the rest about five feet; it is in length, at the base, two hundred and seventy feet, width at ditto ninety-four feet; at the top it is one hundred and eighty feet long, and about six wide; the steps are composed partly of regular rows of squared coral stones about eighteen inches high, and partly with blueish-coloured pebble stones nearly quite round, of a hard texture, all about six inches diameter, and in their natural unshewn state: this is the outside. The inside, that is to say, what composes the solid mass (for it has no hollow space), is composed of stones of various kinds and shapes. It is a wonderful structure; and it must have cost them immense time and pains to bring such a quantity of stones together, and particularly to square the coral of the steps with the tools they had when it was raised; for it was before iron came among them: and as they were ignorant of mortar, or cement, it required all the care they have taken to fit the stones regularly to each other, that it might stand. When Sir Joseph Banks saw this place, there was on the centre of the summit a representation of a bird carved in wood, and close by the figure of a fish carved in stone; but both are now gone, and the stones of the upper steps are in many places fallen: the walls of the court have also gone much to ruin, and the flat pavement is only in some places discernible. The above gentleman, speaking of this court, says, 'the pyramid constitutes one side of a court, or square, the sides of which were nearly equal; and the whole was walled in and paved with flat stones; notwithstanding which pavement, several plantains and trees, which the natives call etoa, grew within the
At present there is within this square a house, called the house of the Eatōa, in which a man constantly resides. Sir Joseph further says, "that at a small distance to the westward of this edifice was another paved square, that contained several small flaggs, called ewattas by the natives, which appeared to be altars whereon they placed the offerings to their gods," and that he afterwards saw whole hogs placed upon these flaggs or altars. My guide led me to this spot, which appears also to have gone much to ruin: he showed me the altar, which is a heap of stones, and how they lay their offering upon it; he then went a few yards back, and laying hold of an upright stone, like a grave-stone, he knelt with one knee, and looking upwards, began to call on the Eatōa, by crying, "Who90, whooo;" and by afterwards making a whistling noise, intimated it to be the way in which the Eatōa answered them.

The grand moral formerly belonged to Oammo and Oberea, then to their descendant Temāre, and now, since the conquest, to Otoo. It was past noon when I got back to the house, and Temāre had not returned from his worship; and, worse than that, there was no prospect of any thing to eat: therefore I proposed to set off, when his wife entreated me to stay a while longer. This being complied with, they brought the hog smoking hot, but nearly raw, though it must have been covered up at least four hours, which was owing to its size, being large enough to serve forty men. Thus both I and my companions suffered by the excessive kindness of our host.

When we had taken our leave, and walked about a mile along the beach, we met Temāre on his way home; and when Peter told him that we had waited purposely for him, he seemed much afraid lest I should be angry, and asked if I was not. On satisfying him that I was not, he then inquired into the cause of our visit to Pomāre, in a way that bespoke jealousy, envy, and fear of that chief. After a little conversation we parted. Temāre is supposed to be possessed of the Eatōa, and, in conformity to that supposition, speaks in such a way that scarcely any one can understand him. This at first made me think that he used that peculiar language said to be spoken by the priests; but both the Swedes insist that the priests know no other than the common language, and can always be understood, except when, for the sake of mystification, they utter their speeches in a singling tone; and that even the young girls can make their songs equally unintelligible. It is also said of this chief, that he is now meditating revenge on Pomāre, on account of the death of his father and his own defeat; and in hope of obtaining success he has chosen Mr. Main for his tayo, whom he has heard spoken of as a military man, and to whom he has made several great presents.

We stopped at Pappara for the night in the house of my tayo Wyrede: as I had not seen her since my late arrival, she expressed much joy on the occasion, ordered a pig to be instantly dressed, and made me a present of several things; among others, a quantity of human hair made into fine finnet. Here were a number of an-eoies with their separate wives, who, by the attachment they shewed for their husbands, seemed to disallow the affection of promiscuous connexion, with which they are charged. Their great numbers made the house, which was one hundred and forty feet long, appear like a little village, where each claimed the place on which his mat was spread; and almost all were employed in making mats, finnet, &c. As soon as it was dark they brought lights, and danced and sung till near midnight, and perhaps would have continued all the night, had I not begged my tayo to cause them to desist; for the drums appear not to disturb their sleep; but, when tired with dancing, they lie down, and a fresh party rises to the sport; and in this manner the arrows usually spend their nights, and thus they train the youths to the same irregular living.

19th. The morning being fine and clear, we walked to the end of the district, and crossing a little cove, entered on Ahaleinah. The point which, with the cove, separates the two districts, is called
Abooroo. Pappara is a district of the middling class; for extent of
low land and fertility it is better than the north-eastern districts, or
thole of Tiaraboo; but inferior to those I afterwards came to, viz.
Athaahoro and Opärre: however, the low land seems not to be two
furlongs in width in any place. Ahaheinah has a ftraight coast; in
several parts the hills project to the sea, leaving a narrow beach or
foot-path at their base, and where there is low land it is no where
above a hundred yards wide. A hill called Weyyah-toto separates it
from Mahr.ow, a small division of Athaahoro: here Captain Wea­
otherhead landed in his boats after the loss of the Matilda, and had
his money and clothes taken from him by the natives.

Athaahoro is divided into two or three departments, over which
chiefs subordinate to Temárre preside. In the account given me they
divided it only into two parts, of which the south-east contains fifteen
matteynas and one hundred and fifty tees, and the north part ten mat­
teynas and ninety-three tees, including the valleys. Here the
shore is waving, and forms a segment of a circle as it bends round to
Tetaha. The reef lies a considerable way off, and within it the
water is smooth and shallow, and the bottom a fine white sand inter­
persed with beautiful coral, which makes the rowing over it delight­
ful. Here the island puts on its most beautiful appearance. A
large border of low ground is covered with cocoa, palms, and
bread-fruit. Extensive valleys run considerably inland, and the fides
of the hills, which form them, are covered with fruit-trees, and
their tops with gras. The lofty mountains in the higher region are
also covered with trees, or broken into awful precipices; and by their
various shapes and distances, and the clouds, which hover over them
all the day, add a sublime grandeur to the beauty of the scene below.

We landed at a chief's house opposite the great valley, and before
dinner set off with the chief to see a morai, where it was said the
ark of the Eatooa was deposited, and which had been conjeated by
some visitors to bear a similitude in form to the ark of the covenant.
Though it was about noon, in the road we went we felt little of the
heat of the sun: lofty bread-fruit trees afforded their pleasant shade;
and, as there was but little underwood, we felt no annoyance, except
from a few flies. Turmeric and ginger abounded, also the wild
cotton tree. The morai stands on the north side of the valley, about
a mile or more from the beach: it is erected on level ground, enclosed
with a square wooden fence, each side of which may measure thirty
or forty yards. About one half of the platform next the interior side
of the square is paved, and on this pavement, near in the middle,
there stands an altar upon sixteen wooden pillars, each eight feet high;
it is forty feet long and seven feet wide: on the top of the pillars the
platform for the offerings is laid, with thick matting upon it, which
overhanging each side, forms a deep fringe all around it. Upon this
matting are offerings of whole hogs, turtle, large fish, plantains,
young cocoa-nuts, &c., the whole in a state of putrefaction, which
fends an offensive smell all round the place. A large space
on one
side of the fence was broken down, and a heap of rough stones laid
in the gap; upon these stones, and in a line with the fence, were placed
what they call Tees; these were boards from six
to
seven feet high,
cut into various shapes. At a corner near this stood a house and
two sheds, where men constantly attended: We entered the house,
and found at one end the little house, or ark of the Eatooa; it was made
exactly like those they set on their canoes, but smaller, being
about four feet long, and three in height and breadth. As it
contained nothing but a few pieces of cloth, I inquired where they
had hid the Eatooa: they answered, that it had been taken in the
morning to a small morai near the water-side, but that they would
immediately bring it, which they did in about half an hour. Though
I had not viewed this place without feeling for the poor creatures,
yet when they laid their Eatooa on the ground I could hardly restrain
a laugh. It was in shape exactly like a sailor's hammock lashed up,
and composed of two parts, the larger one just the size of the house,
and the leffer, which was lashed upon it, was about half that size;
at the ends were fastened little bunches of red and yellow feathers,
the offerings of the wealthy. They seeing me smile, laughed heartily themselves, but seemingly only to please me; for it was from no idea of the insignificance of their Eaoa. I told them it was not, could not be a god, because it was nothing but the cloth and finnet which themselves had made, and could no more hear, speak, nor do them good or harm, than could the cloth they wore. At this they seemed rather perplexed, but still affirmed that it was a great Eaoa; and when he was angry their trees bore no bread-fruit, and many ills came upon them; but not a word in reference to a future state. I wanted much to see what was in the inside; but they said, none but Manne Manne and a few more durst open it. However, they told Peter that it contained nothing but red feathers, a young plantain, and a bunch of young cocoa-nuts before they broke the leaf. Several bread-fruit and etoa trees stand within the same square.

On our way back we called to see the body of Orepiah, as preserved in a tapapow: he had been many months dead, and was now in a perfectly dry state. The man to whom the performance of this operation was entrusted lived close by, and came near when he saw us. He seemed quite willing to oblige me; and asked if I would like to see the body unshrouded; for, as it lay, nothing could be seen but the feet. Answering in the affirmative, he drew it out upon the uncovered stage, and took several wrappers of cloth off it; and, laughing all the while, placed the corpse in a fitting posture. The body had been opened, but the skin everywhere else was unbroken, and, adhering close to the bones, it appeared like a skeleton covered with oil-cloth. It had little or no smell, and would, notwithstanding the heat of the climate, remain so preserved a considerable time. The method they take for this is, to clear the body of the entrails, brain, &c.; then washing it well, they rub it daily outside and in with cocoa-nut oil, till the flesh is quite dried up; after which they leave it to the all-destroying hand of Time. This tapapow was constructed by driving four long stakes in the ground, about six feet asunder, lengthwise, and four in breadth: besides these,

two others, not so long by three feet, are driven on a line, and six feet from the former four: a stage is then made at the height of the shortest two, and the corpse being laid at one end, a thatched roof is raised upon the four highest stakes, to shelter it from the rain; the vacant part of the stage is to pull it upon, either for rubbing with the oil, or exhibiting it to the friends and relations of the deceased. On the adjoining trees, plantains and bread-fruit hung for the use of the dead. I asked them, where they thought his spirit, or thinking part, had gone? At this they smiled, and said, “Harre po,” that is, “Gone to the night.”

A little before dark we reached the further end of Atahoowoo, and put up at a little place which Manne Manne had given to Peter, who ordered what he pleased and had it immediately; and here we left the canoe, as it blew too fresh to row it against the easterly wind. In the morning we rose early: a couple of fowls were ready dressed, on which we breakfasted, and set off with a hope of reaching the ship, if nothing occurred to prevent it.

We entered Tetaha by ascending a hill called Opeyhowe. The district almost throughout is hilly, affording but little low land; nevertheless it is well inhabited, which may be owing to its situation, lying between the two best districts on the island; though I apprehend even its own produce is sufficient for the people who live upon it. It has twelve matteynas and one hundred and thirty tees. Pomare is the chief. The best grove of cocoa-nut trees hereabouts, and a great number of bread-fruit, are said to have been planted by him and Ideah when they were young. We passed one spot where Pomare had lately a house, which contained a vast quantity of his stores, and had been maliciously set on fire and burnt to the ground. At a place called Weyo-woye, which terminates the district, there is a house three hundred and ninety-seven feet in length, and forty-eight wide; twenty wooden pillars, each twenty-one feet high, support the middle of the roof; and one hundred and twenty-four, each ten feet high, support the sides and eaves of the
The roof: the rafters upon which the roof is laid are about six inches thick, and placed twenty inches apart: a wooden wall, or fence, encloses the whole. Here, it is said, they on great occasions hold feasts for days together, when they almost destroy all the hogs on the island. The next district is Opārre, which is well flourished with provisions and inhabitants, having sixteen mateynas and one hundred and ninety-nine tees, including two valleys. It has also a moral, but it is said to be inferior to that in Attahooroo; therefore, as it rained, I did not go to see it. Being forced to take shelter in a house, I saw there a man, one of whose legs was walled to a size little less than a man's body; the other leg was of its natural size, and the person cheerful, and busy in making a mat. One of Otoo's boat-houses was adjoining: it contained a war canoe sixty feet long, which is a little larger than that at Otyearee; and these two, and one from Ulietea of a different construction, were the only large ones I saw in the course of my journey, though I saw several of a middling size, yet not so many as I expected.

The last difficulty was to get over Taharra y, or One Tree hill, as the rain had made the ascent very slippery: From thence we walked along the beach to the missionary house, and got our closing account from Pytah. Matvaï has twenty-seven mateynas and one hundred and ten tees, which makes eight hundred and twenty-two inhabitants. Therefore the population is as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>District</th>
<th>Mateynas</th>
<th>Tees</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>1. Whyripoo</td>
<td>4</td>
<td>6</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>2. Whapilikamo</td>
<td>8</td>
<td>12</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>3. Whawawey</td>
<td>12</td>
<td>18</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>4. Hwey</td>
<td>16</td>
<td>24</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>5. Hahbahoona</td>
<td>20</td>
<td>30</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>6. Honoowhah</td>
<td>24</td>
<td>36</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>7. Nahna Nahnoo</td>
<td>28</td>
<td>42</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>8. Ot-yayye</td>
<td>32</td>
<td>48</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>9. Waa ah-behinah</td>
<td>36</td>
<td>54</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>10. Hohnah</td>
<td>40</td>
<td>60</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

Total of men, women, and children, in Otaheite | 12,042
Ditto in Taharra | 4,008
Total on the whole island | 16,050
CHAPTER XIV.

Transitions at Otaheite till their Departure.

The intention of writing these pages being chiefly to preserve the circumstances of a voyage which from its nature and object is interesting to many, I shall with this view notice what occurrences passed at the ship during my absence, also in the subsequent days of our stay; and then take leave of Otaheite, without saying more on their customs and manners than what lies interspersed in the journal already detailed, as all former navigators have enlarged on this subject; and if errors can now be corrected, it will certainly be best done from the letters of the missionaries, whose residence among the natives for five months gave them greatly the advantage over us at the ship.

July 12th. It being the Rev. Mr. Lewis's turn to attend the boat employed in landing the goods, he expressed a fear that the division of them, after the departure of the ship, would occasion some uneasiness. In the course of the day Mr. Cavor and Henry waited upon the captain, and spoke to the same effect, giving it as their opinion, that, to prevent anything disagreeable happening, the most prudent way would be for them to make a division immediately; but this being only a proposal, the adoption of which the captain left entirely to themselves, it was no more spoken of. Mrs. Hodges and Mrs. Henry also visited us to-day; and in the evening they all went on shore in the pinnace. Landed the goods, and received from our friends the natives a plentiful supply of fruit, &c.

13th. To-day the captain and fix of the missionaries examined the district of Matavai for the purpose of finding the most eligible spot on which to build a house; but as there were several equally eligible, no preference was given as yet to any.

14th. The weather serene and pleasant. Information was brought to the ship, that the young King had come to Matavai; but a report spreading that he had sacrificed a man, the missionaries expressed their marked disapprobation of the horrid act, which so terrified him, that he was going off for Pappara, when the captain landed, and stopped him as he and his queen ran along the beach. On being asked why he was going away so soon, he answered, that, as the missionaries were angry, he supposed the captain was so too. The captain told him that it would be very wrong to sacrifice a man: he denied the fact. The captain entreated him to commit no such cruelty, and besought him to return, promising that he would send him a canoe, which he had brought purposely from Tongatapoo. This both reconciled and pleased him; he accordingly took up his residence in Matavai. Had he gone off in fear, there was no knowing what the consequences might be, as he had only to lay the canoe on the districts, to cut off all our supplies; a circumstance which, though not experienced by us, has been severely felt by some of their visitors.

15th. Pleasant weather. The captain and the four appointed missionaries employed in dividing the goods, the men heaving out of the hold, and putting the Otaheite division into the brethren's boat. In the forenoon Otoo and his wife came alongside; the Friendly Island canoe was given to him, and after he had surveyed it near two hours, he got into it, and went on shore seemingly much pleased. About four in the afternoon, Sam (the little cabin-boy) ran from the ship, supposed to have gone out at the cabin-window. This boy being of a short stature, was apprehensive of falling into want in his own country; therefore he preferred settling where nakedness was no hardship, and the vegetable diet at least of the island could always be procured at ease. He left behind him a few incoherent lines mentioning his design, wherein he likewise says, that
if he can do the missionaries no good, he will do them no harm. About the same time the captain had his dressing-box with all his shaving utensils stolen out of the cabin, and at first supposed the boy concerned in the theft, but it afterwards proved he was innocent. Thermometer 71°. Received from Mauaroa, and his wife Wywede ʻAwah, two small pigs, with fruit, &c. also presents from several others.

16th. The day fine and pleasant. Mr. Jefferson and Eyre chal­lains for the day on board; the former in the forenoon, the latter in the afternoon.

17th. Fine weather. Landed some goods, and received by the return of the flat-bottomed boat two loads of stone ballast. Iddeah having come to Matavai, sent to the ship to know whether the captain was angry with her. The messenger was told that he was not; and as a token thereof, a plantain leaf was sent her. She then came on board, bringing with her two large hogs and two bundles of cloth; one of each was her own present, the other that of Pomarre. When seated in the cabin, she was asked the reason why she killed her child: in answer to which she said, that the man with whom she cohabited was a low man; had the child been Pomarre’s, she would have spared it; but since it was the custom of the natives to murder all base-born children, she had only acted agreeably thereto.

The father of the child was sitting by her, without seeming in the least angry; however, herself seemed rather hurt at the home-questions that were put to her, and the conversation was turned. She then informed the captain of the reasons of Pomarre’s absence, which being absolutely necessary, he had sent her to see that his friend the captain wanted for nothing the island could afford; though, perhaps, the true reason was, that he might lose nothing by his absence that could be got from the ship. When she had received several presents, the evening drawing on, she set off to see her son Otoo, but was hardly gone when he made his appearance in a large double canoe, whooping and hallooeing to the seamen by name, and after playing a number of foolish tricks, set off to the shore. Thermometer 71°.

18th. The weather pleasant. No natives on board, or canoes about the ship; the reason of which novelty we suppose to be some diversions given by Iddeah. Landed some goods, and received two boat-loads of stone ballast. Doctor Gillham was in the boat to-day, and informed the captain of his desire to return with him. In the afternoon one of the natives brought back the boy Sam, and received for this service a new shirt; Mrs. Hodges accompanied them, to plead for the fugitive. The carpenter employed calling the ship’s top-sides, which the powerful effect of the tropical climate had rendered leaky. Thermometer 72°.

19th. The weather squally, with rain. The young king (Otoo) sent a present of two hogs and some cloth. One of his servants also brought the captain’s dressing-box; they had traced the thief to Opāre, where they found the box complete, but the offender had escaped to the mountains. By the messenger an axe was sent to Otoo. Iddeah, and the base fellow she cohabits with, dined on board, and before the left us, received all the red feathers we had, and likewise a red uniform coat for Pomarre; with which valuable presents she was highly delighted. Received two boat-loads of stone. In the evening a chief brought twenty fowls, for which he received an axe. Whilst at dinner a native requested the ship’s harpoon, to strike a large cavalry he had observed; this he performed with great dexterity; but the wounded fish having disengaged the harpoon, the man dived after it, and brought up the cavalry in his arms, weighing forty-five pounds, for which the captain rewarded him, and sent the fish on shore to the missionaries.

20th. The weather squally, with heavy rain. Few of the natives on board, occasioned partly by the weather, and partly by a shooting-match with bow and arrow, which Otoo had at Opāre. Received
three boats of ballafr. Thermometer 72°.

21st. Weather as yesterday: the winds during the latter part equally from the N. W. with heavy rain; which so flooded the river of Matavai, that we with difficulty got one boat-load of ballafr.

Early in the morning Mawroa and his wife, who are our most constant visitors, came, and brought with them a pig, bread-fruit, cocoa-nuts, &c. with them came also three women, who, they said, were relations; they likewise brought each of them a present. One of them was full seventy years old, and so infirm, and exhausted with the fatigue of getting on board, that she laid herself down on the cabin floor, apparently about to expire; but recovering a little, she staid on board all the day, and went safe away in the evening.

Iddeah was among this day's visitors, and, in short, the cabin was quite crowded with them; which would often be uncomfortable, were they not careful to supply us with a plentiful table. Thermometer 72°.

22d. Wind easterly; moderate and pleasant weather. Looed sails to dry, &c. After breakfast the missionaries came off, but without stones, not being able to get them for the swell of the river. Sent on shore a quantity of rod, bolt, and bar iron. To-day the captain gave Peter, the Swede, two spades and some other articles, as he proposed erecting a house near to the missionaries. My tayo Wyreede sent me a large hog, as he had frequently done before.

23d. Fine pleasant weather, and a light air of wind easterly. Five or six failing canoes went out of the bay towards Tethura. These are the only canoes of the failing kind that we observed on the island, though sometimes they will erect a temporary mast to run before the wind. Service on board by brothers Henry and Broomhall.

24th. Three of the company made an excursion for two days, with Peter the Swede, through Matavai, O'parr, Tetaha, and Attahooro, at which last district they slept. Every where they were received with profuse hospitality, and had nine pigs roasted to entertain them at different places.

Moderate and pleasant weather, with a few showers of rain. Landed sundries, and received some ballafr. Our visitors were Iddeah and my tayo Wyreede, with their husbands; their presents amounted to three hogs and a large quantity of bread-fruit. The young king came off in his Tongataboo canoe, and paddled several times round the ship. The captain gave him an uniform coat of handsome scarlet, and entreated him to put it on, which he in a sullen fit, with savage obstinacy, refused to do.

During the night we had much rain, thunder, and lightning.

25th. The first part of this day moderate and fair weather. In the afternoon the wind veered to the westward, and blew fresh, with heavy rain for about an hour; then cleared up, and fell calm: and thus it generally happens when westerly, from which quarter it seldom blows hard or long. The wives of the missionaries dined and drank tea on board. Thermometer 71°.

26th. Gentle breezes and pleasant weather. The captain and missionaries employed in dividing the goods. Received one boat-load of ballafr. The natives on board diverting themselves by leaping off the top-sail-yard into the water. Thermometer 73°.

27th. Variable winds and pleasant weather. Received one boat-load of stones.

In the dusk of the evening, one of our seamen, William Tucker, made his escape from the ship. We had been apprized of his intention to stay on the island, knew that most of his clothes were on shore, and had thoughts of securing him when we were about to depart, not thinking he would go till near the last day. When we found him gone, the boat was instantly manned, to pursue and search for him. I and the third mate went on this service: we landed at Point Venus, informed the missionaries, and the old chief Pythah, of what had happened, and employed them also in the search, which proved in vain; for after examining every house in the district we were obliged to return...
to return as we went. The two Swedes (Peter and Andrew) had been absent all the evening, which gave us reason to suppose them concerned in the affair; for just as we returned to the missionary house, they came in quite wet, saying that they had been a-fishing, an employment we knew they never went upon at nights; besides, their very looks condemned them. All that we could further do in this business was, to go to the huts of Otoo and Iddeah, and desire them to send men in pursuit of Tucker, which they promised to do. And to crown the disagreeableness of this day, just before we set off with the boat, the ram which we brought from England came into the house, and died; supposed to have received some injury from the natives, as he was a little mischievous among them. However, there are still good hopes of a breed, as one of the ewes had a fine ram, which was now grown up.

28th. Pleasant weather. This morning, when Andrew the Swede came on board, he was immediately put in confinement; it appearing evident that he had enticed Tucker from the ship, and was endeavouring to form a party which might prove dangerous to the missionaries: therefore the captain resolved on taking him off the island. Peter came on board also, and turning king's evidence, informed us that a native named Matemoo had concealed Tucker in a thicket of Matavai. Iddeah was on board at the time, to whom we applied for help, which he promised, landed, and sent off a band of Otoo's men to search the thicket, afflicted by a number of the missionaries, with myself and the gunner; but all in vain: he was not to be found this day. We heard that he had taken the road to Opārē, and intended for Atahooroo; and in consequence of this information, Smith, Main, and Clode armed themselves, and set off in pursuit of him; as the captain intended at all events to have him, that mischief to the brethren might be prevented, and likewise defections be thereby discouraged. Thermometer 72°.

29th. Moderate breezes easterly, and pleasant weather. The captain and the four brethren employed dividing the goods, &c. No further account of Tucker. At noon the three missionaries returned from a fruitless pursuit, much fatigued. Many of our friends the natives on board to-day. Thermometer 73°.

30th. Pleasant weather. Mr. Jefferson and Lewis chaplains for the day. About ten at night a native paddled off, calling out as he approached the ship, "All's well." His business, it seemed, was to communicate something concerning Tucker, but he was so stupefied with ava, that he could not articulate a word. The coming of another canoe explained the matter. In this last were three of the missionaries, Iddeah, two of Otoo's servants, and Tucker, bound, who cursed Otoo heartily for his treachery. It appears that Otoo had been privy to the whole affair, and had himself daily fed Tucker. But the captain having dropped an expression, in Iddeah's hearing, that if the fugitive was not found he would take Otoo on board; it so terrified him, that he sent a man to inform Tucker that he wanted him, and contrived to have some of the missionaries in ambush near the beach, who seized him as he came along, and put him into the canoe, but not without a great struggle, and many curses. When we had got him on board, he was put in confinement, till we should leave the island. As for Iddeah, she was at this time trembling; and being asked the reason of it, she said, it was for fear Andrew should be let loose, for he was a bloody-minded man, and would wreak his vengeance on her, and the other natives to whom the captain had shown favour; and that he thought very little of running his knife into them.

31st. Fine pleasant weather. Minne Manne, who was so attentive and friendly on our first visit, did not till this morning send his respects and a present to his tayo the captain, and that himself would be with us in a day or two. Iddeah and several others came with the usual presents of hogs, fruit, &c.
August 18. Light breezes and pleasant weather. Bought two he-goats to carry to the Friendly Islands; and received several presents from the natives. In the evening Mānī Manne arrived at Matavai in the vessel he had just built at Eimeo, and brought her alongside for the captain to view her; considering her as their first essay, she is a wonderful performance. This day at noon we fired a gun, and hoisted the fore-topmast as a signal for sailing; and received Dr. Gillham and all his baggage on board.

2d. The first part of the wind, the middle and latter part fair and pleasant weather; the wind westly all the afternoon. Idiah and pleasant weather; the wind westerly all the afternoon. Iddah and pleasant weather; the wind westerly all the afternoon. Iddah and pleasant weather; the wind westerly all the afternoon. Iddah and pleasant weather; the wind westerly all the afternoon. Iddah

The natives were now crowding the ship more than ever, and many of them were very importunate to go to Perutane. Mawroa and many of his tayos at one end of the ship wept bitterly, but by only walking the length of the deck they became as cheerful as ever; and when taxed with dissimulation, they laughing observed, that it was the parow or custom of Otaheite to weep and cut themselves on such occasions, but the latter they omitted because we had told them it was bad. But as all their passions or fits are extremely short-lived, especially that of grief, their present behaviour was only consistent with their general character and disposition.

After hoisting the pinnace in we stood off and on, waiting the packets of letters, which were brought off at noon by Cover, Henry, and several others who had not taken leave. After such conversation as the occasion suggested, we took an affectionate farewell, and parted, perhaps never to behold each other again in this life.

"axes, knives, scissors, or cloth." The cafe is, that whatever he receives he immediately distributes among his friends and dependants; so that of all the numerous presents he had received, he had nothing now to keep, except a glazed hat, a pair of breeches, and an old black coat, which he had fringed with red feathers. And this prodigal behaviour he excuses, by saying that, were he not to do so, he should never be a king, nor even remain a chief of any consequence.

4th. Light airs of wind. At eight A. M. we weighed anchor, and found out of Matavai bay; the wind variable and baffling. Great numbers of natives crowded on board to take leave of their respective friends, and fee what they would further bestow; for they possess generosity and selfishness in an almost equal degree. Some at parting with their tayos at one end of the ship wept bitterly, but by only walking the length of the deck they became as cheerful as ever; and when taxed with dissimulation, they laughing observed, that it was the parow or custom of Otaheite to weep and cut themselves on such occasions, but the latter they omitted because we had told them it was bad. But as all their passions or fits are extremely short-lived, especially that of grief, their present behaviour was only consistent with their general character and disposition.
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

It was the purpose of the missionaries, as soon as the ship failed, to change their abode to a more eligible spot, and to surround their premises with a strong wall, sufficient to protect them from any danger, though, while they are united, none is to be apprehended, as they have sufficient force to defend themselves against the whole island.

As soon as this is done, they purpose building a vessel of one hundred or one hundred and fifty tons, capable of visiting all the islands around them; for which they have materials of every kind, plenty of timber, and able workmen.

We hope they will have widely diffused the glad tidings of salvation, with which they are sent, by the time we may again visit them.

HAVING passed at a considerable distance southward of the Society Isles on our former voyage, we now shaped a direct course for them; and by noon on the 5th of August were but a little way off Huahine, its extremities bearing from N.E. by N. to N.W. As we rounded the south end a few canoes came off, in one of which was a chief, with the usual peace-offering, viz. a young pig and a green branch. They came on board without agitation, and talked with nearly the same freedom as the Otaheiteans. A few hatchets, knives, and looking-glasses were distributed among them; after which, seeing that we disregarded their entreaties to anchor, they went into their canoe and paddled away.

When to leeward of the island, more canoes came alongside: in one of them was Connor, the Irishman, one of the Matilda’s crew. To our astonishment, he had forgotten his native tongue, being able to recollect only a few words: and if he began a sentence in English, he was obliged to finish it in the language of the islands. Both he and the natives begged hard for us to enter Owharre harbour; but finding that we were determined to make no stay, he asked the captain if he would take him home: which was readily agreed to, as we had reason, from the conduct of his shipmates at Otaheite, to suppose that such as he would prove a hindrance to the mission. He then begged the captain to give him time to take leave of his wife and child, which was also promised him: for that purpose, we hailed our wind towards the entrance of Owharre harbour; and when off there, Dr. Gillham and I went on shore with him in the canoe,
lay becalmed, they hung about the ship most of the day; and when leaving us, promised to return on the morrow.

7th. In the evening the wind came from the westward, and stretching on the larboard tack, we saw the small island of Toubai; which at midnight bore W. N. W. and Mourou W. by S.; and in the course of the forenoon we passed between the two, and north of the latter, the wind at the time from S. W. by S. equally; with thick weather and constant rain; which continuing, we hauled the foresail up, and run under an easy sail for the night; and next morning at daylight saw Howe’s island off the deck, bearing S. by W.

8th. Observed at noon in latitude 16° 45' S.; at the same time saw the land bearing north, and supposed it to be the Scilly islands, discovered by Wallis. We now shaped a course for Palmerston’s islands, where we had some business to do; and on the morning of the 12th came in sight of them. Hoisting the pinnace out, we landed at the same islet which we had formerly been upon, but by a better passage than before. This lies a little more to the northward. On this day we finished what we intended; got about six hundred coconuts for the ship’s use, and planted (which was our main business) thirty-four bread-fruit trees, eighteen plantain and several cacao trees, of which there were none before on the island; and if they flourish, as there is scarce a doubt but they will, the benefit of them may be found by some poor cast-away islanders, or needy navigator.

April 15th. We were visited by Toogahowe, and many others; we informed them of our want of more land and timber, which he instantly said we should have; he would send a person to shew it us, and when ready it should be brought home for us. We were disappointed in not being able to visit the ship once more, and send letters to our brethren at Otaheite.

Sunday 16th. About seven o’clock we had a prayer meeting, when brother Kello and Shelly engaged. As we had fitted up one of our cuckoo clocks, the striking of it excited great surprise and attention among the natives, who considered it as a spirit, on which account they would not touch it, and supposed, if they stole anything, the bird spirit would detect them, which was not without its use. In the forenoon brother Buchanan preached from Jer. xxxii. 27. Several of the natives were present, and behaved very quietly; in the afternoon brother Kello, from 2 Thess. iii. 1. John Connelly (the Irishman) paid us a visit, accompanied by a brother of Fëmou Towaga, a chief who lay sick at Noogollifa; who having heard that Ambler had a day or two ago emptied a cocoa-nut into a Japan pint pot, in order to drink the milk, sent his brother about sixteen miles to beg such a one of us; for without it, he was afraid he should not get well again. This request we instantly complied with, and made a pro.
miff to visit him as soon as possible. Puttafaihe sent a message by Connelly, entreating us to visit him at Mooa; but this we could not comply with till we knew more of the language. Several of us went out to look for the ship, but saw nothing of her. Our patron, Tsogahowe, made us a present to-day of three pieces of land; two uncultivated of about an acre each, and one about the same size well stocked with yams and banana-trees: these, with the enclosure where our house stands, make about five acres. In the evening he sent us three baked hogs, a large quantity of yams, and a bundle of cloth.

17th. Two of the brethren went to look for the ship, but without success. We sent Tsogahowe a present of earthen-ware, two gimlets, and a few nails. Soon after he sent a messenger, requesting us to go and sing to him before he set off for Noogoliffa; but as he was at this time surrounded by some hundreds who were drinking their morning kava, we declined going, and returned answer, that singing was a part of our worship, and we did not make a practice of doing it at other times; which answer satisfied him. He made inquiries concerning our clock; but said, he would not have such a spirit in his house. Brother Harper made him a present of three shawls; and soon after he sent us a hog and some yams. Some of our number were employed in stubbing up old bread-fruit trees, and otherwise preparing our home enclosure for garden-seeds: the secretary, Bowell, writing a vocabulary of the language. In the afternoon the mother-in-law of Ambler, with her two daughters, came to see us; her husband is commander in chief of the fleet of Tsogahowe, and the most skilful sailor on the island. She informed us, that if we went to her when in want of provisions, she would readily supply us. Glory to God, we are not likely to know any want; he gives us enough and to spare.

18th. After family worship we resumed our different employments. Several sorts of seeds were sown, and more land prepared. A chief, named Cofawer, brought us a hog and some yams, and kindly in-
Deferring to prepare a forge, we endeavoured to form moulds for brick: and to procure lime, we attempted to burn shells, which abound; but found no convenient mode; we were able, however, to obtain some from the natives, who use it to change the colour of their hair, and dive for the stone in deep water, which they afterwards burn. We shall no doubt, in time, be furnished with these things sufficient to supply our wants.

21st. We were visited to-day by several, who brought small presents of fruit, &c. Leboolo, a petty chief, came in the afternoon. This man is accounted the first spearmen in the country, on which account Toogahow has made him his chief warrior.

22d. In the course of this week we have dug and planted about a sixth part of our home plantation; several old trees have been taken up, and an enclosure made for our hogs. Every employment we engage in excites the attention of the natives, who are frequently so troublesome, that we are necessitated to drive them away. Found the mufquitoes very unpleasant; some confined with fore feet, attended with great itching.

Sunday 23d. As usual we had a prayer meeting this morning. About eight o'clock John Connelly paid us a visit, bringing a fine hog and some yams from Futtafaie, who had also commissioned him to make us an offer of any islets we should choose among those which lie scattered about Tongataboo, as several of them are his. Fish are in great plenty at these islets, and during the hungry feaon will be peculiarly useful to us. At half past ten brother Buchanan went with John Connelly to pay a visit to Futtafaie and Moomoe at Noogollieva. The weather proving very warm, little work was done without doors. "A sister of Femou Towago, named Oonaider, came to see us, and in the afternoon she sent us some hoti. Hoti is a dish very much in request among the chief, and is made in the following manner: they first pour cocoa-nut milk into a wooden bowl, then scrape out the kernel with a shell; gee root is bruised into the milk, and remains till the latter has imbted a delicious taste from it; the root is then taken out of the milk, and the kernel mixed up with it, which we found a very rich mess. Harper visited Moomoe's fatookes, about half a mile from the missionary house at Bunghye, a beautiful solitary place surrounded by trees and other trees, on which hung vast multitudes of bats as big as crows, called by the natives beaker. Here he saw two houfes; in one there was a quantity of spears and warlike implements, sacred to the Oodooa, or spirit; in the other an image of a goddes, called Byega; to whom they pray for a favourable season for making cloth.

24th. Oonaider paid us another visit this morning, and made us a mess of hoti; which being done in our own house, gave us an opportunity of noticing the great cleanliness which they observe in their cookery. In the afternoon we were visited by a young chief from Lefooka, called by Captain Cook, Leefooga; it is one of the Haape, or Hanby islands. His name is Foonogge, and he is one of the finest made men we have yet seen. As Ambler has been frequently with him, he has learnt several English words, which the young man speaks very plain. He indeed discovered a surprizing facility to learn any word or letter which we spoke, or pointed out to him.
During the night we had copious showers of rain, and the wind blew fresh. About eight o'clock a chief brought us a pig and twenty fine yams; in return for which we gave him a few articles of earthen-ware. A short time after we received a similar present. About ten o'clock brothers Buchanan and Kelso returned from Noogollifa, bringing with them sugar-cane, dried fish, pork, and yams.

The following is a brief narration of their excursion: "At half past six we took our departure from Golooloo, and after wading about three quarters of a mile upon the beach got into a canoe, in which were three of Futtafihe's servants to convey us to Noogollifa: wind and tide being against us, we landed about five miles from our journey's end, and walking about an hour we came to the residence of Feenoo Togahowe, who, surrounded by a circle of attendants, was taking his morning's kava. When we had gone through the usual salutations, and made him a present, we proceeded to see his father, and found him removed to a new habitation, which was not quite finished; but twelve or fourteen men being at work upon it, they completed it soon after our arrival. Poor Moomooe seemed dangerously ill, and was surrounded by several of his wives, the eldest of whom is devoted to be strangled at his death. He seemed very well pleased with the present we made him; a piece of soap was a part of it, which when he saw, he expressed a wish to be shaved, and was much gratified when it was done. Soon after this we were furnished with a mess of fish, yams, &c.

About ten o'clock we went to Futtafihe, whom we found giving orders to get a large double canoe into a boat-house, situated about twenty yards from high-water mark. He received us with great affability and good-nature, bidding us welcome, and apologized for the meanness of the habitation, also for the smallness of the presents he had sent us; the reason of which, he said, was our living at so great a distance from him. He received the present we made him with much good-humour, and without the avidity so remarkable in many others. When we had partaken of the refreshments he had provided, he took us to the beach, and shewed us several islands, any of which, he said, were at our service; but he advised against going to examine them this afternoon, on account of the roughness of the weather. Therefore, having a little time on our hands, we visited several other chiefs; and being at last sent for by Togahowe, we immediately waited upon him in company with Connolly, and found upon our arrival, that Moomooe had sent us a large baked hog and some yams. The hog was instantly cut up with a splinter of bamboo, and, together with the yams, divided among the chiefs who were present; and when we had spent a proper time here we returned again to Futtafihe, who had got a fowl ready dressed for us: and thus it was wherever we went, plentiful provision was made. When we had supped we retired to rest, but were rather disturbed by some old women, who were employed the whole night in beating the legs of Futtafihe. Next morning we rose before daylight, intending to visit the islands and make choice of one of them, but were detained for some time by a misunderstanding of Futtafihe's orders. However, as the chief had been sent for to pay his last visit to Moomooe, supposed to be dying, by Connelly's exertions we embarked in two canoes, with three natives in each to paddle us. After some time we landed at a place called Hollifa, where we were shown a well, which they informed us was dug by Captain Cook: it is the largest and deepest we have seen in the country, but the water is bad, and the land contiguous to it much encumbered with underwood. Thence crossing a creek, we came to an island called Noogonogo: here we breakfasted upon fish and baked plantains at the first house we came to; after which we made a tour round the island, and found it, like that at Hollifa, abounding with underwood; but it had a few plantations in good order, which seemed to have cost the natives much labour, on which account we refused to accept of it.
238 FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE [1797.

We therefore embarked again, and crossed to another, called Mākkahah: this we found well stored with cocoa-nuts, plantains, bread-fruit, and sugar-cane, also good fresh water. Upon the beach we found a curious coral rock, much resembling the stump of an old tree, about five feet high and four thick; it was full of holes, in which were a great number of water-snakes. The natives forbade us to hurt them, and would scarce suffer them to be touched, saying they were aged; which led us to suppose they were sacred animals. These snakes were about thirty inches long; the body, from head to tail, is in circles of black and white alternately, each about half an inch broad; along the top of the back is a beautiful ultramarine blue. Though not venomous, the natives represent them as dangerous, and say they will kill a man by twisting round his neck and biting a hole in his throat. We next examined another small island, called Faffāa, where was plenty of bread-fruit, but little of any thing else; therefore, on our return, we made choice of Mākkahah, and the few natives, about thirty in number, became our tenants; from whom we could afterwards draw whatever we wanted of the produce, or demand their fish, if we chose it; or improve the island, by making what alterations in it we pleased. We found Futtaflhe still with Moomooe; he expressed his approbation of our choice in a very obliging manner, and informed us farther, that he had set three men to cardage to a single sailing canoe; which he intended for our use. Moomooe was now incapable of turning himself, and appeared to be hastening fast to dissolution; nevertheless he desired us to send him a cuckoo clock, and a few of our number to sing psalms for him. We were greatly shocked with the behaviour of Tōgahowe, who two days ago had caused a young man (his own younger brother) to be strangled, that his father might recover. The victim he had buried within a few yards of the house where we were, and he now came to mourn over him, which he did by sitting upon the grave with his elbows upon his knees, and covering his face with

APRIL.] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS. 239

his hands remained a long time in silence, and then departed very thoughtful. After supper Futtaflhe went to fit up with Moomooe, and we retired to rest; and early next morning embarking in a canoe, got home about nine o’clock.”

27th. It had rained hard during the night, which prevented us from working in the day. A present of a turtle and some yams came from Noogollifva in Moomooe’s name: this is esteemed a valuable present in this country. Several of our garden-feeds have now made their appearance, and look exceedingly well; but the rats and mice are very destructive: our crops of peas have fallen a prey to their ravages, and we are afraid the beans will share the same fate, except we find some means to destroy or drive away these vermin. A blind chief visited us to-day.

28th. Weather still wet. Great numbers of people are daily coming into our neighbourhood, bringing cloth, hogs, yams, &c. to be disposed of at the funeral of Moomooe, whose death is hourly expected. Temporary huts are constructing in every convenient place near to Bunghye, which was the usual residence of the king (Moomooe), and where his fataoka is, which stands about half a mile from our house. A young woman arrived at our house this morning, and gave an affecting account of the state of one of Moomooe’s sons. The youth, it seems, lived at some distance from Noogollifva, where the father lies sick, and by order of whom he was sent for, under pretence of having his little fingers cut off, a custom common here, and done with a view to appease the anger of the Odooa, that the sick person may recover, but, in fact, that he might be strangled. Upon the arrival of Colelallo he was saluted in a cordial manner by his elder brother Tōgahowe, and soon after went to see his father, whose attendants seized upon him with a view to strangle him instantly, when he, guessing their intention, said, if they would use gentler means he would submit to his father’s will; but they continuing their violence, he by a great exertion beat them off. Three seije men were then called, and these being joined by a
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

OF THE UNFORTUNATE COBELALLO, THEY ACCOMPLISHED HIS DEATH.

Alas, how dreadful the darkness that envelops the minds of those poor heathens! The prince of darkness has impressed the idea on them, that the strength of the person strangled will be transferred into the sick, and recover him. Oh, when shall the happy period come when they shall say, What have we to do any more with idols?

29th. Footogge paid us a visit this morning, and after him came our friend Myttyle, who informed us that Moemboe had departed this life about four o'clock this morning. The people who passed from Noogollifva, with their faces bruised, and blood running down their cheeks, were numerous; instead of cloth they wore matting, and a twig of the chestnut-tree about their necks; this, it seems, is their mourning dress. About one o'clock Toogahowe arrived; and soon after Ambler, accompanied by brother Bowell, went to see him. He was sitting in a small neat house, giving orders to several chiefs who sat about him, concerning the procuring the vast supplies of hogs, &c. that will be consumed at the funeral. About three o'clock the body of the deceased king was carried past our house, at a small distance from the beach, it was laid on a kind of bier made of the boughs of trees, and supported by about twenty men: several relatives of the deceased preceded the corpse in their mourning dresses; a few of them had cut their heads with shark's teeth, and the blood was running in streams down their faces. Behind the corpse was a multitude of people of both sexes. A female chief called Fefene Duatonga, who is very corpulent, was carried on a kind of frame made of two long bamboos, between which she sat on a piece of matting, and was borne by four men. Near her Fesefaihe walked; and next them two women, who were devoted to be strangled at the funeral; one was weeping, but the other appeared little concerned; they both were wives of the deceased. Some of us followed them to the fiatooka, near which they deposited the body for the present, in a house carried thither for the purpose, and which was hung round with black cloth. This flatooka is situated on a

TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

spot of ground about four acres. A mound rises with a gentle slope about seven feet, and is about one hundred and twenty yards in circumference at the base; upon the top stands a house neatly made, which is about thirty feet long, and half that in width. The roof is thatched, and the sides and ends left open. In the middle of this house is the grave, the sides, ends, and bottom of which are of coral floor, with a cover of the same; the floor of the house is of small stones. The door and outer trees grow round the fiatooka.

To the left of the tomb, and without the enclosure, sat about four hundred people: the major part of them were men, for whom yava was brewing. Opposite to these were placed five large roasted hogs, twenty baskets of roasted yams, and about one hundred pieces of mat (or mahi), the floor pates. A few paces from the provisions sat seven or eight men, who were taboed, and exempt from cutting themselves. One of these gave orders concerning the disposal of the hogs, yams, and yava; all that drank of the latter were mentioned by name, by a person appointed to that office by Fefene Duatonga, who now seemed to have the management of the funeral. They did not forget us; but in dealing out the liquor sent us each a part, which we gave to the natives who sat by us. Persons of both sexes sat down in different parts of the ground, beating their faces dreadfully; and after having emptied two bowls of yava, dispersed.

30th. During the night great numbers of people were passing and repassing. Preaching by brothers Buchanan and Koffo. Many of the natives crowded round our gate, and a few were admitted. Preparations for the funeral were carried on with unremitting diligence by the natives.

May 1st. Three roasted hogs were sent us this morning, one from Fefene Duatonga, one from Toogahowe, and the other from Femoiu Lucalullo. In return we sent a present to Toogahowe only; it consisted of a cooper’s adze, an auger, a gouge, three gimlets, a plane, two chuckles, &c. Several strangers came to gratify their curiosity during the day, great numbers of whom stood without the
fence, noticing all our actions. Futtafaihe paid us a visit this morning for the first time since we have been on shore; one of the brethren shaved him, and whilst he was doing it the natives were afraid any of the hair should fall to the ground, in which case not one of them would dare to eat under the roof again; however, no accident of that kind happened. Great preparations are making at Bunghye for the funeral; people flocking from all quarters with hogs, fruit, cloth, spears, and clubs.

2d. The crowd in our neighbourhood is prodigious, and alarming to us; and we are informed they are likely to make a fray of two or three months, in which time He alone who reigns on high knows what excesses they may run into towards us.

As the funeral was to take place to-day, brother Bowell went with Ambler to Bunghye to see the ceremony, and found about four thousand persons sitting round the place where the fiatooka stands. A few minutes after our arrival we heard a great shouting and blowing of conch-shells at a small distance; soon after about an hundred men appeared, armed with clubs and spears, and rushing into the area, began to cut and mangle themselves in a most dreadful manner: many struck their heads violently with their clubs; and the blows, which might be heard thirty or forty yards off, they repeated till the blood ran down in streams. Others who had spears, thrust them through their thighs, arms, and cheeks, all the while calling on the deceased in a most affecting manner. A native of Feejee, who had been a servant of the deceased, appeared quite frantic; he entered the area with fire in his hand, and having previously oiled his hair, set it on fire, and ran about with it all on flame. When they had satisfied themselves with this manner of torment, they sat down, beat their faces with their fists, and then retired. A second party went through the same cruelties; and after them a third entered, shouting and blowing the shells; four of the foremost held stones which they used to knock out their teeth; those who blew the shells cut their heads with them in a shocking manner. A man that had a spear run through his arm just above the elbow, and with it flicking fast ran about the area for some time. Another, who seemed to be a principal chief, acted as if quite bereft of his senses; he ran to every corner of the area, and at each station beat his head with a club till the blood flowed down his shoulders. After this brother Bowell, shocked, and unable to bear the scene any longer, returned home. Futtafaihe also came to our dwelling, and stayed about two hours. At two o'clock in the afternoon four of us went to the fiatooka, where the natives of both sexes were still at the dreadful work of cutting and mangling themselves. We had not been long there before we heard at a distance, low but expressive sounds of the deepl sorrow and lamentation: this was a party of about one hundred and forty women marching in single file, bearing each a basket of sand; eighty men followed in the same manner, with each two baskets of coral sand, and fung, as they marched, words importing, “This is a blessing to the dead;” and were answered in responses by the women. Another company of women brought a large quantity of cloth, and answered in their turn to the above responses. Thus these three bands walked towards the tomb, filling or covering that part of the mount between the house and the place where the corpse lay, and the grave, with fine mats and cloth; after which, seven men blew conch-shells, whilst others fung in a doleful strain expressive of the most heartfelt grief. The corpse was now conveyed to the grave upon a large bale of black cloth, with which, and fine mats, they covered it. The bearers, as they went, walked slowly, and carrying the bale in their hands. Whilst these services were performing, a company of men and women came into the area, and cut themselves dreadfully. After them another file of females, nineteen in number, brought each a bag of their richest valuable articles; and twenty-one more had each a fine mat in their hands, all of which they deposited in the tomb, being, as they call it, a present for the dead; and immediately after came a present from Toogahowe, consisting of thirty-five bales of cloth, each bale carried by four men on a frame. After the pre-
fants another party of mourners entered the area, sixteen of whom had recently cut their little fingers off; these were followed by another party with clubs and spears, who beat themselves as before described, and disfigured their faces with cocoa-nut hooks fixed on the knuckles of both hands. We noticed that those who had held offices, or were related to the deceased, were the most cruel to themselves; some of whom thrust two, three, and even four spears into their arms, and danced round the area, and some broke the ends of the spears in their flesh. The grave was covered with a hewn stone about eight feet long, four broad, and one thick; this stone they had suspended with two large ropes, which went round two strong piles driven into the ground at the end of the house, and thence led to the area, where about two hundred men held by them; and whilst they lowered it slowly, women and children wept aloud, or sung words importing, "My father, my father! the best of chiefs, &c." More cloth was then brought to be put into the tomb; and another party entered, and abused themselves as before. After these paroxysms of grief they sat awhile in silence; and when they had pulled the rope clear off the stone which covered the grave, those on the mount gave a great shout, which was answered by a general tearing of the leaves from the necks of all present; after which they dispersed.

3d. Several strangers visited us this morning, many of whom are chiefs of considerable Influence; from them we received a few small presents. The dreadful work of cutting and mangling was again renewed to-day with fresh vigour by the natives; but on reflection we did not think proper to go, and countenance by our presence the cruel customs of this poor deluded people. Except being crowded by natives round our enclosure, nothing material occurred on the two following days; but to prevent mischief as much as in us lay, we watched at nights, two at a time, though, thank God, we have not as yet been molested; and our friend Toogahowe has threatened with death any man that should be detected in robbing us.

4th. Ambler, who had received from us various articles of wearing apparel, and a box to secure them, pretended to be robbed by the natives, and contrived to have the empty box brought back; but we suspected the cheat. He beat one of the women he lived with inhumanly, who ran away, and the friends of the other carried her off; yet though this fellow was so wicked, he rendered us considerable service by instructing us in the language, as also did a young chief named Fynogge.

6th. Took a walk to Mooco, a fine elevated spot near the beach, with houses and enclosures, belonging to Féenou Towago, who lay sick. We staid with him about four hours. He made us a present of a fine American dog, an animal of which we stood in need. We received also a present from a great chief of the Harby islands.

On our way we observed the country, and the manner of fencing and cultivating their lands. It is in general level, laid out in fields or smaller enclosures, called abbeys, and some still less, which surround the houses, called ladores. Their fences are reed, set in a trench, plastered close, and fastened to stakes on the inside, which strike root and grow; they contain banana-trees, or yams, set in rows three feet asunder, which were now ripe; between the rows the yava root was cultivated, or the calloo, another esculent root; but they left the uncultivated parts very foul, and overrun with weeds, and grubs. Their mode of working is to squat down on their hams, and hoe the ground with an instrument of hard wood, about five feet long, narrow, with sharp edges, and pointed; with this also they dig it up.

In the evening Benjamin Ambler made use of very improper language to the brethren, and desired them to quit the abbey, and to sow no more seeds. On this we applied to our friend and patron Toogahowe; Mytyle, who has rendered us so many kind offices, accompanied us. Toogahowe received us very cordially, said he loved us and all our brethren, and immediately gave us a pig and twenty fine yams; and when he had heard our complaint was very angry, and sent immediately for Ambler, who came, and notwithstanding his enda-
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE  [1797.

vours to palliate what he had said, he received a severe reproof from the chief, who told him that he had no right to our house, nor any thing about us, and desired he would let us alone in future.

7th. This forenoon Vuttafähe, accompanied by two of his turkongers (or counsellors), came, and said about an hour with us, then took their leave.

About tea A. M. brother Buchanan preached from Heb. xii. 1.; in the afternoon brother Kelfo from Can. i. and afterwards administered the Lord's supper. As few of the natives were permitted within the enclosure, we were enabled to wait on the God of our salvation without distraction.

8th. Our friend Toogahowe, attended by a numerous retinue, brought us two pieces of cloth, and a spade which we had given him the week before: he now wanted it cut in pieces, to make small iron tools; this was done, and as the grindstone had been fitted up, they were also sharpened for him: having some yava root by us, we gave it to him, so that while the buses of the spade was going on, they regaled themselves over a bowl, and afterwards departed much pleased. Vuttafähe came to-day likewise, and brought with him a fine turtle.

More than twenty large double canoes arrived from the Harby islands, carrying upwards of fifty persons each: in one of them was Morgan Bryan, an Irishman, the former shipmate of Ambler and Connelly: he had heard of our arrival so early as about the time the ship failed. As soon as he landed he came and said some time, but during our interview gave such specimens of depravity as excited a wish for him never more to come under our roof. A writing-book forgotten at Feenou Toogahowe's his wife first denied, and then produced stripped of most of the leaves.

9th. Several chiefs came to see us this morning, and brought tools to be sharpened. Morgan came again to see us, and to our grief we are likely to have much of his company. Provifions in abundance are still brought to Moomöoe from all parts of the country. Strangers likewife are visiting the flatloka of Moomöoe, where they continue the cruel mourning ceremony, but not so much now as a few days ago. Morgan, who had in the morning requested iron tools of us, which we did not think proper to give, took the liberty, in concert with Ambler, to upbraid us, and to use such language as much hurt our minds. Ambler well knew that our flock of tools was much reduced, yet he did not scruple to say, that, unless we complied with his request, he would, before ten days elaps'd, adopt means to satisfy himself; and with this threat walked off. May He who has said, "Be not dismayed, I am thy God," protect us with his almighty power from the machinations of those wicked men!

10th. About five A. M. brother Kelfo being on watch discovered a man creeping through the fence; he immediately struck the thief, and repeated his blows till the man ran off. Mytyle being acquainted with it, was very sorry the fellow was not killed. A sister of Toogahowe's, named Feenou Allawallo, sent us a fine hog and eight baskets of yams, and several of her family followed, and stood most of the afternoon, which was rainy. In the evening Toogahowe came himself, with a chief from Harby; before he departed he received a coverlid from one of the brethren, with which he was highly gratified.

11th. John Connelly informs us, that while the chiefs sat over the yava bowl this morning, he overheard them laying plans to embrace the first opportunity to deprive us of all our possessions, but that they waited the return of the ship, when they hoped we should receive more articles. The truth of this report we have no reason to doubt, as we know there is not a man on the island but would tell us upon inquiry, that they are "made monucka," that is to say, "dying in love for our things." This information gave us no small uneasiness, and led us to inquire what steps were proper to be taken at this critical juncture, and which was the path of duty. We knew not the way of proceeding they might take to effect their purpose; but as savages generally work themselves up to fury on occasions of enterprise, we had but little hope that they would regard our lives.
After debating the subject, we concluded the safest plan would be, to separate, and, going two together, put ourselves under the protection of the greatest chiefs, and place our property also under their care; by which means we might secure our persons, and, at last, save our books; but that we might have one place wherein to meet and commune together, it was judged proper that four of our number should remain with Toogahowe.

In the afternoon brothers Bowell and Veefon, accompanied by Connelly, went in quest of Toogahowe, who seemed to discover little concern when he heard of our circumstances; but wished that he might have his share of the property, if we did separate. On this we invited him to our habitation, and opened every box to his view, from every one of which he took something, by way of tithe, and departed satisfied.

14th. The night passed quietly, and but few of the natives came near our fence; however, the alarm of yesterday was by no means quelled. Toogahowe wished for us all to remain with him, the motives for which we could easily see through; it appearing evident that he hoped to receive something considerable on the return of the ship. But the more we weighed the subject, the more were we persuaded of the impropriety of remaining together. We had witnessed a great waste of provisions at the recent ceremonies; and, which, by the daily influx of strangers, was likely to continue; this we were certain would be severely felt in the scarce season, which was fast approaching. We had many articles in our possession which would engage their affection and friendship. Except we separated, we were likely to be the principal sufferers, it being much easier for a chief to provide for one or two than for ten; besides, we had hopes of acquiring the language with greater facility. We therefore waited again upon Toogahowe, and acquainted him with our resolution; he seemed willing we should do as we pleased; but only forced to, for we knew he was inwardly vexed about it. A chief named Mullican was spoken to, who agreed to take any two of our number.
15th. Vahara, a chief, visited us, and brought us a hog, twenty
yams, &c.

16th to the 21st. On Monday night we had a severe tempest,
with copious showers of rain. Strangers still are coming from the
Harby islands and Vavao; many of whom, as they arrive, go to
the fiatooka, and pay their tribute of respect to the deceased, by cruel
injunctions on their own bodies. The scenes of joy and mourning
now occupy their whole time: at present the diversions of the
women prevail; and in a few days the men will commence theirs.
Those who come from distant parts of this island are returning home,
on account of the difficulty of getting food at Bunghye. The divers-
ions and ceremonies, we suppose, will yet last some weeks, in which
time we cannot expect to make much improvement in our land.

On Sunday the 21st, brother Buchanan discoursed from his former
text; brother Kello, from Col. ii. 12.

22d. Prepared a piece of ground for turnips, which thrive better
than any other seeds. Set some peas and beans; those we first planted
were in bloom in about two
months. The peas were chiefly devoured
by the rats, which abound here. Walked over the western part of
the island, not more than a mile across. The shore rocky; a heavy
surf upon it. Observed the natives amusing themselves with swimming
in the surf, and carried on the top of the wave; this sport
they call faneef o.

The men have begun their diversions at Moomoe's fiatooka, and
practised morning and evening in different parties, under different
chiefs. Next Sunday is fixed for the cartonga lahie, or great
toomai; after which, we are informed, many of the people will dif-
perse, of which we shall be heartily glad.

28th. The great toomai was performed by men drest in their
finest robes, and mats ornamented with feathers, beads, shells, &c.;
they slept. Before the house was a large green area, and on each side a flatooka containing three tombs.

30th. Reached Mooa, the residence of Futtafaihe; they found the abbeys and ladders of this village in a very ruinous condition, and the fences much out of repair. Here are several houses, which Connelly said were spirits' houses, where they found logs of wood, stones, and bundles of rags, which were considered as spirits, being brought from the Feejee islands. These places are falling down, but so sacred, they must not be touched to repair them. Futtafaihe is very superstitious, and himself esteemed as a tooa or god; he is also much devoted to pleasure, singing, and dancing; has several wives, the first women of the country; one, the daughter of Moomeo, called Dooboumaofer; she has features and a complexion very like a European, as she seldom goes out of the house, or exposes herself to the sun and air.

The lands about Mooa are ill cultivated, and overgrown with grass and trash; though there are many beautiful abbeys planted with a variety of trees and flowering shrubs of the most delightful fragrance.

31st. Very rainy and tempestuous. When it cleared up they walked out to see the abbeys, canoes, &c. The flatookas are remarkable. There be the Futtafaihes for many generations, some vast and ruinous, which is the case with the largest; the house on the top of it is fallen, and the area and tomb itself overgrown with wood and weeds. Poulaho, the father of the present king, is said to have died and been interred at Vavao.

The history, if Ambler's report is to be received, is this: that Poulaho, but more especially his wife Mahoofo, of the Doubou family, were tyrannical in their government, disfranchising the chiefs arbitrarily, and rendering themselves odious. Toogahowe was then chief at Eeoa. Her majesty, after Poulaho's decease, disdained him from his post, and nominated another. This he resisted, and refused to submit; and told the messenger he was a tooa, and not an agee, or chief, else he would have challenged him to single combat; but now he had only to depart with his train, or he would put him to death. The wind blew a storm, but he hailed back to his mistress, who inquired the reason of his return in such a gale; he related his reception; and she replied, "Toogahowe has a mind to be killed. I will punish his insolence." Toogahowe meant to convene the other chiefs, and urged them to join him in support of their privileges. The conflict proved in their favour, and the queen was driven to Ahæfo, and took shelter at a house near ours at Attaboo. Here she sat with a garland of leaves about her neck, and a goose in her mouth, which signified, I crave mercy. Toogahowe was going to dispatch her with his tooa-tooa, or spear, but was withheld by his followers; and she was suffered to escape to the Harby islands, where the now lives in exile. Toogahowe, victorious, exercised great cruelties on his enemies, tying some to trees and burning them alive, and making great devastations at the Harby islands. In a fight with the people of Vavao, his canoe outdistanced the rest, and he fought them alone with such fury as gained the victory, and raised the fame of his military prowess to the highest pitch, so that he is universally dreaded and obeyed. Our missionaries were witnesses to some of Toogahowe's savage conduct. One man who displeased him had his hand cut off on the spot; and another was tied up with his arms extended, and two women were ordered with lighted sticks to burn him under the arm-pits. Our brethren interceded for him, and happily rescued him from this cruel punishment.

June 1st. The brethren returned in a failing canoe to Ahæfo. Futtafaihe made them a present of a hog and twenty yams, and accompanied them to a small island in the bay called Makkahah, which he had given them.

At Ahæfo found several chiefs returning to their homes; one of them, named Moore, invited Cooper and Gaulton to accompany him to Ahoge on a visit, which they accepted. Several of the chiefs have given us polite invitations to reside with them, and have of-
fered us houses, and whatever we can desire; so that, whenever we separate, there is no fear of wanting an asylum.

4th. Spent the Lord's day as usual; partook of the holy communion.

5th. Bowell and Harper paid a visit to Vaarjee, a chief of great influence in the district of Ardeo: he informed us of some of the villainies of Morgan and Ambler, respecting several things they had stolen from us, and we met some women dressed in the stolen things.

6th. Vaarjee led us a walk across the country to his family plantation. Below the cliff are caverns on which the surf beats, and the water dashes back with surprising violence.

7th. Bowell and Harper returned from Ardeo, highly pleased with the treatment they had received. Vaarjee inquired earnestly of Mr. Bowell, if we had any who could assist women in difficult labor. Two of his servants attended them with a large mat to sleep on, and to assure them of hogs and yams whenever we wanted them, and an invitation to come to him whenever we pleased. He lives about twenty miles from us! His land is the best cultivated we have seen; he has the largest district of any chief at Tonga; and is not obliged to furnish Dugonagaboola with his produce. He employs a great number of servants in different occupations and labours. At our return we found the materials ready, and laid at our gate, which Toogahowe had promised to enlarge our dwelling. A mattock which we sometimes used took his fancy, and was given him. Mytyle, objecting to another erection within the abbey, we set it up in an adjoining field, which we proposed to clear and cultivate.

10th. Heard that Fenou Lukolallo was ill, and not likely to live. A pair of pantaloons were stolen. Mytyle had ingratiated himself with us, by his readiness to teach us the language, and was a very intelligent man, but we were sorry to detect him in several petty thefts.

11th. Spent the Lord's day in our usual manner. Putafa'fahe visited us, and wished we would have him. We excused ourselves from doing it, as we never did any manual labour on the oodooa day. Our gracious Father has given us great acceptance in the sight of this people, who express much surprise at observing how different our manners are from those of our countrymen, whose time is spent in idleness and profligacy. One of them has four wives, another three, and the other two. With such men it is impossible for us to maintain any fellowship, and their envy and enmity we bitterly experience.

12th. This morning Lukolallo died; and Fenogge, a young chief, informed us that Morgan and Ambler had been very indolent of late to irritate the minds of the natives against us, telling them that we were only toos (mean people), and that they were agcees (chiefs), and sons of the king of England. They had also recommended them to attack and plunder us. After this we did not think proper to stay in the house where we were, but to remove to one larger, which stood in the enclosure next to Dugonagaboola, to which the chief readily consented, and all things except our hogs were taken thither this evening. However, next day when we went to fetch them we found the fly broken, and one remaining; two were near the fly, and after the strictest search we found only another; thus our flock was reduced from nine to four.

13th. Ambler and Morgan having heard that we suspected them of having driven off our hogs, came to our house, and began to abuse us; and Morgan even kicked one of our number. Seeing them determined to proceed further, a scuffle ensued; Morgan again struck with his club the person he had before kicked; but the blow did no great injury. They then desisted, finding themselves overpowered, but not from uttering the most horrid execrations both on us and also on themselves if they did not prove bitter enemies, and murder us before morning.

In the evening we again met to consider further the propriety of remaining together; when it was observed, besides the reason formerly given, that we made less progress in the language than we should if
we had only natives to converse with. After much conversation, there appeared, on a division, eight for parting, against it two. It was then agreed, that a division of the public property should take place. On acquainting Duoganagooloo with what we had done, he confented, and promised to come to our house on the 17th, and receive a present which we had prepared for him.

15th. A division of the public property took place. Morgan and Ambler came again to-day, but more peaceably disposed. On the 16th Connelly came and acted his part. He wanted a clock for Futaasaihe, and insisted upon having it, saying that it had been promised before. But we could not think of complying with such presumptuous demands, especially as we knew no such promise had ever been made; therefore he went away much displeased. Next day he came again, and received the same answer. He then swore he would do us all the harm he could, and that he would murder the first of us he could get into his power. Thus we experience perils among the heathen, but more from our own countrymen.

Sunday 18th. Buchanan preached from Psalm lxxiii. 1, 2, 3; Kelso, from Heb. iv. 10.

20th. Our visitors are not half so numerous now as they have been, owing in part to a funeral ceremony about three miles from our habitation. This morning Myrtle sent his servants with one of our loft hogs. Vaarjee's funeral services ending, he told us he should return in two nights; and, if we were ready to go with him, would lend his servants to remove our luggage; to which we agreed, and went to Attaboo to see our garden; only a few cabbage-plants had been transplanted. But Vaarjee being unexpectedly detained four or five nights longer, we returned to our house at Bunghye. Thither in the evening two chiefs brought a fine lad, with his hands tied together with sinnet, and wanted to barter (fakkow) him for an axe. We inquired what the lad had done, if he was e.n.w., a bad boy; they said, No, felle dione sone, allofy.


27th. Shelly and Nobbs accompanied Vaharlo to his house at Ahoge. This chief has shewn a peculiar attachment to us. Vaarjee called on us in consequence of a message to him from Duoganagooloo, who did not choose we should leave him, or rather remove with our effects to another chief. However, on making him a present he consented, assured us of his cordial regard, and that whenever we came to Ahoge we should have a welcome reception with him.

28th. About a quarter past three o'clock in the morning we were much alarmed by a shock of an earthquake, which lasted about a minute, during which time the earth kept a continual trembling; it was sensibly felt by us all. Our consolation on this occasion was much increased by the natives around us, who formed quite panic-struck, and set up loud cries; and the surf on the beach made...
a greater noise than we ever heard before. This we considered as a wonderful exertion of divine power, and a sign at which we beheld those who dwell at the uttermost parts of the earth tremble. May the time hasten when they shall learn to know and love Him of whom they are afraid! Early in the morning we were visited by some of the natives, to whom we mentioned the earthquake; the impression it made upon them seemed to be but momentary; they imputed it to the odooa (or spirit), of which they seem to have very confused notions, ascribing every thing to it which exceeds their comprehension, and of which they know not the immediate cause. Ambler says that it is the fourth shock they have had since he landed here about eighteen months ago. To-day brothers Bowell and Harper took their departure from us, and went to reside with Vaaarjee, a principal chief at Ardeo, about ten miles distant.

29th. Bowell and Harper embarked with Vaaarjee and his mother Duatonga Fefene, who seems the first woman in the island, and was going to Moota. They landed at a small island in the bay, where they slept the first night.

Nobbs and Shelly returned from Ahoge, where they had felt the earthquake as sensibly as we had done, and attended with much the same circumstances. They report that they were treated with the greatest kindness, not only by their friend, but by all with whom they had any intercourse; as a proof whereof, they brought two hogs, two hundred yams, and six bunches of cocoa-nuts.

30th. Finding Bowell and Harper reading a book, their friend Vaaarjee inquired what it said; they endeavoured to make him comprehend the sacred subject of which it treated, which he seemed to understand, and mentioned to his mother, who was sitting by. They embarked at eight o'clock; the wind being against them, they beat up to Moota, and were entertained for the night by Kamer, a friend of this chief. The next day, the 31st, they arrived at Ardeo. Spent the evening in learning the language; their friend Vaaarjee being an excellent tutor, and improving every occurrence to make them acquainted with the meaning of words, and the names of things, in the clearest manner.

July 1st. Dugonagaboola sent for brother Shelly, to inform him of his intended departure to Moota on Monday next; and as he was apprehensive that we might run short of provisions in his absence, he advised us to accompany him thither, and offered to put our property into a place of safety till his return, which he proposes in about two moons, or months; but as we expect the ship much longer, we thought it inexpedient to accept this favour. We could not, however, sufficiently admire the goodness of God, who hath the hearts of all men in his keeping, thus to incline this man to such a provident care over us, notwithstanding the pains our adversaries have taken to incite him against us.

Sunday 2d. Brother Buchanan preached in the morning from 1 Thess. v. 9.; brother Kello, afternoon, from Matt. xxvii. 35. and afterwards dispensed the Lord’s supper.

3d. Brother Verscho went to reside with Muliceman, in the district of Ahoge. We now begin to see something of the designs of Providence in calling us at our first landing into the midst of such confusion and disorder as then filled us with apprehension for our safety; he at that time not only made daily displays of his almighty power, and gracious care, in protecting us from every threatening danger, but, by collecting a vast concourse of strangers from every quarter, both of Tongataboo and the adjacent islands, and giving us favour in their sight, seems already to have opened a door for us to every part of this extensive group. We have received pressing invitations to several of the neighbouring islands, which nothing but a want of the language has prevented us from accepting. But we hope by a diligent application to remove that obstacle: so that we now look for opportunities of promoting the glorious design in which we are engaged, which at first we little expected. “The Lord’s way is in
the sea, and his path in the great waters, and his footsteps are not known."

4th. At seven in the morning, being nearly answerable to the time when we expect our friends in London to be engaged in the like exercise, we held our monthly prayer-meeting, and encouraged ourselves with the thought that many of the Lord's people were earnestly beseeching at a throne of grace in our behalf; and trust it will be no small comfort to them to know, that he has graciously heard, and seems to be giving answers of peace, by continually bestowing on us a rich supply of every needful blessing.

In the afternoon we received a letter from brothers Bowell and Harper, acquainting us with their welfare.

7th. We were visited by the wife and daughter of Moe, a chief who resides at Ahoce, and to whom brothers Gaulton and Cooper had paid a visit some time ago. He at that time had given them a large house and plantation, to induce them to reside with him, to which they consented; but, being since prevented, his impatience excited him to send this message for them. They brought a hog and a large quantity of yams.

This evening we felt another shock of an earthquake, but it was neither so sensible nor of so long duration as the former.

8th. Brother Harper came to see us, and says that they are very comfortable at Ardeo with Vaarjee, who is anxious to indulge them to the utmost of his power, and has assigned them apartments wholly to themselves, and is very ready and useful in instructing them in the language.

Sunday the 9th, brother Buchanan preached from 1 Thess. v. 9; brother Kefo, from Gen. xxii. 1.

10th. Brother Harper returned home this evening to Ardeo, accompanied by brother Wilkinson.

12th. Laid out the grass-plot before our house, with brother Wilkinson's help, in the European style, with the garden; which we began to cultivate. Taught Vaarjee's men the method of digging the ground with spades, and planted some pine-apples. Visited a chief called Toobocovalo, a relation of our friend; were entertained with great hospitality, and received from him a fine cow in pig, and three-score yams, for which, in return, we gave him two or three tools, and some earthen plates. On the Lord's day having told Toobocovalo that we did no work, and spent the whole in the worship of God, he asked with much humour, whether we might eat on that day; and having informed him, he very kindly sent us a baked hog, on which we dined together: he gave us also a very fine myrtle and other shrubs, with pine-apples for our garden, which we planted. Received also a parcel of garden-seeds and a spade from Bunghye.

14th. After constant and heavy rain, which lasted from morning until night with little intermission, we were visited with the heaviest storm of thunder and lightning which we have had since our arrival on the island; however, such weather seems not so frequent here as might be expected from the situation of the country.

15th. The rain still continued very heavy all day. In the evening brother Wilkinson returned home, having been kindly entertained by our brethren at Ardeo. On his return he left his way, and was exposed to some danger; but the Lord, who keeps all our going, graciously preserved him.

16th, Sunday. Brother Buchanan discoursed from Isaiah, liv. 13. During the intervals of worship we heard a hideous outcry of the natives towards Bunghye, and were afterwards informed that it was occasioned by a number of men just arrived from Vavao, who had repaired to Moomoec's tomb, to evince their affection and respect by the same cruel ceremonies as had been observed at his funeral. O that the salvation of Israel were come forth out of Zion! When God brings back the captivity of this people, how will our hearts rejoice to hear these horrid howlings changed into songs of praise to Him who has redeemed his people from death, and ransomed them from the
2.62 FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE.

July.] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

power of the grave! In the afternoon brother Kefo preached from Deut. xxxii. 2.

17th. We were favoured with a visit from brother Veefon, and a son of Mulicemar; they brought a fine hog and yams with them from that chief, and informed us of the death of Tamaifuma on the 13th instant: he was a chief of great repute for personal courage; and this circumstance our adversaries seem to improve to some purpose against us, by making the natives believe that our God, in answer to our prayers, kills them. This being the third chief that has died since our arrival, makes them say that we never died so fast before; and imputing all to the same cause, they say, that if we continue praying and singing, there will not be a chief left alive. This idea, which could only originate from the father of lies, working in the minds of disobedience, seems calculated to create us some trouble; but still it is an unspeakable comfort to reflect, that it shall prevail no farther than is consistent with the holy, wise, and gracious design of our heavenly Father, who, we doubt not, will make his strength perfect in our weakness, so that we may boldly say, "The Lord is our helper, we will not fear what man can do unto us."

On the 18th the same idea was mentioned to us by different persons; it seems to gain ground with them very fast, and our endeavours to persuade them to the contrary are fruitless at present. In the forenoon brother Veefon took his leave; and on Saturday the 22d, brother Bowell paid us a visit. In the beginning of the week he had been at Moom, where the greatest part of the inhabitants are at present assembled for the celebration of the annual natche. There he found the minds of the people had received the same dangerous impression, and that our countrymen were the sole authors and propagators of it; the Lord, however, has graciously over-ruled it, so that it has in some degree brought the mischief they intended us upon their own heads. When it was first mentioned to brother Bowell, Vaarjee was present, and was much displeased with the person who spoke of it. Ambler had also endeavoured to poison the mind of Dugonagabola, who heard him with great indignation, and hifed him out of his presence. A few days after, this fellow quarrelled with one of the chief's carpenters, whom he kicked on the breast, and abused him otherwise in a shocking manner: on this he complained to his master, and Ambler, instead of making any acknowledgments for his conduct, thought proper to justify it in the most provoking manner; upon which he ordered him from his presence, threatening his life if he ever showed his face there more: since that we hear he has gone to Puttafaite; so that Morgan, Connelly, and he, are all together, and, we have no doubt, will be active in plotting farther mischief; thus their machinations were destroyed without our interference. How true is it, that the wrath of man shall praise God, and the remainder of wrath he will restrain, and that no weapon formed against his people shall prosper!

23d. Brother Buchanan preached in the morning from Isaiah, liv. 13. Kefo, from Deut. xxxii. 2.; after which, brother Bowell took his leave.

On the 26th, brother Shelly, who has had the care of our few medicines since brother Harper left us, went to see a woman who, with others, had eaten some fish of a poisonous nature, which was likely to be, to her in particular, attended with bad consequences: an emetic was administered, which removed the cause of the disorder, and restored the poor woman to health. According to the custom of the country, he received his fee before he returned: this was a roasted hog, which is generally killed as soon as the doctor arrives, who is expected to wait till it is sufficiently roasted; it is then given to him: but this being the first instance of the kind, like an inexperienced beginner who knew not the profits of his trade, he divided it chiefly between the poor woman and her friends. It would be a valuable acquisition to this country, and might be a means of facilitating our work, to have a good flock of medicines, and a skilful person to apply them. The disorders which have principally come under our ob-
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE [1797.

Feveration are, a dysentery, of which the person is recovered; a dropsy, of which we have seen but one case; a disorder among the children, which spreads all over them like the small-pox, and seems of as loathsome but more intractable nature; for we found one in this condition at our first landing several months ago, and there seems no alteration upon him as yet; its long continuance is probably owing to improper treatment: we know not whether it be infectious. What seems most general is an ulcerous sore, to which they are very subject. In one family of our acquaintance there are no less than four persons much affected by it: the poor man has lost the use of his limbs entirely; so that he is not able to stand upright, and many parts of his body are affected; and what renders his case truly pitiable, his wife is in little better condition; a great part of her breast is already consumed, and one leg and arm are very bad. Two of their servants are nearly in as bad a state as themselves; they have often applied to us for assistance, which could we afford them, would certainly raise us still higher in their esteem; but at present we have neither proper medicines, nor skill to effect anything this way. In some cases we have seen old women apply the juice of the breadfruit, tied up in leaves, and made hot, with which they rubbed the wound; but it seemed to produce no good effect. As they have not the least idea of physic, whatever disorder they are attacked with has its full course, and often proves fatal.

24th. The principal wife of Futaśilhe was delivered of her first child, the son and heir of his dominions; on which occasion very considerable presents were made.

25th. The great enudee, or natche, described by Cook, was held at Moaa. Men in procession carried a yam, suspended on a pole; others, armed with spears, cried aloud to this effect, "Take care to keep the road clear," and all passengers stood at a considerable distance. Ambler assured us this was a thanksgiving to the oodoo for the late ripe yams. We were invited to join the procession, but did not chuse to make our shoulders bare, which was required, and...
favour with his friend; having lodged one night with him, they rec
ceived a warm remonstrance for it next day from Dugonagaboola,
who assured them of a welcome to his house, and expected they
would make use of no other. After inquiring into our state at home,
and how we fared in his absence, he informed them of what our vil
lancous countrymen had said against us, and expressed his abhorrence
of them on account of it. On their way home they called at Arsko,
where our brethren were well, and desired the whole body might meet
once a month for divine direction, and mutual counsel and encour-
gagement in our work.

5th. Brother Bowell arrived in the evening; and on Sabbath-day
brother Buchanan preached from 2 Tim. ii. 3.; in the afternoon
brother Kefo, from Isaiah, iii. 5.; after which he dispelled the Lord's
fupper. It is surely an unexplicable favour that the Lord thus allows us
to hold our solemn feasts in this land, and from time to time is refresh-
ing us with his abundant goodness. If we had the happiness of seeing
these poor creatures around us impressed with a sense of their lost and
deplorable state by nature, and the excellency and finishableness of the
Redeemer's character and salvation, which He has wrought, and the
gospel reveals; if we could but once see them compelled to come in
and partake of our privileges, our joy would be full; however, it be-
comes us not to despise the day of small things, but patiently to wait
for the salvation of the Lord. He hath spoken good concerning us,
and hath done for us great things, which confirms our hope, that the
day is not far distant when He will make bare his holy arm in the
fight of the nations, and the ends of the earth shall see his salvation.

7th. Brother Bowell determining to remain with us till our
monthly prayer-meeting was over, we the next morning embraced the
opportunity of his presence to hold a meeting of our little body, when
it was agreed that we should observe a general meeting the first Mon-
day of every month; in the morning, for prayer and religious con-
ference; and in the afternoon, for collecting matter for the public
journal, reporting progress in the language, and consulting with
to his own most gracious designs; in frustrating the machinations, and carrying headlong the counsels of our more heathenish countrymen, making them produce the very opposite effects from what they intended. Lo! these are a part of his ways; but if we would tell of all the wonderful things he has done for us, they are more than we are able to express. "O that men would therefore praise the Lord "for his goodness, and declare his wonderful works to the children "of men!"

This day was rendered in some measure memorable by the loss of a large axe, which was snatched from one of the brethren while he was cutting fire-wood; and in the evening some thieves broke into our dwelling while we slept, and rifing the first box they came to, which held nothing but medicines, they had gone off with a quantity of bark, jalap, nitre, &c.; but these not suiting their taste, they left them in the yard, where we found them next morning, so that they got only a few clothes that lay upon the chests.

11th. John Connelly sent to know whether we intended to inform Captain Wilson of what had passed between us and them, observing, that, if we did, it would reduce us to the greatest straits, as it would both prevent them from receiving those things they expected, and had promised to the natives; and also effectually hinder their departure with him for China. This was accompanied with a hint of what we might expect, if our conduct was not suitable to their wishes. In answer we said, that we neither wanted to injure nor to quarrel with them; and if they chose to go to China, we would be no hindrance to them.

12th. Dugonagaboolah sent us a present of provisioins, which was very acceptable; but in the course of the day we received the mortifying intelligence, that he had accepted our large axe with much cordiality from the person who stole it; and after some compliments to his dexterity, had sent him off to Vavao, to be out of the way when the ship arrived. This action gave us an idea of what we might ex-
rounded. Surely his goodness exceeds all search. O for hearts formed to fly forth his praises!

20th. Brother Buchanan preached on board from Psalm v. 12; and brother Bowell in the afternoon.

On the 21st, early, many of the principal chiefs came on board, among whom was Futtafaihe, who, as soon as he saw brother Buchanan, renewed his solicitations for him to go and live with him, at the same time reminding him of a promise to that purpose, given on our first arrival, also of the several proofs of his favour since bestowed; and, with heartfelt assurances of his love and esteem, promised, on his part, to render every thing as agreeable as was in his power, and to remove every obstacle, if brother Buchanan would but mention them to him; this, however, at present he declined to do; but the chief being well acquainted with the recent villany of Connelly (who has resided with him ever since he came to the island) and his associates, Ambler and Morgan, asked if he was unwilling to live with Connelly, and being answered in the affirmative, he immediately proposed to bind him hand and foot, and bring him on board; but this proposal was at this time rejected, it being more desirable to Captain Wilson, and all concerned, that these fellows should come on board as they had promised, and depart of their own accord. Brother Buchanan could not help looking upon this as a plain call of Providence, and determined in his own mind to comply with it, if he could find another brother willing to accompany him, and if the proposal also met with the approbation of Captain Wilson, and the brethren on board, which it did. Brother Gaulton readily consented to be his partner. When their intention was communicated to Futtafaihe, he expressed great satisfaction, and immediately invited them to go on shore, and choose a place for their future residence. In the afternoon brother Shelly arrived from Ahééfo, and informed us that the thieves had paid another visit, and carried off a duck.

22d. Brother Gaulton went to Ahééfo, in order to bring his own
Our time this week was chiefly employed in dividing, and carrying to our respective places of residence, the part of the cargo which, in the division at Otaheite, had fallen to our share. In it we found such an immense quantity of useful and necessary iron tools of all sorts, as far exceeded our greatest expectation, and filled the natives with astonishment. Our warmest acknowledgments are due, and must infinitely short of our obligations, to the divine Author of all our mercies, who hath put it into the hearts of his people to provide, and of his honoured servants, the directors, to bestow on us so bountiful a supply of every thing that could be devised for our comfort, and the furtherance of the work in which we are engaged; but especially for the wonderful manner in which he has prepared, brought forward, and preferred our dear captain, whom we cannot but esteem as the greatest testimony of the divine favour bestowed on our society. While on the voyage, the prosperity and furtherance of the work seemed to engross his whole attention. To his indulgent care in procuring and allowing us every comfort that could be enjoyed by people in our circumstances, might be imputed that extraordinary degree of health which we enjoyed. His counsel and advice has often guarded us from the intrusion of discord. His conversation was wholly calculated to stimulate our zeal. In our absence he has been mindful of our interests, and has effectually prevented every complaint. The affability and kindness of his conduct among the natives has won him their affections; and indeed in what we have reason to believe is his principal aim, he has succeeded wonderfully, that is, to adorn the doctrine of God our Saviour in all things. May the Lord enable us to do likewise, and fill our hearts with gratitude to himself, and to all the instruments of his unbounded goodness! May we walk as children of so many mercies; and knowing that we are but stewards of these gifts of his providence for which we must ere long give an account, may we be led to devote ourselves, and all our enjoyments, to his praise and glory, that we may give in our account with joy in the day of our Lord Jesus!

CHAPTER XVI.

Description of Tongataboo.

OUR dear friends and benefactors in the direction may justly look for some account of this country, where the Lord in his gracious providence, through their instrumentality, has placed us; and we think ourselves bound, in gratitude to them, to furnish them with the fullest information in our power; but in this attempt we find ourselves much at a loss for want of the Rev. Mr. Greatheed's manuscript account of these islands, which happened to be left at Otaheite, and which if we had brought with us, would have been useful in directing our attention to several objects which may have escaped our notice. Notwithstanding the numerous invitations we have received to visit other islands of this group, we have not as yet seen it our duty to comply, as, for want of the language, such visits could be no way profitable to the natives, and would have exposed us to so many unnecessary temptations.

Our observations must therefore be wholly confined to Tongataboo; the situation, extent, and produc [there is a break in the text]
The government of Tongataboo is so complex in itself, and the natives’ account of it so different, each taking a particular pride in exalting his own chief above others, that it is difficult to come at any certainty concerning it. The following appears to us most consistent with the truth.

This island bears an unrivalled sovereignty over the whole group, Feejee not excepted. The inhabitants of Feejee having long ago discovered this island, frequently invaded and committed great cruelties in it; but in an expedition which the Tonga people made against them lately, under the command of Tiogahowe, Filatonga, and Cunauvie, they completely routed and brought them into subjection; so that they now pay tribute to Tongataboo on certain occasions, the same as the other islands, of which we saw an instance at the death of Mooneo. Tongataboo is divided into three large districts, viz. Ahufo, at the north-west end, over which Dugonagaboola reigns with absolute sway. Mooa, the middle district, is under the same subjection to Futafahi; and Vaharlo has the same power over Ahoge, situated at the south-east part, each claiming a right of dispensing over the lives and property of his own subjects, which we have seen exercised most despotically. These districts are subdivided into many smaller ones, which have their respective chiefs presiding over them, and exercise the same authority as the superior chiefs, to whom they are nevertheless, in some cases, accountable for their conduct; so that the whole resembles the ancient feudal system of our ancestors. The government seems to have been formerly more in the hands of the Futafahi than at present. Upon the death of the late Pouafo, father of the present Futafahi, Duatonga being then a minor, the intolerant ambition of his widow, Mishoofe, of the Toubou (or rather Doubou) family, led her to attempt extending her power in some particulars further than any of her predecessors had done. This was in vain submitted to by all the other chiefs, except Feenou Tiogahowe, who Dugonagaboola, son of Mooneo, and nephew of Feenou, the celebrated friend of Cook; he at that time reigned over Eooa, and rejecting her proposals, declared war against her, contrary to the remonstrances of all his friends; he however succeeded, drove her entirely from this island to Vavao, whether he also followed, and having reduced her to subjection, left her there, where she still remains in a state of exile.

The people fully answer to the most favourable representations the world has ever received of them; for surely no appellation was ever better applied than that given to them by our countrymen, of which they seem very proud, since we made them acquainted with it, and very studious to render themselves more deserving of it. They possess many excellent qualities, which, were they enlightened with the knowledge of the gospel, would render them the most amiable people on earth; for instance, their bounty and liberality to strangers is very great, and their generosity to one another unequalled. It is no uncommon thing for them to complain they are dying of hunger, and, as soon as they receive a morsel, to divide it among as many as are present, the first receiver generally leaving the smallest share, and often none at all. When they kill a hog, or make any mess for themselves, there is always a portion sent to their friends, who return the favour as soon as their circumstances will admit; which keeps up a constant friendly communication among them, and which we have never seen interrupted by any quarrel, during a stay of more than four months.

Their honesty to one another seems unimpeachable, though we have no reason to think the accounts of their dishonesty to strangers exaggerated. The murder of children, and other horrid practices, which prevail among the Otaheitans, are unheard of here. Their children are much indulged, and old age honoured and revered. Female chastity is not much esteemed among the lower orders, it being a common practice with the chiefs, in our visits to them, to offer some of their females to sleep with us; the practices of our aban-
doned countrymen making them believe this a favour we could not do without. Our first refusal seemed to excite a surprise, but has generally prevented a second temptation from the same person. Uncharity among females of rank, and especially after marriage, we have heard is punished with severity; however, we have not as yet known an instance.

Their marriages are attended with very little ceremony; the only one we have seen was that of Vaarjee, with whom brothers Bowell and Harper have been some time resident. This was conducted in the following manner: A young female having attracted his attention, he first informed his mother that he wished to add her to the number of his wives. She immediately communicated this to the damsel's father, and the proposal meeting his approbation, he clothed her in a new garment, and with attendants, and such a quantity of baked hogs, yams, yava-root, &c. as he could afford, she was sent to her intended spouse, who being apprized of her coming, seated himself in his house, and received her in the same manner and with as little emotion, as he would have done any other visitor: feasting on the provisions, and a good draught of yava, concluded the whole, and the bride was at liberty either to return to her father till again sent for, or to take up her residence with her husband, which, in this instance, she preferred. Polygamy is in common practice among the chiefs, each of whom takes as many wives as he pleases; but they are entire strangers to domestic broils, which may, in a great degree, be owing to the absolute power each man has over his own family, every woman being so much at her husband's disposal, as renders her liable to be discarded on the smallest displeasure.

Their deities are numerous; and though we have hitherto been able to say but little to them on this subject, we have reason to think their prejudices are strong. Every district has its own deity; and each family of note has one, whom they consider as their peculiar patron. Tallataboo is the god of Aheefo, which being at present the most powerful, he is accounted a great warrior. Futtafaifie presides over
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE [1797-]

the shock is over; and we have sometimes seen them endeavour to quash his discontent, and reduce him to good behaviour, by beating the ground with large sticks. Tongaloer, the god of the sky, and Fenoulonga, of the rain, they suppose to be males; besides these, they have a great many others of both sexes, whose names we cannot enumerate, over earth, sea, and sky, each acting in their proper sphere, and sometimes counteracting one another, according as interest or inclination leads them. They also acknowledge the existence of a great number of strange gods, calling them by the general name of Fyga, among whom they rank ours as the greatest; and, when they think it will answer their purpose, they will readily acknowledge him as far wiser, and in every respect better than theirs, having taught us to make so much better ships, tools, cloth, &c. than they have ever been able to do. Besides these, they imagine every individual to be under the power and control of a spirit peculiar to himself, which they call odooa, who interests himself in all their concerns, but, like Cala Filatonga, is little regarded till angry, when they think he inflicts upon them all the deadly disorders to which they are subject; and, then, to appease him, the relations and other connexions of the afflicted person, especially if he be a chief, run into all the inhuman practices of cutting off their little fingers, beating their faces, and tabooing themselves from certain kinds of food. Human sacrifices seem little in practice; the only victims to superstition which we have seen are already mentioned in the case of Moomooe: though, at our arrival, Ambler informed us, that when a great chief lay sick they often starved their women, to the number of three or four at a time. When the odooa is inexorable, the death of the person is inevitable and sure, and the surviving friends seem for a short time inconsolable; but their grief is soon changed into the opposite extreme, and they run into great extravagances in their feasts as when the sorrowful passions prevailed they inflicted on themselves sufferings.

They believe the immortality of the soul, which at death, they say, is immediately conveyed in a very large sail-less canoe to a distant country, called Doobludha, which they describe as resembling the Mahometan paradise. They call the god of this region of pleasure Higgolayo, and esteem him as the greatest and most powerful of all others, the rest being no better than servants to him. This doctrine, however, is wholly confined to the chiefs, for the toos (or lower order) can give no account whatever; as they reckon the enjoyments of Doobludha above their capacity, so they fear never to think of what may become of them after they have served the purposes of this life. We have not been able to learn what ideas they form of the origin of their existence, or any other parts of the creation; when spoken to on these subjects they seem quite lost; this may, however, be owing to the inaccuracy of our expressions, arising from an imperfect knowledge of the language, which has hitherto prevented us from opposing any of those gross absurdities. But we look forward to that happy day when the glorious sun of righteousness will arise, and turn this shadow of death into the morning.

The produce of this island is already so well described, that it seems unnecessary to say much of it here. We have been able to add very little to it. Our seeds, which have been sown in different parts, bid fair to do well; this induces us to think any kind of European seeds would thrive here, were it not for the rats, which destroy them as they appear above ground. Rats, with hogs, dogs, and guineas, were the only quadrupeds we found here. The cattle left by Capt. Cook have been all destroyed some years ago: the horse and mare having been first gored by the bull, gave the natives an idea of his furious temper, and put them in terror for themselves: therefore, to prevent any bad accident taking place, they destroyed him, with the cow and three young ones, which, they informed us, were all they had produced, except one young bull which had been previously taken to Fecjeg. Captain Wilson, in his second visit, has left us eight geese, three cats, and an English dog, of which the natives are very fond, and which we hope will be useful in their proper places. The death of a ram at Otaheite prevented us from receiving...
any sheep, which we esteem a great loss, as there is abundance of excellent food for those useful animals in the most neglected parts of this island, and they might in time prove a great advantage to the natives, not only by supplying their deficiency of food, from which many of them suffer much at present, but by leading them into habits of industry, to which they are strangers; for though they are more indolent than most of their neighbours scattered about this sea, far the greater part of their time is spent in idleness. This conjecture receives much strength from the earnest desire they express for our woollen clothes, especially blankets; which induces us to think, if they had the materials, and the least hint how to make use of them, they would soon endeavour to manufacture them themselves.

The soil is everywhere prolific, and consists of a fine rich mould, upon an average about fourteen or fifteen inches deep, free from stones, except near the beach, where coral rocks appear above the surface. Beneath this mould is a red loam four or five inches thick; next is a very strong blue clay in small quantities; and in some places has been found a black earth, which emits a very fragrant smell resembling bergamot, but it soon evaporates when exposed to the air. The air is pure and wholesome, much sharper in the winter than we expected to have found it, especially when the wind is from the southward; but for want of a thermometer, which happened to be broken, we have never been able to ascertain its true state.

But we must conclude our present account, hoping our next will contain something more interesting and encouraging to our dear friends, whose prayers we earnestly entreat in our behalf: for rarely never men in the world stood more in need of their assistance in this respect than we do. Our work is great, our strength is small, very weakens itself; our enemies are crafty and powerful, but none we find so dangerous as those of our own house, those evil hearts of unbelief that are always ready to draw us from the God of our strength, who is the rock of our salvation. But if God be for us, who can be against us? He bids us fear not: and we have not only the assurance of his word, but also the testimony of his providence, that he is with us, and will never leave us nor forsake us. Well then may we go on in divine strength, rejoicing in the prospects of greater tribulations than we have hitherto experienced, or at present have in view; trusting him that in every conflict which we may be called on to sustain under the banner of the glorious Captain of our salvation, we shall grow stronger and stronger, and at length be brought off the field more than conquerors through Him who hath loved us, and given himself for us.

The Duff is now unmooring. We feel all the anguish that is consequent upon a separation of friends who are bound together by such endearing ties as shall endure when those of nature shall be forever dissolved. Besides our dear captain, we cannot but esteem many of the officers and crew as children of the same family with ourselves; all of whom, ourselves, and all our concerns, both for time and eternity, we desire to resign to the sovereign dispensation of our gracious heavenly Father, and to the word of his grace, which is able to keep us from falling, and give us all an inheritance among them that are sanctified through faith which is in Jesus Christ. Farewell. May grace, mercy, and peace be multiplied to all who love our Lord Jesus Christ in sincerity, and are seeking the advancement of his kingdom and glory! Amen.

Tongataboo Roads, Sept. 6th, 1797.
CHAPTER XVII.

Transactons at Tongataboo during the Ship's Stay.

Thus far I have written from the brethren's journal, judging that, though repetitions would unavoidably occur by this plan, the incidents related as they happened would enable those interested to form a better idea both of the natives and the real situation of the missionaries, than by any other method I was able to pursue; for perhaps from things which I might have passed over, some skilful friend would draw useful and interesting inferences.

And as I have brought it up to the day we left those dear servants of our blessed Lord, there remains but little to be said concerning what passed at the ship; as during this stay, which was twenty days, the whole was spent in one continued intercourse of friendship and service between us and the natives: every day we were visited by some or other of them; they laid us in a very large sea-store of fine yams, and as many hogs as we were willing to accept; for the stock of these which we had brought from Otaheite was still sufficient to take to sea. Some boars and sows of the larger size we exchanged with them for others, and had the satisfaction to hear that a sow thus exchanged to Vaarjee, Bowell and Harper's chief, had a few days after farrowed nine pigs. For articles of iron they will venture anything. On our first arrival an iron hoop was stolen off the windlass end; but as no person was suffered to come on board till we got it again, it was returned next day by Futtafaihe. Several other things of less consequence were stolen, but as the captain did not like to break the harmony which subsisted for the sake of them, they were never recovered. Among other things, the cook's axe was stolen; and to give our friends an idea of the small value of a few glittering guineas in the eyes of these people, when put in competition with a useful iron tool, the captain gave the cook ten new guineas to purchase another axe from the natives; but his endeavours to make such a purchase were vain; they only laughed at him for his offer. Besides iron, our cloth and small blue and green beads were in high estimation among them; and some of them even offered us to bring such on our next visit. They also valued nails, especially of the larger sort. But it may be observed that they are too scrupulous in dealing, that they generally stand for the full value of every thing.

The captain was never on shore, and each of us was only permitted one day at Mooa for pleasure. As we refused to have any diversions acted for our entertainment, lest the idea of pleasing might lead them to excesses inexcusable on our part, none of their customs of this nature were witnessed by us, but I suppose them to be fully described by Captain Cook. The day before we sailed I went to Mooa in the pinnace, accompanied by Mr. Falconer, Mr. Robson, and my brother James Wilson. Several hundreds of the natives lined the shore, part of them entertaining us to go first to Futtafaihe, and the other part for us to visit Dugongaboola first. As I had previously promised the former, we repaired to him, and were received with great ceremony; and when we had spent some time with him we visited the other chief, whom we found near the beach, seated about an hundred others round a bowl of kava, part of which they offered to us; but the root only suited our taste. This, being what they conclude their morning's repast with, is sweet as sugar-cane, and greatly resembles it, being only a little more pasty. Both chiefs treated us well; Futtafaihe roasted a large hog for our dinner, after which he accompanied us to the flatookas of his ancestors: they lie ranged in a line eastward from his house, among a grove of trees, and are many in number, and of different constructions: some, in a square form, were not in the least raised above the level of the common ground; a row of large stones formed the sides, and at each
corner two high stones were placed upright at right angles to each other, and in a line with their respective sides; others were such as the brethren describe that of Moomooe to be; and a third fort were built square like the first; the largest of which was at the base one hundred and fifty-six feet by one hundred and forty; it had four steps from the bottom to the top, that run quite round the pile: one stone composed the height of each step; a part of it being sunk in the ground; and some of these stones in the wall of the lower are immensely large; one, which I measured, was twenty-four feet by twelve, and two feet thick; these Futtafaihe informed us were brought in double canoes from the island of Lefooga. They are coral stone, and are hewn into a tolerably good shape, both with respect to the straightness of their sides and flatness of their surfaces. They are now so hardened by the weather, that the great difficulty we had in breaking a specimen of one corner made it not easy to conjecture how the labour of hewing them at first had been effected; as, by the marks of antiquity which some of them bear, they must have been built long before Tafman shewed the natives an iron tool. Besides the trees which grow on the top and sides of most of them, there are the eetooa, and a variety of other trees about them; and these, together with the thousands of bats which hang on their branches, all contribute to the awful solemnity of those sepulchral mansions of the ancient chiefs. On our way back Futtafaihe told us that all the fatookas we had seen were built by his ancestors, who also lay interred in them; and as there appeared no reason to doubt the truth of this, it proves that a supreme power in the government of the island must for many generations have been in the family of the Futtafaihes; for though there were many fatookas in the island, the brethren, who had seen most of them, said they were not to be compared to these for magnitude, either in the pile or the stones which compose them.

One of his wives was lying-in at this time, and we were conducted to the apartment where she was; it was extremely neat, and the floors were covered with mats. Both herself and the child had their skins coloured with turmeric, which gave them a glittering appearance, and they said this was their custom with women in childbed. She had several female attendants; and though Futtafaihe has many other children, all the people seemed elate and glad on this occasion. During our stay we visited several chiefs of both sexes, and received presents from each of them. As the evening approached we took our leave, and returned to the ship.

Mooa is a beautiful place, especially where Futtafaihe’s house stands. Proceeding from the lagoon about a quarter of a mile through fenced lanes, a spacious square green about half a furlong wide opens itself; at the farther end of which the dwelling stands; on the same green, which is as smooth as if rolled, a few large spreading trees grow in an irregular disposition, which add much beauty to the scene. On the east side is a neat fence enclosing the long grove where the fatookas stand; on the west are the dwellings of different chiefs in their enclosures; and along the north or lower side of the square, the great road runs from one end of the island to the other; this road is in general about six or seven yards wide, but eastward from the green, and for half a mile, it is not less than sixty yards wide. In this part there is a range of trees as large and spreading as the largest English oaks; and as their branches meet at the top, and quite exclude the sun’s rays, a pleasant walk is afforded by their shade. Close by these, brothers Buchanan and Gaulton are situated.
ON Thursday morning, the 7th of September, we weighed, and
sailing from Tongataboo by the northern passage, passed close
by the small islands of Honga Hapu and Honga Tonga; these are
both moderately high, and appear fertile: at four P.M. they bore
E. S. E. twenty-two miles distant. After which we steered
N.W. per compass one hundred and twenty-six miles, and west thirty-two
miles. Observed at noon on the 8th in 18° 43' S. and supposed
that a current was setting us to the westward. From noon till half
past five P.M. we steered W. by S. thirty-nine miles; then hove to
for two islands, the southernmost of which bore S.W. ½ S. and the
northernmost W. by N. distance from the latter seven leagues. The
former had a remarkable flat top, on which account we called it
Table island. A little before we hove to, the time-keeper gave
the longitude of the ship 182° 51' E. Before dark we could see
other islands further to the westward, and supposed them either the
same, or very near to those, Captain Bligh first fell in with after
leaving Tofoa in the launch.

We had brisk gales and a hollow sea all the night: about six hours
we lay with the ship's head to the northward, then wore to the
southward till daylight: in which last space of time we must have
passed close to a dangerous reef, named in the chart Providence
reef; but as nothing of this kind was in sight before dark, we had
no apprehension of reefs lying in our way; and even when the day
broke we thought we had a clear sea, and at six o'clock bore away,
and run W. N. W. about half an hour, when we discovered several
islands besides those we had seen on the preceding evening; and
perceived that extensive reefs surrounded every one of them. In
viewing our situation from aloft it appeared very critical, and occa-
sioned the island ahead to be called Danger island. A little from
this island S. E. lay three or four small iflets, and a coral reef ex-
tended about three or four miles S. E. from them. On the starboard
quarter another reef tended to the N. E. further than we could see,
as the weather was hazy. Thus were we running directly for Danger
island, and leaving those extensive reefs upon each quarter, when
the sight of many more islands gave us reason to suppose that to
attempt a passage through them would be hazardous, if not impractic-
able. We hauled, therefore, our wind, set what sail the ship could
bear, and tried to work out by the way we came in. The gale in-
creasing, and the sea running very high, we had little hopes at first
of gaining ground, or that the ship would fly in fo heavy a sea.
However, she never missed stays but once; the tide likewise ap-
ppeared to be in our favour: for, after making a few tacks, at half
past nine A.M. we passed to windward of the S. E. reef, and stood
southward. As we ran along we saw a large space to
leeward free from reefs, which almost tempted us to bear away; but
proceeding further, the islands to the S. W. appeared connected by
them. Therefore we determined to get to the north by the silt of
them; though there is no doubt but, in fine weather, a passage
might be found as well here as among those through which we
afterwards had to thread the needle. All this day and the night
was spent in plying to windward. On the morning of the 10th
passed Providence reef, which is a small spot, and bears east from
the south end of Danger island. We afterwards passed the north-east
reef, where once more we appeared to have a clear sea. Table and
Danger islands, of which we had the nearest view, wore an aspect
of fertility, having the loftiest hills covered with trees to their sum-
mits. Observed at noon in latitude 18° 23' S.
supposed to lie N.E. from the large islands, which he passed when the canoes chafed him.

From the main-head we observed a reef trending to the N.E. to weather which we hailed our wind to the northward, and passing it, found towards some small islands, which we called the Clusters. As we approached, being surrounded with reefs and islands on all sides, we put the ship under an easy sail, and chose the most clear space to make short tacks in, till next morning. At seven o'clock a low island to windward bore E. by N. and the highest of the Clusters bore S.S.W.; the wind was easterly, and the sea as smooth as a river. At the above time we stood to the S.E. by S. under the topsails; and at nine o'clock, no danger appearing, we thought ourselves safe; but we were presently alarmed by the ship striking upon a coral reef, upon which the sea hardly broke, to give the least warning. All hands were upon deck in an instant, and, as the luck failed, became under great apprehensions of being shipwrecked; a misfortune which preftented itself with a thousand frightful ideas. We knew that the Feejes were cannibals of a fierce disposition, and who had never had the least intercourse with any voyagers; consequently we could expect no favour from such. Imagination, quick and fertile on such occasions, figured them dancing round us, while we were routed on large fires. However, it was no time to indulge thoughts of this kind, but to try what could be done to save the ship. Judging it to be a weather reef we were on, the moment the tacks the sails were hoie aback, and in about five or fix minutes we beheld with joy the sail set, and shortly after was quite afloat; when we were again delivered from our fears, and found the ship, which had kept upright the whole time, seemed to have received no injury. It was not possible to ascertain at sea what damage had been sustained, as she made no water; but on her coming into dock, we discovered how very wonderfully we had been preferred. The coral rock on which we struck was providentially directed exactly against one of the timbers. The violence of the blow had beat in the copper, deeply
wounded the plank, and beat it to shivers. Had the stroke been between the ribs of the ship, it must have gone through, and we had probably never returned to adore the Author of our mercies.

Thus the gracious Lord, who still guarded us with a shepherd's care, was pleased to show us the insufficiency of human prudence; and that, except we are kept by himself, "the watchman waketh but "in vain." O that he would give us hearts of gratitude and thankfulness, in some measure proportioned to his daily mercies extended to us his unworthy creatures!

When the day shewed us the dangers which lay hid on every side, it appeared wonderful how we had escaped so well, and made us very desirous to get clear of them as fast as possible. With this view we steered N.N.W. betwixt several small reefs, not larger in circumference than the ship, and with scarce a wash of the sea upon them. They seemed to extend on both sides of us, as far as we could see. When we had passed these, and began to bring the islands astern, we thought ourselves quite clear, and were regretting that we could have no intercourse with the inhabitants; who, we had no doubt, would have been willing to barter with us, had we found safe anchorage for the ship; for with these people the Friendly islanders carry on a trade with the articles they get from us.

At nine A.M. another island came in sight to the N.W. for which we shaped our course, to try if anchorage could be found near it; and the weather side appearing on our approach to be clear of reefs, it gave us hopes that the lee side would be the same; but it proved otherwise. At noon the body of the island bore S.W., distant one mile, and our latitude by observation 19° 41' S., longitude per chronometer 180° 25' E. Along this north side, there being no reef, the sea broke violently against the cliffs, which are high, and from the face of them huge fragments have fallen off, and lie scattered at their base. These cliffs, especially towards the north-west end, have a less fertile appearance than those we had already passed; but towards the east end the island wears a better aspect; and at this part there were natives and houses upon the top of the hill. Probably there is low ground on the south-west side, where we intended to anchor; but coming to the north-west point, we saw a foal close to us, and a large flat ran S.W. off the island: upon which we hauled our wind; and as this was the last we saw of this dangerous group, it received the name of Farewell island.

These are probably the same as Tasmaent got entangled among, and which he calls Prince William's islands; however, it may be presumed that but part of them have been yet seen by Europeans, as it was evident that many large islands lay to the S.W. the nearest of which we could but faintly distinguish, and some were at a distance from the tracks of Captain Bligh in the launch of the Bounty, and afterwards in the Providence.

They doubtless are connected with those which the people at Tongataboo call the Fuejes, as they lie in the direction pointed out by them. In general they are high, and all we could distinctly see appeared fertile; the loftieft hills were woody to their summits, and on the top of several was abundance of cocoa-nut trees, which on some islands thrive only on the low ground; nor is it here as at Otaheite, where the middle region is commonly nothing but burnt grass; for, from the beach to the top of the hills is one continued grove of trees, and many of them have fruitful skirts of low land. The valleys of Middleton's island appeared delightfully pleasant, and must abound in all the fruits and roots common to those parts of the world. In some places we saw spots of cultivated ground, probably of kava.

Coral reefs surround every island, and those which lie near each other are connected by them. Though there appeared to us to be no openings through these reefs to the respective islands they enclose, yet we cannot venture to say that there is no such thing, but think it highly probable that by a more diligent search both openings and anchorage might be found. But as the captain proposed making some stay at the Pelew islands, and had to reach China at a specified
time, we could not with propriety delay longer here in search of an uncertainty. Where we passed close we saw many inhabitants, and have no doubt but that they are all well peopled; and they must be an improved people in the savage state, for the natives of the Friendly Islands, who are unwilling to give place to any, acknowledge that the Fijians excel there in many ingenious works; that they possess larger canoes, and are a brave, fighting people; but abhor them for their detestable practice of eating their unfortunate prisoners. They use bows and arrows in war; and from the blackness of their complexion, and the difference of their language and manners, they are evidently a distinct race from the natives of those groups where missions are now established.

16th. We observed at noon in latitude 13° 15' S. and at five P.M. saw the island of Rotumah, bearing N.W. by W. The weather being at this time equally, with rain, we have to for the night. At daylight next morning we bore away, and at half past eight o'clock were opposite the north-east end, when several canoes came off, containing from three to six and seven persons each. At first they were shy, and kept aloof; but presently some bolder than the rest ventured alongside, and one with a fowl in his hand, taking hold of a rope, dropped himself into the water, and was hauled on board. He made signs that he wanted an axe for the fowl, by which we immediately knew that there must have been friendly intercourse between them and Captain Edwards of the Pandora, who discovered this island in August 1791; but it is probable that they have been visited by none besides, as they now beheld us with much surprise and wonder. This day happening to be Sunday, the rule we had constantly observed while in this sea prevented trade between us and these people. However, this man received an axe, a few fish-hooks, and other things, which made him leap for joy. Three others, encouraged by his good fortune, ventured after him, and fared equally well; and it appeared that many more would have come on board, had they an opportunity; for observing that we steered rather from the island, they pointed towards a bay, as if dubious we should come to anchor. As we ran down the north side there appeared a good bay near to the west end, where, if the anchorage be safe, ships may ride sheltered from all but northerly winds; and perhaps a situation might be found to lie in the same bay sheltered from the south-west. This bay lies to windward of the highest bluff hill, on the west end of the main island; a high islet lies directly north of this bluff hill, and they bear a great resemblance to each other, being both steeped on the north side. Westward of this last lie three more small islets, the largest of which appeared to be split in the middle, as if broken by an earthquake.

The main island far exceeds in population and fertility all that we had seen in this sea; for in a space not more than a mile in length we counted about two hundred houses next the beach, besides what the trees probably concealed from our view; this was at the east end, and there was reason to think almost every part of it equally well inhabited. In the shape and size of their persons we could distinguish no difference between them and the Friendly Islanders, except that we thought them of a lighter colour, and some difference in the tattooing, having the resemblance of birds and fishes, with circles and spots upon their arms and shoulders: the latter are seemingly intended to represent the heavenly bodies. Two or three of the women whom we saw were tattooed in this last way; at Tongataboo they keep the upper parts clear of all tattooing. The women here wear their hair long, have it dyed of a reddish colour; and with a pigment of the same, mixed with cocoa-nut oil, they rub their neck and breast. The men who were on board appeared to have much of the thread, mainly fene of the above people, and many of their customs. One of them made signs, that in cases of mourning they cut their heads with shanks' teeth, beat their cheeks till they blist, and wounded themselves with spears; but that the women only cut off the little fingers, the men being exempt from it.
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

wheras at Tongataboo there is hardly man or woman but what has left both.

Their single canoes (for we saw no double ones) were nearly the same in all respects as at the Friendly Islands, being of the same shape, sewed together on the inside, and decorated in the same manner with shells; but, being rather shorter in proportion to their width, seemed not so neat and well finished. The only weapons we saw were spears curiously carved, and pointed with the bone of the sting ray. The natives expressed great surprize and curiosity at the sight of our sheep, goats, and cats. Hogs and fowls, they said, they had in great plenty, which, added to the evidently superior fertility of the island, and the seeming cheerful and friendly disposition of the natives, makes this, in our opinion, the most eligible place for ships coming from the eastward, wanting refreshments, to touch at; and with regard to missionary views, could one or two young men, such as Crook, be found willing to devote their lives to the instruction of perhaps five or six thousand poor heathen, there can hardly be a place where they could settle with greater advantage, as there is food in abundance; and the island lying remote from others, can never be engaged in wars, except what broils may happen among themselves. Its latitude is 12° 31' S. and longitude 177° E.; its length, in an east and west direction, is not above four or five miles.

From Rotumah we steered N.W. by W. to W. and W. by S. for eight days; and as we hope to every night, we had reason to think that no land lay within four or five leagues on each side of our track. At eight A.M. on the 24th, we saw land from the mast-head bearing N.W. by N. and immediately steered for it. The weather being gloomy, with drizzling rain, we had no observation for the latitude. About five o'clock in the evening, as we drew near to the land, we found that it consisted of ten or eleven separate islands, two or three of which were of considerable size; and saw a canoe coming towards us, in which were two men: they approached within hail, but would come no nearer; they stood up and brandished their paddles, and using many wild gestures, hooped and halleded in a harsh tone, not seemingly as a menace or defiance, but the effect of surprize and a mixture of other passions at so wonderful a sight, having, in all probability, never beheld a ship before. They had baskets of fruit in the canoe, and to them they frequently pointed, as if they wanted to barter them; but if a conjecture might be allowed, I should rather think they meant them as offerings; for if they really never did see a ship before, they could know nothing of our articles, nor their use or value. However, whatsoever they intended, fear kept them at a distance, though we used every method to allure them alongside. Nine canoes more were now coming off, but they acted with the same caution and fear as the first, keeping all together astern of the ship. When we had got pretty near to the island we tacked, and should have passed through among them, had they not perceived their situation, and paddled to windward. After this they were making towards the largest of the islands, when a heavy squall of wind and rain coming on, and obliging us to bear before it, we were so near running over some of them, that the men in one small canoe jumped overboard and swam to another. When the squall was over, we saw that they had all got near to the shore, and that the deserted canoe was not far from us; we therefore stood close to her and picked her up, hoping to have an opportunity of returning her the next day.

This canoe (and they all seemed to be alike) was about twelve or fourteen feet long, and about fifteen inches broad, made of one tree, sharpened at the ends, and a little ornamented on the upper part; the instrument with which they had hollowed her had left marks as if done with a gouge.

Having put the ship under a snug sail, we stood to the eastward all the night, and at daybreak found we had drifted considerably to the southward; but as we still expected to have some intercourse with the natives, we set sail, and plded to windward. About eleven A.M.
we were pretty near to the large island, when five canoes ventured off; but acted with the same caution as before, taking great care to keep between us and the shore, to which they paddled after about an hour's stay. Seeing them depart, we stood close in with a reef which lies about half a mile from the beach, and seems to extend some distance from the west end; and probably the islands are connected by it. Where we were, we found seven fathoms; a flat coral bottom. Finding that their fears prevailed over their curiosity, and that we were likely to have no intercourse with them, we lowered the jolly-boat down, and intended to tow the canoe close to the shore, and there leave her with a few of our articles in her. But observing that the ship could not get near enough to land the boat in case of an attack, this design was relinquished, and we immediately bore away.

The largest of this group we named Disappointment Island, and the whole cluster Duff's Group: they are about eleven in number, lying in a direction S.E. and N.W. fourteen or fifteen miles; in the middle are two larger islands about six miles in circumference; between these last is a small island, and to the eastward are three islets, two of which are round and high, the other flat and longish. On the north-west part of the group are five or six more; some of them high. At the east end of one is a remarkable rock in form of an obelisk. The small islands are apparently barren; but the two largest are entirely covered with wood, among which were several coconut trees; but, on the whole, they had not the appearance of great fertility. The natives appeared stout and well made, with copper-coloured complexions; their houses are built close to each other, and not dispersed, as we had been accustomed to see them; a horde of their dwellings was on the south-west side of Disappointment Island. The latitude of the latter is 9° 37' S. and longitude 167° E.

From Duff's Group we steered W. by S. thirteen or fourteen leagues, and on the following day observed in latitude 19° 4' S. and were then just losing sight of the easternmost of the group, bearing about E. 13° N. when we again saw land in the south-west quarter, and steered for it, which proved to be Swallow Island and Volcano Island; and further to the S.W. we could discern Egmont Island: all these were discovered by Captain Carteret. Besides these we discovered a low island, which lies about S. S.W. from Volcano Island, and steered to go between the two latter, but found that a reef ran from the north part of the low island; to avoid which we hauled to the northward, then bore away; and steering W. by S. about five leagues, saw two more low islands bearing W. by N. distant two or three miles. As the moon was just now setting, and we had reason to think running in the dark would be extremely dangerous, we hove to with the ship's head towards Volcano Island. Captain Carteret, in his Narrative, says, that they saw smoke, but no flame, issuing from this volcano; but as we passed it close, and even when we were at a distance, we beheld it emitting a large and bright flame every ten minutes; which was to me and many on board truly gratifying, who had never before beheld so grand a phenomenon. The height of this volcano is from the surface of the sea two thousand feet and upwards; and its height is to its base in the proportion of one to three; its circular form, with straight sides and an apparently pointed top, gave us reason to suppose that it had received this form by successive eruptions of lava issuing from the crater, and running down its sides: and perhaps if this ever was what naturalists call a primitive mountain, it might not originally be very high; its being surrounded by low islands, and its similar form to any common heap of matter, naturally enough suggest such an idea.

28th. At six A.M. we had the west side of Volcano Island in one with the west end of Trevanion's island, bearing, per compass, S. 23° E. At the same time the eastern extremity of Egmont (or Guernsey) island bore S. 43° E. and the extremities of two low islands north of us from N. 33° W. to N. 20° W. distance of the volcano five miles. Hence I conclude Egmont Island of far less extent than it is said to be by Captain Carteret. Variation 10° E.
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE [1797.

From six A.M. till noon we steered W. by N. by compass twenty-three miles, and observed in latitude 15° 2' S. and longitude, corrected from lunar sights and chronometer, 165° 4' E.; and at this time the volcano bore E. 29° S.; but we had reason to think that a considerable current set to the northward. From noon we steered W.N.W. twenty-eight miles, and could just discern Volcano island through the haze; probably, had the weather been clearer, we might have seen it farther off; though even now we must have been distant from it near twenty leagues.

On the 29th and 30th we had unsettled weather, with thunder, lightning, and rain. About noon we paddled to the southward of Stewart's islands; they are five in number, of no great extent, and low. They were discovered by Captain Hunter on his passage to Batavia, after the loss of the Sirius; their longitude we make 152° 30' E. On the following day we paddled in sight of New Georgia, and saw no more land for several days. On the 10th of October we crossed the equator in longitude 154° E., where we had the winds prevailing generally from E. S. E. to N. E. and fresh breezes. From the line to 7° N., and betwixt the longitudes of 150° and 140°, we found that the current often set to the eastward; and as we run down about ten degrees in the latitude of 7° N., we experienced many calms; notwithstanding which we all enjoyed an almost uninterrupted state of good health.

On the 21st we came in sight of a low island bearing W. by N., and presently perceived some canoes coming towards us. About nine A.M. one came alongside without the least fear or hesitation, by which free behaviour we judged that they had been acquainted with Europeans before; and their frequent mention of "Capitaine" confirmed this conjecture. These first were followed by several more, who exchanged their fishing-hooks (made of shells) and lines, and koir rope, &c. for any thing that was given them; and when several of them were admitted on board, they, for a considerable time, showed no inclination to steal. However, those in the canoes...

October.] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

gave us reason to alter the good opinion we had formed of them, by stealing the rudder rings; a thing which the skilful Friendly islanders had attempted in vain; and becides this, one fellow was caught handing a pump-spear into his canoe. As we had been accustomed to such matters, we only drove them off the decks for these first depredations; but while we sat at dinner in the cabin, we heard them at work trying to knock off the bolt-head of the rudder rings; upon which the captain fired some small shot among them, which made them instantly flee off. Just at this time William Tucker and John Connelly were discovered swimming close under the stern, with a view to make their escape to the canoes; and by their skulking appeared afraid of being fired at likewise; but the captain, enraged at the former for his ingratitude and deceit, and willing to part with the latter, told them, that if they chose to go they might, for he would not fire at them. Connelly answered, "Thank you, Sir," and they both swam to the canoes, and were received by the savages with great shoutings. Soon after, a breeze springing up from the N.E. we resumed our course, and left them behind. Connelly we had brought by force from Tongataboo for threatening the missionaries. During his stay on board he had conducted himself quietly, and being put on the ship's books as an ordinary seaman, seemed to be content with his situation; till this last action proved his hypocrisy. The same might be said of Tucker, who, being also reinstated, had often said that he was happy that he had been taken again after running from the ship at Otaheite; and perhaps he spoke his sentiments, as there was reason to believe that Connelly had persuaded him to this last resolution. If Connelly was really a Botany bay convict (as we have since heard), we may suppose him to have been actuated by two motives, the fear of work, and the fear of punishment if caught in England; and as for Tucker, his conduct had long made it evident that he was under the absolute rule of his sensual passions; which is the more to be lamented for the sake of an excellent mother, of whom he was the only son. This spot, on...
300. FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE [1797.]

which they have chosen to pass their days, is but a small island on the bosom of the deep, being not more than two or three miles in circumference, and where the comforts and necessaries of life seem so scarce, that we had reason to think their whole subsistence consisted only of fish and roots, cocoa-nut, and perhaps the breadfruit.

The natives are not a stout race; their complexion is a dark copper; their dispositions lively. We saw no women. Their canoes differ from all we had met before, being raised high at each end, and painted red; they have outriggers, and sail either end foremost. Their sails are made nearly in the same manner as the single sailing canoes of the Friendly Islands. The latitude of the island is 7° 22' N. and longitude 146° 48' E. We named it from the runaway, Tucker's island.

With light airs of wind from the N. E. we proceeded on our course to the westward, leaving Tucker and his companion to reflect upon the unhappy choice they had made; a choice, to all appearance, so replete with wretchedness, that we did not imagine a third person could be found willing to follow their example: but such is the prevalence of habit, and the enervating influence of idleness over the mind, that Andrew Cornelius Lind came to the captain, and begged earnestly to be set on shore upon the next island we should discover. To this request not only consent was given, but likewise a promise to let him have a selection of useful articles with which to benefit the natives, and the better to introduce and give him importance among them.

26th. When we had got about ten leagues farther westward, at midnight we saw another island bearing S. W., and at four A. M. saw two more to the N. W., and as the day broke we counted six of these low islands, the extreme points bearing from N. W. by N. to N. E. by E.: for the most westerly of these we steered, and soon had a great number of canoes about the ship, into one of which Andrew, after taking leave of his shipmates, went, and was received with joy by the savages. The canoe that took him in soon put off, and, as they paddled away, he stood up and waved his hand, seemingly more elated than dejected by his change of situation. The indolent life he had led at Otaheite, the unobstructed ease with which all his sensual appetites had been gratified there, with his aversion to labour, and the prospect of its necessity, which a return to Europe held up to his view, strongly urged him to prefer a lazy savage life upon these unpromising islands to his native Sweden, which he knew to have advantages only for the industrious. The following are the articles which the captain gave him: viz. two hand-faws, two hatchets, one hammer, ten looking-glasses, eighteen knives, three hundred deck nails, two razors, and some trifles besides; these, with what he had of his own, particularly a bible, will, no doubt, make him an acquisition to the natives, and may likewise be the means of rendering service to the other two, whom it was our opinion he would endeavour to join. The natives of this group, their canoes, implements, and eagerness for iron, &c. were exactly the same as at Tucker's island. The afternoon set in gloomy and rainy, which nevertheless was not a hindrance to the canoes, many of which followed us quite out of sight of their own island; and as we observed them haul to the northward in a squall, we concluded that they meant to go to some place in that quarter.

27th. About ten A. M. we came in sight of another low island, bearing S. W., and as we altered our course to go to the southward of it, when west of us it shewed like two distinct islands, lying near each other: here also many of the natives came off, and trafficked, as the others had done. One thing we had observed as peculiar and remarkable, that hitherto in our range among these islands no females had appeared; whence we concluded the men either more jealous than their eastern neighbours, or as placing a higher value on their women; or, perhaps, they had at some period suffered in defending them from licentious visitors. The latitude of these islands is 7° 14' N., longitude 144° 50' E. At four P. M. the latter bore E. by N.
two leagues. Just before dark we saw another island to the W. N. W.
distant three or four leagues; and steering to go to the southward of
it, the better to avoid any danger that might lie in the way, at midnight it bore N . N. E.

About four A. M. on the 28th, we discovered other islands, and by means of our night-glasses could discern the extremes from W. N. W. to N. by W. About this time it fell calm, which continued; and at daybreak we counted six, which might, from their size, merit the name of islands; and seven iflets, or kayes; to the whole of which we gave the name of the Thirteen islands. At the distance of one league their extremes bore from N. W. ½ W. to N. ½ E. by which their extent may be estimated. The latitude of the southern part of them is 7° 16' N. longitude 144° 30' E. About sixty canoes came off at first, and afterwards some of our people counted one hundred and fifty in sight, each of which, on an average, contained seven men, which is one thousand and fifty; and if we add half as many left on shore, and double that number for the women and children, the population of this group alone will amount to three thousand one hundred and fifty souls, which, according to the appearance of the islands, must often be pinched for food. Here, for the first time, we got a sight of their women, who, to the number of a dozen or more, came off in three canoes: in two they were accompanied by the men; the third was occupied by young women only. For a considerable time they kept aloof, while their own men seemed to eye them with attention; but observing that we did not regard them with any particular notice, they were suffered to approach within a few yards of the ship, which, as well as ourselves, they appeared to survey with delight. Some of them were well figured, having neither very thick lips nor broad faces, though inclining to both. Their hair is black and long. In complexion they differ from the men by a sickly kind of whiteness that is mixed with the natural olive. As we saw them almost naked, their greatest ornament and highest praise was the decency and modesty of their behaviour.

The greater number of the men were naked also: some had a fathal mat wrapped round their middle; others added an ornamental belt round their body, near the navel: these belts are about an inch broad, composed of bits of black and white shells, bored and strung after the manner of beads. Some of them wore a broad conical hat, in form not much unlike that of the Chinese. These islands seemed alike in every respect, no one appearing to afford greater natural advantages than the other, except where the groups derive some enjoyments from neighbourhood; and perhaps more extensive shoals and smooth water afford a covert where the fish may shelter from the storm. Thus they may find greater resources than on the island that is solitary. However, with respect to articles of exchange, they appeared to be equally stored of the flake the flake is koir rope, thirty fathom of which we could purchase for a piece of an old iron hoop fix inches long: this rope is in general about an inch thick, and equal, if not superior, in strength to our hemp-made ropes. As they everywhere expressed the most eager desire for iron, at the above price, we might, by delaying a few hours at each island, have almost filled the ship with it; and would certainly have done it, had we known what we have since learnt, than it will frequently fetch a good price in China. Their fishing-tackle differs little from what we had seen in the eastern islands; but their matting was striking and curious, being woven and made in the form of a Spanish sail, with a fancy border at each end, wrought in with black threads. The natural colour of these fathes is white; but many of them are dyed of a beautiful yellow with turmeric. It is impossible to behold these neat-wrought fathes, and their rude manufacturers at the same time, without wondering, and wishing to know how they came by the art. It is not improbable that they might have been taught by the Jesuit missionaries; two of whom were sent by the Spanish government from Manilla in the year 1710; but as the ship that took them thither was driven away by the currents, the Jesuits were never heard of more: however, others were sent, who continued their efforts a few years, till having informed
themselves of the general poverty of the islands, and certain that they never could be of value to the Spanish monarchy, they quitted them, and since that time (about 1720) they have been totally neglected. This makes it the more worthy of remark, that through so long a period this useful art should still be retained; and while it reflects credit upon their original teachers, is an encouragement to our missionaries to endeavour all in their power to introduce the mechanic arts, as it proves that their labour will not be in vain. Turtle is among the articles of their subsistence, as we purchased one of about twenty pounds weight for a piece of iron hoop about two feet long.

They manage their canoes with great dexterity, and go from island apparent,ly without fear; from which free intercourse, and having no weapon, except a fling, among them, we concluded they had but few wars. Their language differs much from all that we had heard before; and except a few words, as, looloo (iron), capitaine, &c. we understood but little of what they spoke. Their numerals are as follows:

<table>
<thead>
<tr>
<th>English</th>
<th>Carolinas</th>
<th>Pelew Islands</th>
</tr>
</thead>
<tbody>
<tr>
<td>One</td>
<td>Iota</td>
<td>Tong</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Two</td>
<td>Rua</td>
<td>Ooro</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Three</td>
<td>Toloo</td>
<td>Othey</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Four</td>
<td>Tia</td>
<td>Oang</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Five</td>
<td>Leema</td>
<td>Aeem</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Six</td>
<td>Honoo</td>
<td>Malong</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Seven</td>
<td>Fizoo</td>
<td>Oweth</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Eight</td>
<td>Wartow</td>
<td>Tei</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Nine</td>
<td>Shievo</td>
<td>Etew</td>
</tr>
<tr>
<td>Ten</td>
<td>Segga</td>
<td>Mackoth</td>
</tr>
</tbody>
</table>

We now, as it proved, had taken our leave of the Carolinas, for after the Thirteen islands we saw no more of them. To visit the Pelews being our next object, we accordingly shaped our course thither.
which were under sail, and others paddling; but as the weather at this time wore a most gloomy aspect, three of them only came far enough off to get alongside. The natives in these had a piece of white cloth tied upon a stick, which they waved as they drew near; an emblem, as we supposed, of peace. They approached without fear or the least hesitation, and spoke to us as to a people with whom they had been long acquainted; but their language was quite unintelligible; nor could we, even with the help of Captain Henry Wilson’s vocabulary, make them understand one word, except a few of their proper names; they however kept talking very fast, accompanying their words with violent and sudden gestures of the hands and body, expressive of their eager desire for us to anchor at a place to the north-west, towards which they pointed; and one of them, who we afterwards learnt was a rupack, with a clumsy bone on his wrist, came up the ship’s side in great haste to enforce the request, and was followed by two more, who were equally solicitous; but all their entreaties, added to our intention to make some stay at this celebrated group, were of no avail, as we could see no place where it was probable that a ship could safely anchor, and we had not Lieutenant Macluer’s chart on board to guide us. On our mentioning the name of Abba Thulle, they repeated it several times, saying, S’Thulle, S’Thulle, and pointed to the land. The name of Lee Boo was not spoken; for they talked so fast and so constantly, that we had scarce any opportunity to ask questions; and probably the weather, which now threatened a storm, kept him out of their minds. As their comrades in the canoes bawled loudly for those on board to rejoin them, the captain presented a few knives, looking-glasses, &c. when they hastily, though reluctantly, took their leave; but before they paddled off they were at some pains to throw their cocoa-nuts, which was all they had; they then made for the shore, which was all the intercourse we had with the Pelew islanders, a circumstance much regretted by us, as it had all along been the

Nov.] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS. 397
captain’s intention to stay here a few days, for the purpose of learning what we could of the inhabitants respecting the expediency of settling a mission among them; and to prepare the way for missionaries, by distributing some useful articles retained in the ship for the Frejec people, from a hope of being favoured at both places with safe anchorage and friendly intercourse; but, for the present voyage, we concluded every thing of this nature at an end, and proceeded to make the best of our way to China, cherishing the hope of there receiving letters from our dear friends in England, to whom we now thought ourselves drawing near, though still at the distance of many thousand miles.

Soon after we bore away, and had shaped our course N. ¼ E. we fell in with an extensive reef, trending N. E. about two leagues from the north end of Babelthoup, and discerned three small islands lying further to the N. enclosed by the above reef. When we had run nearly five leagues, the northernmost of the three bore S. W. by W. and at this time we reckoned ourselves past the north point of the reef; and though very dark, with constant rain, we continued our course for two leagues more, when we saw two other islands to the N. N. W. and at only a short distance from us, on which account we hailed to the eastward, and hove to till the moon should rise, which it did about eight o’clock, when we resumed our course, and afterwards fell in with no more dangers.

If we admit the few which we saw of the Pelew islanders to be a specimen of the whole, they are, in our opinion, inferior in external appearance to the Marqueans, the Society or Friendly islanders; they have not the stature and symmetry of the two first, and fall far short of the muscular, bold, and manly look of the latter. They approach the nearest to their neighbours, the Carolinians; for, like them, they are neither a stout nor handsome race. Among some customs which they seem to have in common at both places, is that of flitting the ear, through which some of them put vegetable ornaments, at least an inch thick. In tattooing at Pelew, their legs and
thighs appear as if they had been dipped in a die of blueish black, the same as at the Carolinas; but they mark their bodies also with figures, like fingers, or gloves. They appeared before us quite naked, without seeming conscious of shame, and showed their kindliness and hospitality by the earnest invitations they gave us to visit their habitations.

From November 7th, when we left the Pelew islands, till our arrival on the coast of China, nothing very interesting occurred. The winds were so unsettled, that we experienced hardly anything like the N. E. monsoon, until within two or three days of the Bathees, the most southern of which we saw the evening of the 17th; they appeared to be very high, and distant about ten leagues. Having no chart on board upon the accuracy of which we could depend, we kept our wind for the night, steering to the northward. At daybreak, supposing that we could clear the northern rocks, we bore away west, and with a little alteration of our course, sailed close past the northernmost island, which lies in the latitude of 21° 10' N. and longitude 122° 6' E.

The Bathees consist of six or seven islands; two to the S. E. are high; some of the others are of moderate height; the most northern except one is high and craggy at top; and between these two lie two small rocks above water. After passing this group in about 21° 10' N., we steered W. N. W. 1/2 N., twenty-five leagues, then reckoned ourselves in latitude 21° 42' N. and longitude 121° E., the southern point of Formosa bearing at the same time N. 1/2 E.; we saw the rocks which lie to the S. E. and had a good birth of them as we passed.

20th. We got into soundings, and paddled several Chinese fishing-boats. The next day, at seven A. M. being within two or three leagues of the Great Lemma, a pilot came on board; at first he asked about one hundred dollars to take us to Macao road, but afterwards accepted thirteen, besides giving us two fine fish.

21st. At ten A. M. we paddled between the Grand Lemma and Potou, and leaving all the islands, except Lingting, to the south of us, we sailed through with a fine easterly breeze. At three P. M., we came in sight of Macao, and at half past four anchored in the road, the town bearing W. two leagues. The pilot was then discharged, and a signal made for another; and that no time might be delayed, our own boat was lowered down, and an officer dispatched on shore to bring a proper pilot off, as also to learn what European ships were at Canton; but to our great mortification we found that not one had as yet arrived, consequently there were no letters for us. Nor was this the only disappointment; the Chinese had lately refused to permit any vessel to Whampoa, except such as brought cargoes thither. One ship from Port Jackson had been lying six weeks in the Typa, at the entrance of the river, and had not as yet obtained leave to proceed upwards; and on our applying to the mandarin at Macao, we were told, that, as we had brought no cargo, no pilot would be sent on board until the Honourable Company's supercargo could prevail on the Chinese government at Canton for a passport. The boat, however, brought us a variety of refreshments, of which, though received as very salutary after a long passage, we did not stand in such need as many preceding navigators who had neither failed the distance, nor been so long at sea as ourselves. We had run from the time of leaving England upwards of thirty-four thousand miles, and had been out fourteen months, eleven of them at sea; yet in all this time we had scarcely experienced any sickness, and were at present, to a man, in good health. We never made use of antiscorbutics, as malt, spruce, &c.; but being a crew small in number to what are usually on board ships upon voyages of discovery, we were enabled to lay in a sufficient stock of fresh provisions at one group of islands, to serve, with a little economy, till we got to a place to procure more; so that our sailors always had fresh meat at least twice a week, and for nearly half of the time that we were in the South Seas they lived entirely upon the hogs of the different islands; and we may venture to
Nov. 22d. Early in the morning Captain Wilson went in the pinnace to Macao, to endeavour to have the obstacles to our going up removed, while the crew were employed painting the ship, and putting her otherwise in order; and in a few hours we had the pleasure to see her look almost as smart as when she left Spithead. Towards evening a strong gale came on from the north, and increased to such a degree, that in the course of the night we drove a considerable way with both anchors ahead. The next morning we were glad to embrace the opportunity of the windward tide to weigh our anchors and run into the harbour of the Typa, and moored close to the Britannia, Captain Dennet, the ship we mentioned from Port Jackson. A chop (or passport) had this day been sent for that vessel to proceed for Whampoa, and Captain Wilson judged it a good opportunity for him to go up in her, supposing that by being on the spot he should obtain the leave he wanted.

On the 25th the Britannia left the Typa; and that our ship might be in readiness, we began to strip the rigging off the masts-heads, which we examined, and found it necessary to put new cheeks to the main-mast. The whole of the rigging was thoroughly repaired; and just as this work was upon the finish, the captain arrived on the 9th of December with permission for the ship to go up the river.

On the 10th we weighed from the Typa, and as we worked out had the pleasure of seeing three large ships at anchor in the eastern road: these, we hoped, had, what we anxiously longed for, letters from England; and so it proved.
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE [1797]

On the 13th we moored at Whampoa, where we found ships of different nations, Swedes, Danes, Americans, and English; of the latter, belonging to the Honourable Company, were the Glattton, Canton, Boddam, and Arnilton, besides some extra ships. The three former have recently suffered much by a typhoon in the China sea, and were returned to refit. The Arnilton had two or three days ago arrived from England, having touched at the Cape of Good Hope; and by her we learnt the political state of our native country.

We now expected to be three months at least before we should receive our cargo, and be dispatched home, which we supposed would be with a fleet composed of Indiamen, just at this time arrived. But the supercargoes having determined to dispatch the Glatton, Boddam, and Amazon packet, they ordered an immediate survey to be made of our ship, and the report of the committee appointed for that purpose being, "That the Duff was in excellent order, and fit to receive a cargo," Mr. R. Hall, the head supercargo, told our captain, that if we could take in our cargo and be ready to depart in the course of five or six days, he would dispatch us. This the captain promising to perform, was immediately sent alongside. But though the ship was in every respect in very good order, she was by no means clear for receiving a cargo; our hold was half full of water-casks, bread puncheons, tiers of beef, and various articles of stores beyond our consumption, and for which we had as yet found no purchasers; so that to dispose of these, and to remove them from place to place as we advanced in our lading, gave us more trouble and expended more time than taking in the cargo itself. However, by the 31st of December we were completely laden, and in a shorter time than perhaps ever ship was before; and having, by the kindness of the supercargoes, got over the difficulties which the Chinese are continually throwing in the way, we that same day ran down the river, and joined the other ships at a place called the Second Bar, just as they were getting under sail.

The singularity of our manners at China could not fail to attract notice; and as all immorality was utterly disallowed, not an oath sworn, and an appearance of unusual devotion maintained, the company we had now joined were pleased willingly to new-christen the Duff, and called her The Ten Commandments.

January 2d, 1798. We got down to Macao, where we found three English men of war, and seven of the Bombay cotton ships, at anchor, waiting for us to fail with them. The Honourable Company's ship Glatton, commanded by Charles Drummond, Esq., was appointed to convoy us home, to take the country ships bound to Bombay under his care; and the Fox and La Sibylle were to accompany us for a few leagues down the China sea. Everything relative to the fleet's departure being arranged, and the ships in readiness, early on the 6th we put to sea, with a fresh gale from the north, and found that the Duff was fully competent to keep up with them, though we had been apprehensive of this, as our Indiamen are remarkable for their fast sailing, especially when it blows hard.

Our passage down the China sea was as favourable as we could have wished it to be. Some time in the course of the first night the frigates left us, and we saw them no more.

On the 10th we passed Pulo Sapata, and, continuing our course for the straits of Malacca, at ten A.M. on the 14th we came in sight of the Malay coast; at the same time saw a strange sail ahead. Having heard that an enemy's squadron was cruising in the straits, we at first thought this might be one of them sent to look out; and this seemed the opinion of our commodore, for he made the signal for the fleet to prepare for action, and that one of the fastest sailing ships should chase. But we soon recognized her to be a Portuguese vessel which had departed from Macao three days before us. In the afternoon we rounded Cape Roman, and spoke a ship from Bengal that was at anchor under the lee of the point, which removed all our fears of an enemy. The straits of Malacca are accounted dangerous to navigate in the dark; however, as the wind was fair, our commodore
dore kept the fleet running all the night. Next day we had calms, which obliged us to anchor; but a breeze springing up at N. E. we soon weighed, and the wind increasing at midnight, we passed the Water islands, and at two A. M. on the 16th came to with the small bower in Malacca road, in seven fathoms water, the flagstaff on the citadel bearing N. 64° E. the Outer Water island S. 39° E. distant from the town two or three miles. The reason of our touching at this place being to fill up our water, and gain information for the safety of the fleet, at daybreak in the morning the boats were hoisted out, and most of the commanders went on shore, but were disappointed in the hope of intelligence, as there was none of later date than what we had received at China. As this spoke only of war, our duty was to prepare for all events on the passage; not that we had fears. The ability and care which we had observed in our commodore, and the strength which would be with us after the Bombay ships had separated, gave us confidence. The Glatton mounted forty guns, and the Boddam about thirty, and both ships had a few troops on board; besides, at the Cape of Good Hope or St. Helena we expected to join others of the Honourable Company's ships.

On the 17th we received about four tons of water, which is brought off in bulk by small vessels kept here for the purpose. We also received an addition to our live stock, and could have one to sea this evening, but that the large ships had not completed their water; and one of the fleet which had lain several months laden at Whampoa had sprung a leak, and was obliged to use tedious and laborious methods to find the place where the water entered. This they happily found, and it deserves notice as a hint to shipwrights and to those who are more interested; by ripping the copper off the under wales a bolt-hole was found left without the bolt; an act of negligence which might have proved of the most fatal consequence, had it not been discovered.

Malacca in prospect affords little beauty; the houses, excepting a few, have a poor and mean look; and the best, though convenient,
ing a quantity of water, he soon recovered. At three P.M. we anchored in the bay, where we found a squadron of men of war under the command of Admiral Christian; two outward-bound East-Indiamen, with several Portuguese, Danes, Americans, and other vessels. In the evening the health-boat came to examine in what state the crew were, and, on finding us all well, gave permission for free communication with the shore. After them the admiral's boat upon guard took account of the ship, whence the came, &c. From some of the ships they impressed a few men, but took none from us. When they had left the admiral's excellent regulations, which are given to all vessels coming into the bay, they departed. In a few days we had got what water and stock we wanted, but it was not until the 1st of April that the signal for sailing was made, and we put to sea, with the addition of the transport Bellona to our fleet.

The same day we got sight of the Cape, and shaped our course for the island of St. Helena, where we arrived on the 15th. Seven Indiamen, besides extra ships, and two South-Sea whalers, lay in the bay, all homeward bound.

On the 16th the Albion, an extra ship, was dispatched for England by the governor, with advice of the fleet being on their passage. On the 1st of May we sailed. Captain Drummond, being the senior in command, had the charge of the fleet, consisting of twenty sail; during our passage we saw only two or three strange ships. In latitude 20° N. we fell in with a small Spanish vessel from Cadiz, bound to Vera Cruz: she was made a prize by our commodore.

On the 2d of June we saw the coast of Ireland, west of Kinsale; and on the day following put into Cork harbour for a convoy. The Ethalion, Captain Countefs, was appointed for that purpose by Admiral Kingmill; and, after a detention of eight days by contrary winds, we set sail, and on the 4th of July saw the coast of England. On the 8th we passed the Downs; on the 11th came to anchor in the river Thames; and in a few days discharged our cargo of tea, which was landed in as perfect order as we received it at China.

THUS have we finished a voyage, in which the Missionary Society, and our Christian brethren in connexion with them, were so deeply interested. Their prayers have been heard for us; and eminently answered: success beyond our most sanguine expectations has crowned our endeavours in every place where the missions have been settled. We have not lost a single individual in all our extended voyage; we have hardly ever had a sick list; we landed every missionary in perfect health; and every seaman returned to England as well as on the day he embarked at Blackwall. We feel our gratitude rising high to the Author of all our mercies, and cannot but believe that every man who shall candidly peruse the foregoing sheets will join us in acknowledging the gracious providence that hath supported us hitherto; whilst the generous and humane conductors of this benevolent undertaking will be animated by the success which hath attended their first attempt, to pursue with increasing energy an object which appears so fraught with blessings to mankind. The way into the southern ocean is now open, and the facilities for enlarging the missionary labours greatly increased. The settlements formed will every day continue to widen their circle of influence and usefulness; and new and vast countries around them, equally accessible, afford an inexhaustible field for the most vigorous exertions of Christian zeal. The more all circumstances are weighed, the more it must appear that this hath God done: and can we perceive that it is his work, and not at least confess our obligation to further these efforts to the utmost of our power? It is to be hoped that every objection to this blest undertaking will be now removed; that the cautious will confess themselves satisfied, and demonstrate their approbation by a more liberal assistance, because of past delay; that the prejudiced will nobly lay aside their opposition, and redeem unfavourable suggestions by immediate and generous acknowledgments that they knew us not; and that a million to the heathen, planned with much deliberation, investigation, and zeal, and executed with eminent skill, perseverance, and success, bears a stamp of divine benediction upon it.
which ought to commend it to every man's conscience in the sight of God. How much thankfulnefs, delight, and satisfaction, it must produce in the hearts of those who have been most active in the service, and such eminent benefactors to mankind, I need not say; their work itself is their first and highest reward. Having finished, as one of the inferior wheels in this great machine, the revolution which received its impulse from the main spring, I am for a while repose on these happy shores of Britain; but my prayers will never cease for the prosperity of Zion, and for the furtherance of the missionary labours, of which having been a favoured spectator, I cannot but indulge the pleasing expectation of abundant increase; and wait, with the multitude of those who believe the promises will be fulfilled in their season, to hear that His kingdom is advancing, who shall assuredly receive the heathen for His inheritance, and the utmost parts of the earth for His possession. The Lord hasten it in His time!

APPENDIX.

INTRODUCTION.

In the following Appendix of miscellaneous matter respecting the country, its inhabitants, customs, natural history, &c., should any thing be advanced apparently different from the preceding representations of former visitants, it will be proper to remark, that these papers have been drawn up from manuscripts attended with every mark of authenticity, and from conversations with a variety of persons who have been lately on the spot, and whose veracity is highly to be respected. It must be obvious to every intelligent person in search of information, that some are struck with one object which another overlooks, and that the strongest trait of character and manners is often drawn from the simplest trifle, which is ready to be disregarded or not mentioned for its seeming insignificance; and where the same thing is noticed, inferences may be drawn by one concerning it, of which another may entertain a different opinion. We hope, however, on the whole, that the body of information here collected from these sources will be found strongly corroborative of the truth of the facts in the preceding narrative, and cannot but afford satisfaction to the curious and inquisitive into the real state of men and manners in the isles of this vast ocean. We hope, also, to be able hereafter to present a more explicit and full account, if it pleases God to crown our present expedition with any similar success as the past: and we cannot but flatter ourselves that the public, on an impartial survey of what
has been done, will consider the Missionary Society as among the real benefactors to man-kind, and support an undertaking which God has hitherto singularly blessed; and which proposes, as its first object, the divine glory, and the salvation, temporal and eternal, of those whom hitherto no man hath cared for. Names, sects, and parties, have no place among us—we mean nothing political, partial, or exclusive. One is our master, even Christ; we desire to know and teach nothing but him crucified; to interfere in no contest, to disturb no government established, or introduce any peculiar modes of religious worship, but to leave every man to the book of truth for his guide, in the spirit of meekness; to unite in one centre, Jesus Christ, the same yesterday, to-day, and for ever; and to love one another, out of a pure heart, fervently. Time and better information, it is to be hoped, will dissipate every prejudice entertained against so benevolent an undertaking.

### Section 1.

**Country.**

The island of Otaheite consists of two peninsulas connected by a low isthmus about three miles across, covered with trees and shrubs, but wholly uncultivated, though no part of the island seems more capable of improvement, and of admitting the plough if cleared from wood. The larger, Otaheite Nooe, is about ninety miles in circumference, and nearly circular; the lesser, or Tamamoo, is about thirty miles. They are divided into a variety of districts, in enumerating which the former reporters differ, as probably they are subject to changes, and divided and subdivided by the chiefs among their towns and relations. I shall therefore refer to the map, as containing the latest and most accurate account. The island has a border of low land reaching from the beach to the rising of the hills, in some places near a mile, in others hardly a furlong, and in several points the mountains abruptly terminate in high cliffs, against which the sea beats, and form difficult passages from one district to another. The soil of the low lands and of the valleys, which run up from the sea between the mountains, is remarkably fertile, consisting of a rich blackish mould covered with bread-fruit, cocoa-nut, plantains, even apple, the youte, or cloth plant, and many others, which will be hereafter described. The mountains afford a great variety of trees of all sorts and sizes; and are, in most places, covered to their very tops with wood, in others with bamboo of great length, and in some by fern and reed, which at a distance appear like a fine green lawn. The hills rise very steep, and dwell into mountains almost inaccessible, but everywhere productive of plantains, yams, and a multitude of
wild roots growing spontaneously, and sometimes used as food. In
these higher regions only is to be found the precious sandal wood,
of two kinds, yellow and dark-coloured; from whence the natives
chiefly draw the perfume for the cocoa-nut oil, with which they
anoint themselves.

The country exhibits a mountainous aspect, and rises very high
in the centre; but it is intersected by narrow valleys, which receive
innumerable streams from the hills, some of which fall in beauti-
ful cascades, and fill the rivers, which meander through them,
amidst the verdant scenery, to the sea. During the rainy season
these valleys swell into torrents, and sometimes loosen rocks and trees
from the precipices, and carry them down into the valleys, which
they overflow, and occasion much damage. During the greater part of
the year these valleys afford a passage from one side of the island to
the other, though always difficult when you ascend the mountains;
but in the rainy season this becomes impracticable, and the communi-
cation between one district and another is kept up by canoes, which
pass within the reefs in smooth water with great facility; using this
precaution only, that as the northemmost part of the island has a
sloping rocky shore, and in blowing weather the landing is dangerous,
those who wish to go to windward proceed in their canoes westward,
where they seldom find the trade wind, and the sea breeze sets
in from the westward; the high land obstructing the easterly wind, and
the island of Eimeo lying in a direction N. and S. forces a fresh
westerly current up the south side of Otaheite, which wafts the
canoes to the isthmus; where hauling them across, they are safe
from a fair wind home. This is at present done on rollers and by ropes;
but a carriage with wheels would wonderfully facilitate the opera-
tion; and probably, ere long, a practicable road will be formed for
this purpose, as has been suggested by one of the missionaries.

When the trade wind gets far to the south, and blows fresh, it
generally rains on the south side of the island, bringing the clouds
from the mountains of Tiaraboo, and emptying their contents at

Appendix.] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

Pappara and the adjacent districts. This occasions a great difference
in the bread-fruit season between the north and south sides of the
island; as on the north the rain is less frequent and less violent, and
the trade wind constantly blows, except when the sun is vertical.
Hence the great bread-fruit harvest commences on the northern side
about November, and continues till the end of January; whilst on
the south side, in some parts, it begins in January, and continues in
different districts till November. But though this is the case with
the general harvest on both sides the island, there are some kinds of
bread-fruit, though scarce, in season all the year, especially in
the district of Atahooroo. The different species of the same tree
amount to thirty. At our arrival in March we found plenty; it con-
tinued till we left the island in August: they said it would be scarce
for two months at Matavai.

As soon as you begin to ascend the hills, the soil changes from the
rich loam into various veins of red, white, dark, yellow, or blue
earth, clay, or marl: in the red are found stones resembling corn-
elian or flint; but being full of veins, though they will strike fire
with steel, they break on a second stroke. The white appears a pipe-
clay, or fuller’s earth; the dark, a fine fat mould, probably the decayed
parts of vegetable substances; the yellow is mixed with gravel; the
blue a marly substance. These are all found in digging ten or twelve
feet, and the under-stratum appears a soft sandstone of a brownish
colour, intermixed with hard rock.

The hills also afford a blackish stone, which seems a lava, in
pieces eight or ten feet long, and from four to ten inches thick; of
which they formerly made their stone tools; it is of a fine grain,
though not very hard, nor apt to splinter; which answered best the
purposes of the natives, as they could thus bring them more easily to
an edge; but at every stroke almost their adzes required whetting,
and two-thirds of their time nearly was employed in this labour.

The beds of the rivers consist of stones and gravel; many of which
contain a glasby substance, and will melt in a strong fire; others are
more insubstantial, and many are found like pumice-stone. In powder the magnet attracts many particles. This, with other high islands, has evidently a volcanic origin.

In the district of Matavai there is a singular cliff, called Peha; which one of the missionaries describes as formed of an immense number of oblong pieces of stone, strongly cemented together, and hanging in a very romantic manner. The cliff is about eighty or ninety feet high, and twice as broad; at the bottom runs a river, the largest in the island. This is probably basaltic.

The mountains are in some parts bare and full of precipices, broken as by earthquakes. In the bottom of those which bound the district of Vyeoréde there is a remarkably large fresh-water lake, called Vyeheerea, which the natives say cannot be sounding with any line, and contains eels of a monstrous size. On the banks of this lake many inhabitants are seated, who have plenty of all sorts of provisions, except the bread-fruit, for which they substitute the mountain-plantain. This lake empties itself into the valley of Vyeoréde. Here also they make vast quantities of a greyish cloth highly prized, beat from the bark of the mountain floe tree; and a number of arreoeis frequent the place for this purpose, as they prefer the cloth to any other, and call it ora.

The bay of Matavai affords safe anchorage during eight months of the year, but is dangerous from December to March; the bottom is a blackish sand, from six to eighteen fathom. The channel between the reef and the Dolphin bank, on which the water is thirteen fathom only in the shoaler part, extends not more than half a cable's length, but has twenty-two fathoms of water; yet, in a weakly manned ship, this passage seems preferable to passing to the westward of the bank, as it frequently happens that the wind comes off in squalls from One Tree hill in a southern direction, and often falls into a dead calm; both which may be avoided by keeping the reef close aboard, with ten fathoms water, and bringing up where you please, as there is no foul ground to windward of the Dolphin bank, nor any rocks but what are visible. The sunken rocks, called Toa, the natives know, and are ready to point out. The only harbour to the westward is that of Oparore, called Toa röa, or Long rock.

Water is convenient and abundant in all parts of the island. The weather, during our stay, from March till August, was serene and pleasant; the thermometer never sinking lower than 65°, and seldom higher than 73°; and so cool at night as to make a blanket welcome. When we came, the weather was a little equally and rainy, being the end of the rough season, which commences some time in December and lasts till March; during these months the wind frequently blows hard from the west, with rain, and throws a heavy swell and surf on the shore into Matavai bay; the rest of the year the wind blows from the east, but with an alternate land and sea breeze around the island, which extends its influence about a league from the shore.

The government of Otaheite is monarchical, and hereditary in one family; of this two branches subsist. Temäre, the son of Oberea and Oämmo, reigned when Wallis first visited the island; he was then a child, and Oberea his mother was regent. Oämmo and she had quarrelled about saving the child, which he wished to destroy; whether to retain the sovereignty longer, or suspecting that the child did not belong to him, the lady not being sparing of her favours to others. On his accession, Oämmo retired to a private station in his own district of Pappara, and left his wife, an active woman,
in trust with the reins of government for her son. Oamino was
son of Tenae, and elder brother of Wháppai, who since has assumed
the name of Otay. Wháppai's son Otéo was then a child of fix or
seven years old. Toota, their younger brother, was chief of Atta­
hooroo.

Wars and various changes appear to have preceded the last grand
revolution, when the partisans of Otoo, with the assistance of the
mutineers, recovered the royal maro from the men of Attahooroo.
By one of these intestine wars Temarre, the Tiridirri of Cook, had
been previously deposed, and Otoo, the present Pomarre, advanced
to the dignity of caique rahai. But the chiefs of Attahooroo, who,
under Tootaha, had been the principals in effecting this revolution,
feized the regalia, the royal maro, and the ark of the Eatoa, and
carried them off to their own district; and though incapable of using
them, as not being of the real royal, they kept possession of them
for the honor of their district; and having established their warlike
character, none dared contend with them. To Attahooroo, therefore;
on all great solemnities, were all the other chiefs obliged to repair, and were
sometimes insulted or plundered by the way. This occasioned con­
tinual disputes; and the Attahooroo chiefs giving an asylum to all
those who fled for crimes from other districts, they became such a
terror to the rest, that Temarre, though dethroned and reduced to his
private patrimony, as chief of Pappara, joined with Otoo to attack
them.

Tiarabo also had revolted, and set up Vayheadoo. A general
war commenced; Eimeo leagued with Attahooroo; and Malheine
the uncle of Motáraro, king of that island, who had married Otoo's
father, as Otoo had married his) interfered the right of his nephew,
and forced him to take refuge with his brother-in-law at Oparre,
just at the time Cook arrived in 1774, who saw the preparations for
war, but did not wait its issue.

Otoo (now Pomarre), after many conflicts, maintained his author­
sity, though not without such defeats as sometimes drove him to

APPENDIX: ] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS. 317

the mountains, and almost annihilated his maritime power. The
war canoes of Otaheite have nearly disappeared. Otoo having culti­
vated the friendship of the Europeans, continued to be acknowledged
supreme chief, though holding a precarious dominion, till the settle­
ment of the mutineers at Matavai. Them he engaged in his interest;
and as they could incline the balance to whichever side they pleased,
by their means he vanquished Attahooroo, recovered the royal maro,
and established his son's dominion on a more solid basis than it had
ever been before. Motáraro also recovered his lost dominion in
Eimeo; and strengthened the government of his nephew by acknow­
ledging his supremacy. Pomarre (the name assumed by the father
since his son's succession to the title of Otoo) continued, as regent,
to manage the affairs of government; and by the help of his Eu­
ropean friends, the leifer as well as the greater peninsula bowed to
his dominion, and his flag passed with reverence through all the
districts. Temarre first paid it due homage, and it proceeded from
him through Tiarabo. It was a union jack, given by the captain
of a vessel which had touched there, and decorated with breastplates
of pearl and red feathers. This was carried to the great moro, where
all the chief people of the district attended, and received it with cer­
emonious reverence, which afterwards perpetuated on it his name
and that of his son.

Pomarre, from king become the first subject of his son and regent
of the state, supports his son's dignity with all his weight and in­
fluence. Temarre is joined in the closest friendship with him, and,
having no children, adopted Pomarre's daughter, once dead. Eimeo
acknowledged the young king's sovereignty; and his dominion was
so open acknowledged, though in Tiarabo more than one district
still appears discontented.

As the ceremony of investing the young king with the royal maro,
like a coronation, is a solemnity which few can witness, the following
account from a spectator will be interesting:

Affixing at the great moro at Oparre, the maro oon, or red
flag of royalty, recovered from Attahooroo, was laid on the moro:
it is made of net-work, and thrummed with red and yellow feathers. The taata orero, the public orator (probably Manne Manne), opened the ceremony with a long speech, which set forth the rightful authority of the son of Pomarre to the royal dignity; and invested him with the regal cincture. Motuaro, the chief of Eimeo, who had recovered his authority, first paid his homage to the young king, who was borne on a man's shoulders, and surrounded by all his chieftains. He brought three human victims from Eimeo in his canoes; from each of which the priest, scooping out an eye, presented it to the sovereign on a plantain leaf plucked from a young tree in his hand, accompanied with a long ceremonial discourse: the bodies were then taken away, and interred in the morai. The same ceremony was repeated by every chief in rotation, of the several districts of Otaheite, some bringing one, and some two human sacrifices, fixed on a long pole; and buried after the presentation of the eye. The reason assigned for this horrid oblation was, that the head being reputed sacred, and the eye the most precious part, it was to be presented to the king as the head and eye of the people. During the presentation the king holds his mouth open, as if devouring it, whereby they imagine he receives additional wisdom and discernment; and that his tutelar deity presides, to accept the sacrifice. The vital principle to strengthen the soul of his royal pupil. Hogs innumerable were strangled, and immense quantities of cloth presented. The royal maro, worn only on that day, was deposited in its place at the morai, and the sacred canoes, which brought the human sacrifices, were hauled up thither. The king and chiefs then departed, to devour the hogs, turtle, fowls, fish, and vegetables prepared for them in the greatest profusion, and to drink their intoxicating yava. The feasting and heivas lasted two months; the hogs killed on the occasion were innumerable, the yava abundant; and more than one of the chiefs paid for their excesses with their lives.

Otoo, the present king, is about seventeen, and very large limbed, promising to be of a size like his father. Though he is absolute, he lives in the greatest familiarity with the lowest of his subjects. He is differently represented; some say he looks solid, and of a thoughtful aspect; whilst others call him stupid, and his countenance vacant. His queen, Tētua, daughter of Wyrede, relict of Motuaro, is about his own age, and rather the larger of the two. Her countenance is pleasing and open, but masculine, and widened by the usual method of pressure, called touloume. It is considered as the distinctive mark of their royal dignity, to be everywhere carried about on men's shoulders. As their persons are esteemed sacred, before them all must uncover below the breast; and from this mark of homage their own father and mother are not exempted. They may not enter into any house but their own, because, from that moment, it would become rāa, or sacred, and none but themselves, or their train, could dwell or eat there; and the land their feet touched would be their property: therefore, though they often came off to the ship, ate what was handed down to them, and baled the water out of their own canoe, they would never come on board; and when they daily visited our missionary house, they never came farther than the door. Yet this had not been the case with the father, when king, who freely entered the ship, and visited our people on shore: perhaps some ceremony is yet to pass, when the king comes to a more advanced age, when he will have the same liberty.

The king and queen were always attended by a number of men, as carriers, domestics, or favourites, who were rāa, or sacred, living without families, and attending only on the royal pair; and a worse set of men the whole island does not afford for thievery, plunder, and impurity.

The queen has had as yet no child, nor is it likely she should produce any, as, if the reports our missionaries have received are true, she is a perfect Meleseina, and lives in a promiscuous intercourse with all her porters.
The mode of carrying the king and queen is with their legs hanging down before, seated on the shoulders, and leaning on the head of their carriers, and very frequently amusing themselves with picking out the vermin, which there abound. It is the singular privilege of the queen, that, of all women, she alone may eat them; which privilege she never fails to make use of. On their own lands they sometimes condescend to alight, and walk; but seldom move far without their porters. Among these attendants is to be found one of the singular curiosities of the island, a native of a complexion quite different from his fellows; reddish, and of a Swedish cast of countenance, and his hair white and fine as flax. There are a few others something similar, like the white negroes, an anomalous breed.

The next in rank to the king is his own father, Pomarre, who acts as regent for his son. He is represented as of very amiable manners, and peculiarly attached to us. He is the largest man on the island, being above six feet four inches high, and strong built. Our tallest men in the ship hardly reached his shoulders; and he would weigh against three or four; yet he is no warrior, and in military prowess exceeded by his wife Iddiah, a woman of a most masculine appearance and disposition. They live together in great harmony, though they have ceased to cohabit. He first took her younger sister to wife, and then another woman; and she has a servant of her own, by whom she has had more children than one, all of whom have been murdered, she being now a member of the arreoy society.

The next in dignity are the chiefs in the several districts; some of whom are supreme in more than one district, and exercise in their own territories all regal power, yet still subject to Otoo as sovereign paramount, and liable to be called upon for assistance: these, also, have houses and lands in many districts, which, as they cannot occupy themselves, they commit to the care of superintendents, called mediats, or give them to their tayos, who enjoy all the usufruits without being called to any account, and share them with the chiefs when they come to reside themselves.

Next to these are the tówhas, the near relations, or younger brothers, or tayos, of the chiefs: and if there are more chiefs than one, the district is divided into different pátíndoos, or parishes, and each of these have tówhas under him.

The next rank is the raírria, or gentleman, who has one portion to the tówha's three. These smaller estates are called rähoe, from the power the raírria has to lay a prohibition on his own land, or on any particular fort of provision, as well as the tówha on his portion, and the chief on the whole; but this power, though sometimes abused, is usually employed after a great consumption of provisions, or to accumulate them for some magnificent feast. The principal objects of the rähoe are hogs, though sometimes it extends also to other forts of provisions; as when they find the shell-fish scarce on the reefs, the raírria can rähoe his portion, which is done by sticking up at the extremities of it two branches of a tree, to which a white cloth is attached; and no person dares fish there whilst these remain. When the rähoe is taken off, and the offering of a hog and fish is made, the place is again free, and a feast given by the peron who put on the rähoe: this is called orúa; and besides feasting the guests, it is expected that he should present them with large quantities of cloth: some of this is thrown to the populace to scramble for, which makes sport, the cloth being torn into ribands; and however small, they prefer it to a larger piece, which they might have for asking: these narrow slips they wear as favours in honour of the feast. The young men wrestle, the women dance, and the feast is often prolonged several days.

When such a feast is made by a chief on taking off the rähoe from a whole district, it is called tówra; then larger quantities of cloth, live hogs, bamboos of oil, and even canoes, are given to be scrambled for. At these greater entertainments most of the chiefs of the island are present, vast numbers of the arreois, and all descriptions of
people. The town resembles a country fair, to which every one who goes brings home something to show where he has been, with this difference, that here it costs them nothing; and besides the sport of the héroo, they are feasted all the time. Hogs innumerable are dealt on this occasion; and a stranger would suppose everyone on the island had been collected. The cloth and canoes seldom fall to the share of the same person, but are mostly rent in pieces; and he who gets the largest piece is the best man. If several of a family seize and carry off the canoe, it is their own; and he who first catches the hog, carries it home.

The things appointed for this sport are all brought together in an open space. The chief's men hold the hogs fast, till the priest has made a long prayer on the occasion; at the conclusion of it he throws a young plantain into one of the canoes, which stand in a row, with mats erected to spread the cloth, and hang the bamboo of oil; immediately on this signal, the hogs, goats, and fowls, are let loose, and the young men and women begin the chase—which continues a considerable time before all are caught, and affords many a laughable incident: after this, the presents are given, and the feast served up. Wrestling and dancing occupy a part of every day and night while the feast continues.

They have other feasts, held at the to hollows, called oehumòa. These are generally of fish, and not kept on sacred ground. Any man who is invited may partake with them.

The lowest class in society, after the ratira, is the manahoune; they cultivate the land, and most resemble our cottagers; some are raa, or hallowed; and others common or unclean. These hold under the towhas and ratiras, answer all their demands to the best of their ability, make cloth for them, build their houses, or assist in any laborious work required of them; yet their servage compels no constant service or residence; they may change chiefs, and go to another district.

The servants of whatever class are called toutou; and such as wait wholly on the women, tuti; nor is it uncommon to find young men of the first families so debased, though by such servile service they become excluded from all religious solemnities.

There yet remains a set of men of the most execrable cast, called mahuru, affecting the manners, dress, gestures, and voice of females, and too horrid to be described. In the scale of rank, birth enjoys singular distinction. A chief is always a chief; and though expelled from his command, losing his district, or having his honours transferred to his child, he continues noble and respected, on the other hand, no acquisition can raise a common man to a higher station than that of towha, or ratira; yet the meanest are in no slavish dependence. The honour and respect which they pay their chief, is rather through force of custom than
the fear of punishment. They are admitted as their companions on all occasions, and treated with perfect freedom; indeed, in outward appearance they can hardly be distinguished. The king is not averse to converse with the lowest of his subjects, or to be their visitor; and never treats them with hauteur. His retinue is often changing: no man serves him longer than he pleases. They have no wages, nor engage for any stated time, though some remain in the same family all their lives; and these ancient domestics are as much respected as their own relations, giving directions to the younger branches, and managing, as stewards, the affairs of the household without control.

All are friendly and generous, even to a fault; they hardly refuse any thing to each other if importuned. Their presents are liberal, even to profusion. Poverty never makes a man contemptible; but that as affluent and covetous is the greatest shame and reproach. Should any man betray symptoms of incorrigible avariciousness, and refuse to part with what he has in a time of necessity, his neighbours would soon destroy all his property, and put him on a footing with the poorest, hardly leaving him a house to cover his head. They will give their clothes from their back, rather than be called upere, upere, or flingy.

Respecting property, they have no writing or records, but memory and landmarks. Every man knows his own; and he would be thought of all characters the basest, who should attempt to infringe on his neighbour, or claim a foot of land that did not belong to him, or his adopted friend; for the tayo may use it during his friend’s lifetime, and if he has no child, poises it at his death.

If a man bequeaths his property to another on his death-bed, no person disputes the legacy, as there are always witnesses abundant to the gift, if the heir is not present. The landmarks set by their ancestors, the father points out to the son or heir; and should any dispute arise, through their decay or removal, multitudes know where they stood, and the matter is in general easily settled. Indeed it is much the same in all litigations; the cause is referred to a by-stander, and the party which he declares in the wrong submits, and makes the other a peace-offering of the plantain-bark. Men seldom or never fight in consequence of any personal quarrel. If any matter of serious offence is given, the whole family or district take it up, and go to war with their adversaries; but if they chuse not to fight, a peace-offering must be made, which is never refused; if they will fight, the weakest must suffer; and as all the relations adopt the quarrel, there is sometimes much bloodshed, and it frequently leads to a general war. Such broils, indeed, are sometimes produced by what appears to us a very trifling matter; such as furious words spoken against the heir of a large estate, or even of a small one; neglect of proper respect to a child, and other things as trivial; for instance, as the child from the moment of its birth becomes the head of the family, the boundaries of his land are new marked with rude images; and if this new-born infant be a tōwha, or ratirra, a number of little flags are set up in different parts of the boundary; to these all persons of inferior rank must uncover themselves as they pass, whether by day or by night; and should this mark of homage be contemptuously neglected, the mother flies to the shark’s teeth and cuts herself, and the party must make his peace-offering with the plantain; should this be refused, the father and mother would tear off the clothes from his back, and well drub him into the bargain. The friends and relations on both sides sometimes arm, and fatal consequences follow. Even a chief has been known to be driven from his district on account of a dispute originating about a poor man’s child supposed to be affronted by one of the same rank with himself.

The famous, or rather infamous areoey society, consisting of noble persons in general, have also different ranks among themselves, like our freemasons, known by the manner of their tattooing. The highest are called ava’ bly areema tatawe; the next, areema bly; the third, ahōwhoa; the fourth, harrotē; the fifth, e’ōte ēle; the sixth and seventh, po, and mo, youths training up.
between the thighs, and is tucked in before, named the märo, and may be called their breeches. An oblong piece, like a piece of printed calico, not a yard wide, with a hole in the middle to admit the head, hangs down before and behind, with the sides open, falling loose as low as the knees, and leaving the arms quite uncovered: this is the tebôoa. A square piece of cloth, doubled, of any size sufficient to pass once and a half round the waist of the men, and above the breasts of the women, under the tabôoa, is called parü: this falls down only to the knees of the man, but to the mid-leg, and often to the ankles of the woman; and is sometimes tucked in at the corner, or confined by a girdle of cloth, plaited hair, or fine matting, called taddôoa. The women, besides, often wear a piece of cloth, alhão, square, or oblong, folded, which they throw tightly over all, by way of cloak: this is generally of white cloth, and very fine. The other garments are of whatever colours they fancy most. Instead of the märo, worn by the men, the women have a smaller parü, beneath the larger, as an under-petticoat.

When travelling, they usually tuck up the parü, to prevent its being soiled or dirty. If persons of rank appear with more than the ordinary quantity of cloth around them, this is designed for a present; and they generally honour the person for whom it is intended with winding it round him with their own hands.

The women uncover their shoulders and breasts in the presence of a chief, or on passing the sacred ground. Their bonnets resemble the green fradles which our ladies use in summer: they are often changed, as they must cast them away on passing the morai; but they are replaced in a minute by plaiting, or weaving, the leaves of the cocoa-nut; and for this they prefer the bright yellow leaves to the green ones. The turban dresses and tamōo are never worn by the women, but at the heivas, and are called tāō oōpō. Both sexes wear garlands of flowers and feathers, but no wig, or artificial coiffure. The tamōo is made from the hair of their departed relatives, and held in the highest estimation: it is seldom composed of more than five or nine hairs in thickness, but is often five or six fathoms long. They sometimes dress with a garland of cocoa-nut fibres, ornamented with bits of pearl-shell, and the nails of the thumb and fingers of their deceased relations: these they use as mourning, and consider as very precious relics. The women have no morai, nor appropriate place of worship, nor are they ever present at their solemnities; nevertheless they suppose they shall be admitted to happiness with the Eastōo, as well as the men.

In the tattooing of men and women there is a small spot on the inside of each arm, just above the elbow, which is a mark of distinction, and shews that such a person may eat or touch his father's and mother's food, without rendering it rāa, or sacred; it is a fort of feast, that all the amōa have been performed. This is generally received when the head is made free, which is the last amōa, except that of friendship and marriage. The man who does the tattooing to young or old, is called at the pleasure of the parties, and no constraint is ever used. The young persons will not suffer him to leave off while they can endure the stroke of the instrument, though they make cries and lamentations as if he was killing them. The girls are always attended by some female relations, who hold them while struggling under the pain of the operation, encouraging them to cry out, which they think helps to alleviate the anguish. When the pain becomes excessive, and they say they can endure no more, they use no compulsion. No person ever lifts his hand even to strike a child; on the contrary, the young girls under the operation will often strike those who compassionate them, and with them to suspend the operation, as they are never esteemed women till the whole is finished; this sometimes lasts for a year, or more, by intervals, from the commencement of the tattooing.

No where are children brought into the world with less pain or danger: the women submit to little or no confinement within doors, but rise and go about as usual. The infant presently crawls, and soon
begins to walk, and almost as soon to swim. They run about entirely naked, and are remarkably healthy and active.

They are generally acquainted with the art of conveying by signs, either in public or private, and perfect masters of the language of the eyes.

Their voice and speech are soft and harmonious. Their dialect is the Italian of the South Sea, abounding with vowels, and expelling every harsh and guttural sound from their alphabet: this consists only of seventeen letters, with which they express themselves with great facility and precision. Their pronouns are a striking instance of this: these are different according to the number of persons spoken of; we, two only—or, two out of three in company—see, an indefinite number, have each a different pronoun specifically marking the persons; and it is the same in the others, both personal and possessive; a singularity perhaps unknown to any other language. They can hardly articulate, or pronounce a word into the composition of which these letters enter.

In general, the ingenuity of all their works, considering the tools they possess, is marvellous. Their cloth, clubs, fishing implements, canoes, houses, all display great skill: their mourning dresses, their war head-dresses and breast-plates, shew remarkable taste: their adjustment of the different parts, the exact symmetry, the nicety of the joining, are admirable: and it is astonishing how they can with such ease and quickness drill holes in a pearl-shell with a shark's tooth, and so fine as not to admit the point of a common pin.

The men are excellent judges of the weather from the appearance of the sky and wind, and can often foretell a change some days before it takes place. When they are going to any distant island, and lose sight of land, they steer by sun, moon, and stars, as true as we do by compass. They have names for many of the fixed stars, and know their time of rising and setting with considerable precision; and, what is more singular, their names and the account of them resemble, in many instances, the Grecian fables: they have the twins, or two children, their Castor and Pollux, &c.

They reckon in numbers from one to ten, then add m, before each number till they reach 20, reckoning onward thus: attahai 1, ahooroo 10; m, attahai 11, &c: tao 20, attahai, tao 21; and so on to five, ereema tao, five twenties, or 100. But at calculation they are no adepts.

They compute distances by the time it takes to pass from one place to another. They measure their fishing-lines by the fathom, or span, and sound depths of water as accurately as ourselves.

The common dwellings are about eighteen feet in the ridge-tree, oblong, and rounded at the ends. The furniture consists of a few wooden trays and stools for making their puddings, posts to hang their baskets of different sorts to store their provisions, a large chest on which the master and mistress of the house often sleep, or on the floor spread with matting and cloth, and covered with the same; frequently they employ a canoe-house just sufficient for their length, and too low for them to stand erect; and sometimes a bedside: many in fine weather sleep in the open air. Their pillow is a little wooden stool, neatly wrought out of one block; and they who have no such, take the stool they sit upon in their canoes. Their usual seat is the ground, crooked-legged; but they have seats with which they are always ready to compliment a stranger. The unmarried women sleep next their parents, and
MISSIONARY VOYAGE

SECTION III.

Inhabitants.—Men, Women, and Children.—Abode.

The natural colour of the inhabitants is olive, inclining to copper. Some are very dark, as the fishermen, who are most exposed to the sun and sea; but the women, who carefully clothe themselves, and avoid the sun-beams, are but a shade or two darker than an European brunette. Their eyes are black and sparkling; their teeth white and even; their skin soft and delicate; their limbs finely turned; their hair jetty, perfumed, and ornamented with flowers; but we did not think their features beautiful, as, by continual pressure from infancy, which they call tourâome, they widen the face with their hands, distend the mouth, and flatten the nose and forehead, which gives them a too masculine look; and they are in general large, and wide; we had formed from the report of preceding visitors; and though here and there was to be seen a young person who might be esteemed comely, we saw few who, in fact, could be called beauties; yet they possessed eminent feminine graces: their faces are never darkened with a frown, or covered with a cloud of fumes or suspicion.

Their manners are affable and engaging; their step easy, firm, and graceful; their behaviour free and unguarded; always boundless in generosity to each other, and to strangers; their temper mild, gentle, and unaffected; flow to take offence, easily pacified, and seldom retaining resentment or revenge, whatever provocation they may have received. Their arms and hands are very delicately formed; and though they go barefoot, their feet are not coarse and spreading.

As in all warm climates, the women in general here come earlier to puberty, and fade sooner, than in colder and more northern countries; though in some the features continue little changed even to gray hairs; and what is remarkable, famce are said to fade, and revive again, retaining their complexion beyond those who have not experienced such a change. Many, indeed, who lead a disolute life, receive their immediate punishment, and are old and haggard at thirty; whilst others, who have lived more decently, or, at least, have been less profligate, retain all the splendours and vigour of youth at fifty.

As wives, in private life, they are affectionate, tender, and obedient to their husbands, and uncommonly fond of their children; they nurse them with the utmost care: and are particularly attentive to keep the infant's limbs supple and straight. A cripple is hardly ever seen among them in early life. A rickety child is never known; any thing resembling it would reflect the highest disgrace on the mother; if an utter stranger discovers the least defect in a child, he makes no scruple to blame the mother, and imputes it to her want of care and experience in nursing; so that if the child is not born radically defective, which is seldom the case, they will mould it into a proper shape. A person knock-kneed, or bow-legged, is scarcely to be found in the whole island we saw only three hump-backed boys, in three different districts.

The men in general are above our common size; but the chief is a larger race, few of them short of six feet high; and Pomare four or five inches higher, and proportionably bulky. They carry their age well; and are healthy and vigorous at a very advanced time of life, if not infected with disease; such are Otey, the grandfather of Otoo, and Manu Mane, the high-priest, and others. The exact amount of their years can only be collected from circumstances, as they keep no regular computation of time; yet from events which they relate, a pretty accurate calculation may be formed. Many were alive in 1792, who remembered the loss of one of Roggewein's squadron at an island north of Otaheite, in 1722.

The dress of both sexes is nearly the same, excepting that the men wear a narrow piece of cloth, which, passing round the waist, goes...
begins to walk, and almost as soon to swim. They run about entirely
naked, and are remarkably healthy and active.

They are generally acquainted with the art of conversing by signs,
either in public or private, and perfect masters of the language of
the eyes.

Their voice and speech are soft and harmonious. Their dialect is
the Italian of the South Seas, abounding with vowels, and expelling
every harsh and guttural found from their alphabet: this consists
only of seventeen letters, with which they express themselves with
great facility and precision. Their pronouns are a striking instance
of this: there are different according to the number of persons spoken
of: we, two only—we, two out of three in company—we, an indefinite
number, have each a different pronoun specifically marking the per-
sons; and it is the same in the others, both personal and possessive;
singularity perhaps unknown to any other language. Cgkqnxz
they can hardly articulate, or pronounce a word into the composition
of which these letters enter.

In general, the ingenuity of all their works, considering the tools
they possess, is marvelous. Their cloth, clubs, fishing implements,
canoes, houses, all display great skill; their mourning dresses, their
war head-dresses, breast-plates, all display great skill; their mourning
dresses, their war head-dresses, and breast-plates, show remarkable
taste: their adjustment of the different parts, the exact symmetry, the nicety of the
joining, are admirable; and it is astonishing how they can with
such ease and quickness drill holes in a pearl-shell with a shark's
tooth, and so fine as not to admit the point of a common
pin.

The men are excellent judges of the weather from the appearance
of the sky and wind, and can often forecast a change some days
before it takes place. When they are going to any distant island,
and lose sight of land, they steer by sun, moon, and stars, as true
as we do by compasses. They have names for many of the fixed
stars, and know their time of rising and setting with considerable
precision: and, what is more singular, their names and the account

APPENDIX.] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE  [APPENDIX.

Their houses are full of fleas, which harbor in the floor, and are very troublesome; though the natives are much less affected by them than we are; they say they were brought to them by the Europeans. One of our missionaries writes, he has been obliged to get up at midnight, and to run into the sea to cool himself, and get rid of the swarm of disagreeable companions. This, among other causes, has made the call for bedsteads great, as they find the comfort of this mode of sleeping. Their bed-clothes are the garments they wear, if they have no other, which is frequently the case with the common people and servants, who, in that warm climate, little trouble themselves about clothes or the care of them.

They have no partitions in their houses; but, it may be affirmed, they have in many instances more refined ideas of decency than ourselves; and one, long a resident, scruples not to declare, that he never saw any appetite, hunger and thirst excepted, gratified in public. It is too true, that for the sake of gaining our extraordinary curiosities, and to please our brutes, they have appeared immodest in the extreme. Yet they lay the charge wholly at our door, and say that Englishmen are ashamed of nothing, and that we have led them to public acts of indecency never before practiced among themselves. Iron here, more precious than gold, bears down every barrier of restraint; honesty and modesty yield to the force of temptation.

SECTION IV.

Deities of the South Seas.

THOUGH the world was at first of one speech and one religion, all confessing Jehovah in trine existence, the true tradition began soon to be obscured. On the dispersion of mankind, gods many and lords many were created. The East, amidst its thousand deities, still preserved some traces of the trine God. Whoever reads the ingenious Mr. Morris's account of India will receive singularly curious information on this subject. However absurd the notions of deity and creation may appear, now retained by the Otaheiteans, the most polished nations of Greece and Rome devoutly embraced equal absurdities. It should afford matter of great thankfulness, that we have been rescued from the darkness of idolatry. So far at least hath the world been indebted to Christianity, that wherever this hath prevailed, before it every idol hath mouldered into dust.

The deities of Otaheite are nearly as numerous as the persons of the inhabitants. Every family has its tee, or guardian spirit, whom they set up, and worship at the morai, but they have a great god, named Fwihanowe, or, Born of Night. They are held supreme; standing in a height of celestial dignity that no others can approach unto: and, what is more extraordinary, the names are personal appellations:

1. Tane, te Medoea,
   the Father,
2. Oromattow, "Tooa tee te Myde,
   God in the Son.
3. Taroa, Männco te Hooa,
   the Bird, the Spirit.

To these, the dii majores, they only address their prayers in times
of greatest distress, and feasons of peculiar exigency, supposing them too exalted to be troubled with matters of less moment than the illnefs of a chief, storms, devastations, war, or any great calamity. Indeed, fear and suffering seem to be more powerful motives to worship than gratitude. The house of these whanau po is at Opiaie, where the chief carie rahie resides.

The following names of other gods are collected: Orohho, Otoo, Tamaharro, Te'ere, Orouhatoo, Oehawhow, Tamma, Toheite, Vaveah.

For general worship they have an inferior race, a kind of deity penates. Each family has its tee or guardian spirit: he is suppos'd to be one of their departed relatives, who, for his superior excellencies, has been exalted to an eatooa. They suppos'd this spirit can inflict sickness or remove it, and preserve them from a malignant deity who also bears the name tee, and is always employed in mischief.

They have a tradition, that once in their anger the great gods broke the whole world into pieces; and that all the islands around them are but little parts of what was once venoo noo, the great land, of which their own island is the eminent part. A curious conversation held with Manne Manne, the high priest, and Tatai Oroa, the orator and oracle of the country for tradition, is as follows in interpreted by the Swede Andrew:

In the beginning, Taneitook Taroa, and begat Ayve, fresh water; Ayve, or Të Myde, the sea; also Awa, the water-spout; Matøi, the wind; Ayve, the sky; and Pö, the night; then Mahanna, the fun, in the shape of a man called Oerøa Tabøoa: when he was born, all his brethren and sisters turned to earth; only a daughter was left, by name Töwnoo; she became the wife of Oerøa Tabøoa, by whom she conceived thirteen children, who are the thirteen months: 1. Papoere; 2. Ownoonoo; 3. Paroromoro; 4. Paroromoree; 5. Moorecha; 6. Heiha; 7. Taoa; 8. Hoorororeca; 9. Hooreama; 10. Teayre; 11. Tatai; 12. Waaho; 13. Wesha.

Töwnoo now returned to earth, and Oerøa Tabøoa embraced a rock called Poppoharra Harrhea, which conceived a son named Tetoe.

boon amata latoo; after which the rock returned to its original state, and the father of the months himself died, and went to dust. The son he left embraced the land of the sea, which conceived a son of the name of Tee, and a daughter called Opeera; then he also died, and returned to the earth. Tee took his sister Opeera to wife, who produced a daughter Oheera, Reene, Moonoa; the mother died, and the father survived: in her illness she entreated her husband to cure her, and she would do the same for him if he fell sick, and thus they might live for ever; but the husband refused, and preferred her daughter, whom, on her decease, he took for his wife. The daughter bore him three sons and three daughters: the sons, Ora, Wanoo, Tytory; the daughters, Henatoomororooro, Henara, Noowya. The father and mother dying, the brothers said, Let us take our sisters to wife, and become many. So men began to multiply upon the earth.

Respecting a future state, they suppose no person perishes or becomes extinct. They allow no punishment after death, but degrees of eminence and felicity, as men have been here most pleasing to the deity. They regard the spirits of their ancestors, male and female, as exalted into eatooas; and their favour to be secured by prayers and offerings. Every sickness and untoward accident they esteem as the hand of judgment for some offence committed; and therefore, if they have injured any person, they send their peace-offering, and make the matter up; and if sick, send for the priest to offer up prayers and sacrifices to pacify the offended eatooa; giving any thing the priest ask, as being very reluctant to die. But if they find their case desperate, they take leave of their friends, and commend them to the guardian spirits, exhorting them to be more careful of offending them than they themselves had been. When the spirit departs from the body, they have a notion it is swallowed by the eatooa bird, who frequents their burying-places and morais; and passes through him in order to be purified, and be united to the deity. And such are
They entertain a high idea of the power of spirits. In the beautiful and romantic view of Taloa harbour the remarkable peaked mountain is said to be but a part of the original one. Some spirits from Uleiño had broken off the other half, and were transporting it down the bay, in order to carry it away with them, but, being overtaken by the break of day, they were obliged to drop it near the mouth of the harbour, where it now stands conspicuous as a rock; for, like the elves and fairies of our ancetors, these spirits walk and work by night.

Their superstitious notions of this kind are endless; unhappily, their most unnatural and cruel customs are connected with them, and they are tenacious of the worst, fearing the neglect or change of these, though inadvertently, would bring down the displeasure of the Eatooa upon them, and expose them to sickness or death.

SECTION V.

Priesthood and Sacrifices.

The priests at the Society Islands are a pretty numerous body; they are in every district: Māne Manoe seems to be the first among them for knowledge and traditioary information; he is also monarch of Uleiño by right, though an exile. Temare, the chief of Papara, of the seed royal, is also high in the ceremonial office. The priesthood is divided into two orders: the tahowra morai, and the tahowra Eatooa. As tahowra morai, they officiate in all the prayers and oblations made at the morais; these prayers are uttered in a chant that cannot be understood, and was supposed to be a peculiar sacred language; but that is now thought to be a mistake, and the obscurity owing to the mere manner of utterance. All the chiefs officiate as priests on some
occasions, praying for their friends when sick, making offerings at
the morai, and performing other religious ceremonies.

The priests have plenty of employment, being called in on all
occasions, births or deaths, feasts or sickens; and are the physicians
as well as clergy of the country. They affect to possess extraordinary
powers, to promote conception or abortion, to inflict diseases or re-
move them at their pleasure, and are greatly feared on that account.
They are supposed to be able to pray the evil spirit into the food,
by rubbing a human skull with a part of the provisions they eat; and
sometimes to kill men outright. Thus Orepiah is supposed to have
died by Māne Manne’s conjuration. They acknowledge that over us
they have no power, because they know not the names of our God
and our grandfather, which is necessary. They gave us a specimen
of their conjurers in one of our visits to Temāre. A man presented
himself in an old blue coat turned up with red, his head surrounded
with numerous feathers, so as to hide his countenance entirely: he
ran up to us with an unintelligible jargon, making a squeaking
noise, and actions so wild, that we asked if the man was delirious.
The natives not seeing us at all, said it was Temāre’s son, the
Etooa ett, the little god, which killed Omiah and many others.

Having with us a great dog, he fell upon the priest, who fled; at
which the natives seemed terrified, and said he would kill us. After
a while, the priest returned with a club in his hand, driving like a
fury all before him, the women and children shrieking, and the
natives trembling. On this one of the brethren jumped up to protect
the dog, against whom his rage was directed, and wresting the club
from him, turned up the feathered cap, and discovered a well-known
countenance, who had run away from Matavai after robbing Pytea.

We immediately charged him with the theft; on this he changed
countenance, and showed the greatest terror. The natives interposing
in his behalf, while we were telling them of the man and his im-
porture, he gave us the slip, and fled; so we saw no more of him.

He seems to have been one of those called tahowra Etooa, who

Appendix. TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS. 349
to himself he utters a loud shriek, and seems to awake as from a profound sleep, unconscious of every thing which hath passed.

The priests who superintend the lower orders of the people proceed nearly in the same manner, with variations only according to their craft and abilities: among these are women, who officiate, though not solely, for their own sex. They think it impossible that a child should come into the world without their assistance, though, in fact, they afford them none. People of property, when sick, will sometimes have half a dozen of these priests and priestesses praying around them, and making offerings for them; and whichever of these happens, in the estimation of the sick person, to be the happy cause of his recovery, is sure to be well rewarded, and ever after highly respected, to whatever class of the priesthood he may belong. Whenever a priest visits a person of consequence he carries a young plantain in his hand; and before he enters the house offers a prayer, flicks a leaf of the plantain in the thatch, and throws the remainder of the tree on the roof.

Their sacrifices and oblations are various and liberal. They offer to their gods all the product of their island, hogs, dogs, fowls, fish, and vegetables; and at every feast a portion is presented to the easta; before they presume to take their own repast. When a priest announces the necessity of a human sacrifice, or, as on the inauguration of the king, custom requires such offerings, the manner of selecting them is by a council of the chief with the ratiras. The occasion is stated, and the victim pitched upon; he is usually a marked character, who has been guilty of blasphemy, or some enormous crime, or a stranger who has fled to the district for shelter from some other part on account of his ill conduct. The decision of this council is kept a profound secret, and perhaps the only one which is so. They watch the opportunity of the night, when the culprit is asleep, and dispatch him, if possible, with one blow of a stone on the nape of the neck, to prevent any disfigurement of the body; a bone of him must not be broken, nor the corpse mangled or mutilated. If a man has been bit and disfigured by a woman, he becomes unclean for ever, and can never be offered in sacrifice. The victim is placed in a basket of cocoa-nut leaves fastened to a long pole, and carried in a sacred canoe to the mouna, when the eye is offered to the king with the ceremonies before described.

If the chief and ratiras, on the requisition of the priests, declare they can find none deserving death in their district, or refuse to provide a human sacrifice, they may substitute a hog in his place; and it is reported, as taking off something from the horror of the deed, that none are pitched upon whose lives have not been justly forfeited by their crimes. Where there is no law, nor regular administration of justice, this mode is substituted to dispatch a criminal, whom his friends might refuse; but being thus executed, it is supposed the choice was right, and no farther notice is taken: but what a door this opens to partiality, private enmity, and revenge, is too evident and shocking. No woman is liable to be offered at the Society Islands, though they appear the chief victims at the Friendly Islands; nor may they, at Otaheite, be present at any of the religious assemblies, partake of the offerings at the mouna, or tread the consecrated ground, except on a particular occasion; nor may they eat of any food which has been there, or touched by those who officiate at the altar; and all their male attendants are in the same state of uncleanness and excution.

The sacred ground around the mounais affords a sanctuary for criminals. Thither, on any apprehension of danger, they flee, especially when numerous sacrifices are expected, and cannot thence be taken by force, though they are sometimes seduced to quit their asylum. On the inauguration of Otoo many took refuge in the precincts of the mutineers' habitation, which was held sacred as the mouna, and where they enjoyed full protection. Our habitations will afford as assured exemption; and the whole district of Matavai being ceded to us, no more human sacrifices will probably be demanded from us, and such an example will have the most beneficial tendency to abolish
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

[Appendix]

352. ... be enabled only to put an end to a practice so inhuman, and to induce the pregnant females to preserve and commit to our nurture the infants devoted to destruction, we shall acknowledge this alone would amply reward us for the labours of love in which we are engaged.

SECTION VI.

Singular Customs.

WHEN a woman takes a husband, she immediately provides herself with a shark's tooth, which is fixed with the bread-fruit gum on an instrument that leaves about a quarter of an inch of the tooth bare, for the purpose of wounding the head, like a lancet. Some of these have two or three teeth, and thrust forcibly they bring blood in copious streams; according to the love they bear the thing immediately provided. If an accident happens to the husband, his relations make a present of hogs, cloth, &c. to the newly-married pair. As they agree, they live either on the husband or wife's estate; but if they part, each retains their own.

The separation of the women from their husbands on a particular occasion, Dr. Gillham had once the opportunity of remarking. Going into the hut of his toyo, named Poppo, very early, he observed him laid alone on the bedstead, and his wife lying on the floor. Inquiring the reason, Poppo intimated to him, it was because she was at present under the same inactivity. When a woman brings forth a child, a kind of hut is raised within the house with matting and cloth; heated stones are then placed, with sweet herbs and grass spread over them; on these water is sprinkled, and she is clothe shut up in the steam which rises, till she is in a proper perspiration, and can endure the heat no longer; from this vapour-bath she comes out and plunges into the river, and washing herself all over puts on her clothes, and takes the child to the morai. This the afterwards repeats, and often brings on the ague; nor could they be persuaded to desist from so preposterous a custom, such being the force of prejudice.

The child being washed, is taken with the mother to the family morai; where, after the father hath made an offering of a young pig or fowl, with a plantain-tree, the navel-string is separated, about ten inches being left, by one of the priests, who always attends, and
is paid for the operation by a hog, or cloth. A temporary house is erected on the sacred ground adjoining the morai, and what is cut off from the child is buried at the morai. During this time of seclusion, which is for a male infant a fortnight, and for a female three weeks, the mother touches no provisions herself, but is fed by another; and if any person touch the child during this time, he must undergo the same restrictions till the amoaa is performed, of a young hog, or a fowl, for the mother, which finishes this separation for uncleanness. The child is then removed to another temporary house on the sacred ground, near the house in which the father and mother reside, and mother and aunts; a fourth, before the child returns to the house where the father and uncle eat; a fifth, on the same account for the mother and aunts. If the child is a male, these are all till he is adopted by a medicine man, or godfather, when another amoaa is performed; but if a female, two yet remain, one when she is married, that the father and uncle may eat with her husband, and of such provisions as he has touched, which otherwise they could not; the next, that the mother and aunts may touch the fore-in-law's provisions, though they may not eat with him. These last are called faunatae. Hogs and cloth are the offering for the males, for the females only fifth. Of these rites they are in no wise sparing; and much fertility attends them: if the child touches any thing before these rites are performed, it must be wholly appropriated to their use, being raas or sacred; and if any thing touches the child before the amoaa is offered, it must be deposed in a consecrated place nailed in for that purpose; and if it were the branch of a tree, as sometimes happens in carrying it about, the tree must be cut down; and if in its fall it injures another tree, so as to penetrate the bark, that tree also must be cut down as unclean and unfit for use. The head is always regarded as sacred, though, after the ceremonies are performed, these demands cease; but they never carry any thing upon their heads, nor can bear to have them touched without offence; and the cuttings of their hair are buried at the morai.

Both sexes go naked till they are fix or seven years of age; about thirteen or fourteen the operation of tattooing the males begins, and earlier for the females. The instruments employed for tattooing a chief, or head of a family, are always bent to the morai, and destroyed as soon as the work is completed. The females mark their hands and feet with a number of small figures, and their hips with arched lines, guided wholly by fancy, as to their number and thickness; but the men tattoo their arms, legs, and thighs, as well as the buttocks, and a person without these honourable marks would be as much reproached and shunned, as if with us he should go about the streets naked. At thirteen or fourteen years of age the boys have an operation performed, by plucking up the prepuce with a fowl's tooth, and ashes are sprinkled on the wound; it is at their own option when they choose to have it done. The tattoo-men perform the incision, and receive a pig, or piece of cloth, for their trouble. They bathe constantly three times a day in the fresh water, and always wash themselves in it after coming out of the sea; and though men and women are together, there is not the least immodesty permitted, and they slip through their clothes without any wanton exposures—it would be condemned in a man as much as a woman. In their dances alone is immodesty permitted; there it appears the effect of national habit or custom, as no person could ever be prevailed upon to do in any private company what, when they dance in public, is allowed without scruple. In fact, though chastity and modesty are not held in the same estimation with them as with us, yet many of their married women are said to pique themselves on its strict observ.
ance, and are not to be won at any rate; being only accessible to the husband's tayo.

The single young men, who in the heivas indulge indecent gestures, would not dare to do so at any other time; and however strangely the women act in public dances, no woman of character would admit of improper liberties elsewhere. They never uncover their breasts but when they bathe, nor their bosom and shoulders but in the presence of the chief. Their ideas, no doubt, of shame and delicacy are very different from ours; they are not yet advanced to any such state of civilization and refinement; but the woman who failed with the ship became as reserved in manners and dress as any European; and the progress made in the island by the missionaries in this respect when the ship returned, was evident and pleasing.

If a woman has any defect or deformity, the carefully conceals it; and when they go into the water they take with them broad leaves to supply the place of cloth. Their constant bathing prevents every disagreeable smell from perspiration, and their mouth and teeth being washed at every meal, preserves their teeth white and their breath sweet.

They extract every hair from the nose, armpits, &c. to prevent its harbouring any dust or foulness. Their beards are usually neatly trimmed with shells, and their hair short or long, according to their fancy. The women, except those who affect to be prophetesses, wear their hair short and decked with flowers, paying the nicest regard to their persons. They adjust their brows and eyelashes, clipping them if too long, and forming the eyebrows into regular arches. Nor are the men less attentive to their persons, and will sit at the glafs dressing with the greatest complacency. A black cocoa-nut shell filled with water served them for a looking-glass, till we supplied them with what they so highly prized. Fift fëles, or shells, formed their tweezers, the shark's teeth their scissors, and the bamboo their combs. The fragrant oil supplies the place of pomatum, and powder

"and civet can hardly furnish greater beaux." At their heivas they put on their belt, and dress in the most tautly manner fancy can suggest. Both sexes have their ears bored for ornaments; in them they wear pearls, or beads, hanging down about two inches in a plait of hair; sometimes the hole of the ear is fluck with an odoriferous flower. They have pearls which they value very highly; and at first our white beads, which resemble them, were much coveted; but when they found they were spoiled with water, they ceased to be in demand. As long as they are able to move, they never neglect bathing; the old, who can scarcely crawl, get down to the river; nor does any fickness or disease prevent them, nothing but utter inability restrains them from the water.

They produce fire in the following manner: with their teeth, or a mufchel-shell, they sharpen a flick of porous wood; and fixing a larger piece of the same under their feet, they with both hands and a quick motion rub a fcore in the board at their feet till the dust produced takes fire; they have dried leaves or grass ready, into which they sweep this tinder dust, and wrapping it up, wave it in the wind till it kindles into a flame; while they are rubbing they continue singing, or chanting a hymn or prayer, till the fire is produced, in about two minutes if the wood be completely dry. In wet weather this is a difficult task, and therefore they usually then carry about with them fire, which in the dry weather they need not do. The women are not suffered to kindle a fire from that made by their husbands, or any other man, except those feminine male associates which attend them, and are subject to the same rules.

They never suffer a fly to touch their food if they can help it; and should they find one dead in their puddings, or any of their provisions, which sometimes cannot be avoided, they throw it to the hogs. Hence they all carry fly-flaps; these are usually made of feathers, and fixed to a handle of wood ten or twelve inches long, sometimes carved, sometimes plain. The wing bones of the largest fowls, when cleaned, are used for handles; and if they have not thefe, they
supply their place by a bough from the nearest tree. Whenever you enter a house, or approach a place where provisions are preparing, this is the first thing they offer you. When the provisions are dressed and hot before you, the boys continue to fan away the flies with fly-flaps, nothing being more offensive or disagreeable than that a fly should get into their mouths; and their aversion to touch them with their hands is such, that should a dead fly be found on any part of their body, they would go instantly to the river and wash themselves. These flies at times are numerous, but not so venomous as the muketoes in the West Indies: they are of two sorts, the common black fly, and a grey one of the same size, which sometimes stings sharply. They have also butterflies, butterfly moths, muketoes, lizards, scorpions, centipedes, beetles, crickets, grasshoppers, small ants, sand-flies, and others; but neither dangerous nor very troublesome.

The middle-aged of all classes generally take a nap at noon, during the heat of the day. To this the yava, among those who drink it, does not a little dispose. The aged, as more watchful, need not this indulgence; and the youth, too lively to sleep during the daylight, find always some sport or amusement to employ them.

During the night, if strangers lodge with them, they burn the candle-nut, stuck on skewers, that they may find their way in and out of the house without incommodation from those who sleep on the floor, sometimes to the amount of fifty or sixty persons. Nor was it usual to get up and have provisions ready in the night; and some fit and chat, and tell stories, with which they are always delighted. We observed that those which regarded us, and our European manners and customs, less interested them than their own, as their minds were not enlarged to a capacity of comprehending the reports which were made, and these too often fabulous. One navigator told them, we had ships as much larger than his as that was bigger than their smallest canoes; that we had vessels which would reach from Otaheite to Ulietea, about forty-five leagues; and of so vast a height, that a young man going to the topmast-head grew gray before he came down again; that our round tops contained forests of fruit-trees bigger than the bread-fruit. Pomare very earnestly pressed Captain Wilson to say if it was true; but though undeceived in this respect, they are as much staggered at hearing of a house of stone of ten stories, or a bridge over a river of the same materials, as wide as would span the narrow part of their valleys from mountain to mountain. Such gigantic ideas exceed the scope of their intellect; but whatever was related of the Marqueñas, or Tongataboo, their inhabitants, country, manners, trees, canoes, was heard with the greatest avidity, and always drew an audience about the relator, beyond even their favourite national stories.

They lay not the least restraint upon their children from the day they are born; being the head of their families, they are indulged in every thing: they have their own amusements, called heiva tama reēde; as they grow up and advance to manhood these are generally abandoned; but none are controlled by any authority, and any one may continue in them if he pleases.

Though in some respects they are not at all delicate, yet in consequence of their frequent batheings, in the largest companies there is nothing offensive but the heat. Here, as elsewhere, there are some who make a trade of beauty, and know too how to make their advantage of it, having a number of pimps and bawds, nominal relations, who agree for and receive the price of prostitution; but if a person is the tayo of the husband, he must indulge in no liberties with the sisters or the daughters, because they are considered as his own sisters or daughters, and incest is held in abhorrence by them; nor will any temptation engage them to violate this bond of purity. The wife, however, is excepted, and considered as common property for the tayo. Lieutenant Corner also added, that a tayo ship formed between different sexes put the most solemn barrier against all personal liberties. Our brethren who are returned, however,
The women of quality allow themselves greater liberties than their inferiors; and many of the arreoy women pride themselves on the number of their admirers, and live in a fearfully promiscuous intercourse. Few children can be the consequence, and these are universally murdered the moment they are born. Yet, with all this, many are true and tender wives; their large families prove their sacred attachment to the individual with whom they are united; and our European sailors who have cohabited with them have declared, that more faithful and affectionate creatures to them and their children could no where be found. The history of Peggy Stewart marks a tenderness of heart that never will be heard without emotion: she was daughter of a chief, and taken for his wife by Mr. Stewart, one of the unhappy mutineers. They had lived with the old chief in the most tender state of endearment; a beautiful little girl had been the fruit of their union, and was at the breast when the Pandora arrived, seized the criminals, and secured them in irons on board the ship. Frantic with grief, the unhappy Peggy (for so she had named her) flew with her infant in a canoe to the arms of her husband. The interview was so affecting and affecting, that the officers on board were overwhelmed with anguish, and Stewart himself, unable to bear the heart-rending scene, begged she might not be admitted again on board. She was separated from him by violence, and conveyed on shore in a state of despair and grief too big for utterance. Withheld from him, and forbidden to come any more on board, the funk into the deepest dejection, it preyed on her vitals; she lost all relish for food and life; rejoiced no more; pined under a rapid decay of two months, and fell a victim to her feelings, dying literally of a broken heart. Her child is yet alive, and the tender object of our care, having been brought up by a sister, who nursed it as her own; and has discharged all the duties of an affectionate mother to the orphan infant.

They are very fond of dogs, and especially those with a bulky tail, the hair of which they employ in their fine breast-plates; and the women often not only fondle the puppies, but suckle them at their breasts.

The women are not permitted to eat with the men, nor may they drink out of the same cup. Many kinds of food are utterly forbidden them, and those which they may use, are gathered and draped by themselves, or by those feminine male associates who wait upon them, and live with them. If a man touch their peculiar food, they are obliged to throw it away. No representation of a woman is permitted at any of their ceremonies.

But of all their customs, those marked with greatest horror are the infant murders committed in the arreoy society, and of female children, too common out of it; their human sacrifices, and their abominable practices: these, with the wars so frequent, and the diseases which destroy the very principle of life, threaten to depopulate a country, fruitful as the garden of the Hesperides; and they must, if our labours do not succeed, become in the next generation extinct, without fire from heaven.

A practice of a kind so abominably filthy as scarce to be credited, was communicated by the Swede, and confirmed by one of the Otaheites who was present—that there had been a society at Otaheite and Eimeo, who, in their meetings, always ate human excrement, but that it had been suppressed by the other natives of Otaheite.

They have a mode of lulling themselves to rest: the husband and wife, when they lie down, take their pipe of three notes, which they blow with their nostrils; one plays whilst the other chants in unison with it; and this they continue alternately till they fall asleep.

Their generosity is boundless, and appears excessive: the instances our brethren record are surprising. Not only cart-loads of provision more than they could consume were sent in for the whole body, but individuals have received the most surprising abundance, without any adequate return even expected or suggested. To one of the missionaries
MIS6IONARY VOYAGE

APPENDIX.

FIRST VOYAGE, with a travelling house, three large pearls, a fine fene, a beautiful feathered breast-plate, two large hogs, pandal wood, cloth, and fine mats in abundance, with various other things; and similar instances may be observed in the narrative.

They have not always regular meals; but usually eat as soon as they rise at daybreak. Some are very voracious, especially the chiefs. Pomarre hath eaten a couple of fowls, and two pounds, at least, of fish. He was given as a present a double confele and bread-plate two large Pearl, a quantity of various kinds of cloth and fine mats, &c. observed in the narrative.

They have not always regular meals; but usually eat as soon as they rise at daybreak. Some are very voracious, especially the chiefs. Pomarre hath eaten a couple of fowls, and two pounds, at least, of fish. He was given as a present a double confele and bread-plate two large Pearl, a quantity of various kinds of cloth and fine mats, &c. observed in the narrative.

Their mode of salutation is very different from ours: they touch noses; and wonder that we can express affection by wetting one another's faces with our lips.

In war they practice no discipline, and are under no obligation to fight longer than they like; and it is much less disgraceful to run away from an enemy with whole bones, than to fight and be wounded; for this, they say, would prove a man rather foolish than warlike. Except a man has killed an enemy, he is not esteemed a warrior; and though they dread a fear as dishonourable, they fight with a fury bordering on madness, as they know the loss of a battle would be the loss of all their property, which, though of considerable value, they are reluctant to be deprived of, not so much from any covetous desire of possessing, as from their priding themselves on their generosity, and having something to give; and this they do with a grace that adds still more to the favour.

When a person of eminence dies, even if a child of the superior class, he is preferred, and not buried, unless he died of some contagious or offensive disease. They take out the viscera, and dry the body with cloth, anointing it within and without with the perfumed oil; and this is frequently repeated. The person who performs this office is accounted unclean, and may not touch provisions or feed himself for a month. The relations and friends who are absent, perform their part of the funeral rites at their arrival, each female presenting a piece of cloth to the corpse; and they continue to dress and decorate it, as if alive, and to furnish it with provisions, supposing that the soul which hovers round receives satisfaction from such marks of attention; they therefore not only take care of it thus, but repeat before it some of the tender scenes which happened during their lifetime, and washing the blood which the shark's teeth has drawn, deposit the cloth on the tupapow, as the proof of their affection. While all offensive smell remains, they surround the corpse with garlands of flowers, and bring the sweet-scented oil to anoint it.
If a chief dies, he is carried round the island to the districts where he had property, or where his particular friends reside; and the funeral ceremony is repeated: after a tour of some months, he returns to rest at the place of his usual residence. Some bodies are preferred like dried parchment; others, when the flesh is mouldered away, after lying on the tupapow, are buried.

The preserved corpses are called tupapow mure, and kept above ground; and these, in war, are as liable to be taken prisoners as the living, and are as great a trophy as an enemy slain in battle. The man who takes the body assumes the chief's name; therefore, in time of invasion, these are generally the first things conveyed to the mountains, as a place of security: thither, also, they carry Captain Cook's picture, the loss of which would be esteemed as afflictive as that of a chief; and the conquerors might lay claim to the district allotted to him, according to their laws of succession.

The priests never pray over the dead, unless they die of some infectious disorder, and then they entreat him to bury the diseased in the grave, and not infect it on any other person when he is bent back as an eatōa. They throw a plantain-tree into the grave, and bury with him, or burn, all his utensils, that no person may be infected by them.

They bury none in the morai, but those offered in sacrifice, or slain in battle, or the children of chiefs which have been strangled at the birth—an act of atrocious inhumanity too common. When, at last, after the flesh is consumed above ground, they bury the bones, they often preserve the skull, as a precious relic, wrapping it in cloth, and keeping it with great care in a frame or box in their house, as a testimony of their affection.

When any friend, or a stranger, visits a family, he is received with the most cordial welcome. The master and mistress, and perhaps all in the house, call out, and repeat it, Mannōwaw, welcome; to which the visitor replies, Harre minay, I am coming: those of the house answer, Yūrana t'Eatōoa, God blest you; to which the reply is, Tayeeay, here, and then sits down. The occasion of his visit and his wishes are demanded by the master of the family, and answered with the greatest frankness. Infantly preparation is made of a pig, or fowl, to entertain the stranger; and if it is more than can be eaten, it is put into a basket, and sent with him home: meantime, whatever he requests is given, if in the power of the host; and if not, he sends round to his friends and neighbours to procure it: this also is accompanied with a present of cloth and perfumed oil, or something which hath cost them labour, as they say provisions come spontaneously, and are to be made little store of; but what is manufactured, or obtained with toil, is felt suited to be given or received as presents. If any person freezes, they use the same salutation, God blest you, Yūrana t'Eatōoa.

They never return thanks, nor seem to have a word in their language expressive of that idea. Should they not meet with a cordial welcome, they would say so without scruple to the next person they visited, which would be highly disgraceful to the offended, as their established law of hospitality is to entertain all strangers, and many make the tour of the island for months together, sure to find everywhere a cordial reception.

When a chief, or stranger of rank, visits them from another island, all the men of his own station in life present their outdoor, or peace-offering. He is seated in the house of strangers, several being erected for this very purpose, vast and spacious; the chiefs of the district assemble round him, with a priest, who makes a long prayer, or oration; and having several young plantain-trees, he ties a bunch of red feathers to one of them, and with a pig or fowl, lays it at the stranger's feet, who takes the feathers, and sticks them in his ear, or his hair. The priests of the inferior secondary chiefs repeat a like offering, and a feast is immediately provided, with presents of cloth, hogs, &c. If a ratira visits, he will still find a more numerous body to receive him; and though the feast may not be as sumptuous, there are
so many to welcome him of his own rank, that he may stay a month in a district, and visit round every day: indeed they are seldom in haste. Nor are the lower classes less hospitable according to their ability; and everywhere there is such plenty of food and raiment, that some of them continue wandering over the island for many years together, and never find lack of sustenance.

From one cause or another, they frequently change their names; so that a person absent from them a few years; would be at a loss to find out those with whom he was best acquainted, unless he met them. The names of places and things are continued, unless they happen to consist of syllables containing the king's name, in which case, during his lifetime, they are changed, but at his death the common name is resumed.

They have an aversion to compare the size of any food to a person's head, and regard this as a species of blasphemy and insult. A hand laid on the head would be a high offence. One of those seamen who resided on the island, in outrage of their customs, would carry provisions on his head, and was regarded with horror as a cannibal: they have even different names for the head of a hog, dog, a bird, a fish.

If a man eats in a house with a woman, he takes one end, and she the other, and they sleep in the middle. If a woman has a child, the provisions for it must not come in at the same door with the mother's; but there is an opening like a window, through which they are received; and it would be reckoned beauly in the highest degree for her to eat whilst she is suckling her child. When they travel, their provisions must be carried in separate canoes.

The custom of uncovering before the chiefs is universal. We have introduced, however, it is said, a mode of evading it: if any man or woman be clothed in a shant, or coat, of European cloth, or has a hat of our manufacture, he is not obliged to be unclad; it suffices if he removes the piece of Otaheite cloth which is over his shoulders.

THEIR life is without toil, and every man at liberty to do, go, and act as he pleases, without the distress of care, or apprehension of want, and as their leisure is great, their sports and amusements are various.

Of these, swimming in the surf appears to afford them singular delight. At this sport both sexes are very dextrous; and the diversion is reckoned great in proportion as the surf runs highest, and breaks with the greatest violence; they will continue at it for hours together, till they are tired. Some make use of a small board, two feet and a half, or more, formed with a sharp point, like the forepart of a canoe; but others use none, and depend wholly on their own dexterity. They swim out beyond where the swell of the surf begins, which they follow as it rises, throwing themselves on the top of the wave, and steering themselves with one leg, whilst the other is raised out of the water, their breast resting on the plank, and one hand moving them forward, till the surf begins to gather way; as the rapidity of its motion increases, they are carried onward with the most amazing velocity, till the surf is ready to break on the shore, when, in a moment, they steer themselves round with so quick a movement as to dart head foremost through the wave, and rising on the outside, swim back again to the place where the surf first begins to swell, diving all the way through the waves, which are running furiously on the shore.

In the course of this amusement they sometimes run foul of each other, when many are swimming together; those who are coming on not being able to stop their motion, and those who are moving the
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE

APPENDIX.

contrary way, unable to keep their sufficient distance, so that they are carried together by the rushing wave, and hurled neck and heels on shore before they can disembark themselves, and get well bruised on their landing. The women are excellent at this sport; and Iddeah, the queen mother, is reckoned the most expert in the whole island. The children take the same diversion in a weaker surf, learning to swim as soon as they learn to walk, and seldom meet with any accident, except being dashed on the beach; but hardly ever a person is drowned. If a shark comes in among them, they all surround him, and force him on shore, if they can but once get him into the surf, though they use no instruments for the purpose; and should he escape, they continue their sport, unapprehensive of danger. This diversion is most common when the westerly winds prevail, as they are always attended with a heavy swell, which continues many days after the bad weather is abated.

Their amusements on shore are, throwing the spear, or javelin, shooting with bows and arrows, wrestling, dancing, and several other games; at all which the women have their turn as well as the men; but they always separately from each other.

The javelins are from eight to fourteen feet long, and pointed with the swharra, or palm-tree. These they hurl at a mark set up at the distance of thirty or forty yards, with great exactness. They hold the spear in the right hand, and pose it over the fore-finger of the left. At this game one district often plays against another, but never for any wager, only the district in which they play provides an entertainment.

Their bows are made of porow, and their arrows of small bamboos, pointed with tōa wood, which they fix on with bread-fruit gum. The bow-string is made of the bark of the roava; with thefe they shoot against each other, not at a mark, but for the greatest distance. They never use this instrument in war; and the clothes they wear on this occasion are sacred to the game, and never worn at any other time. Since they have learned the use of more destructive weapons, the guns, which they have procured from us, they are said to have become excellent marksmen.

They are dexterous wrestlers. When they challenge each other they strike the bend of the left arm with the right hand, and if left-handed, reverse it. The arm being bent, receives the hand on its cavity, and makes a loud report. The man who returns the clap, accepts the challenge, and throws both arms forward, as if to lay hold of his antagonist. The ring is immediately formed, and they close with each other. As soon as the struggle issues in the fall of either, he silently retires, nor infurs any disgrace, and the conqueror goes clapping round the ring. If they wrestle one district against another, the women always wrestle first, and the men succeed. At this, Iddeah, the queen-mother, excels; and when the party is won or lost, the women of the victorious district strike up a dance. Iddeah is usually mistress of the ceremonies, and appoints the number of falls which shall be made: the party which gains that number first, is adjudged the victor; and the vanquished expresses not the least dissatisfaction. In general, the women bear their falls worse than the men, and betray most signs of anger at being worsted.

They frequently exercise at quarter-staff; and are very expert in defending their head, and all other parts of their body: this they practise from their tenderest age. The science of defence is a chief object; for a wound in war confers no honour, but rather disgrace; therefore they always hide the fear, if possible.

They practise the sling for amusement, as well as employ it in battle, and throw a stone with great force and tolerable exactness. Their slings are made from the plaited fibres of the cocoa-nut husk, having a broader part to receive the stone: at one end is a loop for the hand, in order to keep the sling fast when they discharge the stone. In charging the sling they hold it round their shoulders, keeping the stone fast in it with their left thumb, and jumping, swing the sling three times round their heads, holding the left hand grasped on the
writ of the right, and thus discharge the stone with a force sufficient
to enter the bark of a tree at two hundred yards distance; the stone
flying at an equal distance from the ground, like a bullet, all the
way.

Their dances are various. The heiva is performed by men and
women in separate parties. The women are most gracefully dreft,
and keep exact time with the music during the performance, observing
a regular movement both of hands and feet, though nothing resembling
our dances. The heiva is usually performed by torch-light. The
manner is exactly represented in Cook’s Voyages. They generally
dance under cover; but, by day, before the houses, unless it rains,
having large mats spread on the grass. The women’s dress
is a long white petticoat of fine cloth, with a red border, and a red
stripe about ten inches from the bottom; a kind of vest, or corflert,
made of white or coloured cloth, comes close up under the arms, and
covers the breasts; to this they attach two bunches of black feathers
at the point of each breast; several taffels of the same hang round the
waist, and fall as low as the knees. Two or three red or black feathers
on each fore-finger supply the place of rings. On the back, from
the shoulder to the hip, are fixed two large pieces of cloth neatly
plaited, like a fan or surfboard, and edged with red. Their heads
are ornamented with the tamou, or vast braids of human hair
wrapped round like a turban, and stuck full of fragrant and beautiful
flowers, interspersed with beads and shark’s teeth; our fine writing-
paper was also sometimes applied in addition to these ornaments.

A master of ceremonics directs the movements of the dancers; and
when the women retire, their places are supplied by a chorus, who
sing with the music, or by actors, who perform pantomimes, feizing
the manners of their European visitors, which they imitate in great
perfection: not sparing the conduct of their own chiefs, when objects
of satire; which serves as a salutary check and admonition; for if they
are faulty, they are sure to be publicly exposed.

The houses in which the heivas are performed are open at the ends
and in front, the back being screened by matting of cocoa-nut leaves:
round the ends and in front of the house there is a low railing of
about a foot in height, within which the performers exhibit; and
without, the audience sit or stand: the area before the house and the
floor are all covered with matting.

Any number of women may perform at once; but as the dress is
very expensive, seldom more than two or four dance; and when this
is done before the chief, the dresses are presented to him after the
heiva is finished; and these contain thirty or forty yards of cloth, from
one to four yards wide.

The ponnara, or evening dance, is performed by any number of
women of any age or description, who choose to attend at the place
appointed, which is usually the cool shade. They are dressed in
their best apparel, and their heads decorated with wreaths of flowers.

They divide into two equal parts, about twenty yards distant, and
placing themselves in rows opposite to each other, a small green
bread-fruit is brought by way of a football. The leading dancer of one
party takes this in her hand, and, stepping out about midway, drops
it before her, and sends it with her foot to the opposite row, returning
to her place; if the ball escapes, without being stopped in its course
before it touches the ground, they strike up the dance and sing, beating
time with their hands and feet; this lasts about five minutes, when
they prepare to receive the ball from the other party who have stood
still: if they catch the ball, they return it again; if it escapes them, the
other party dance in their turn. After thus amusing themselves and
the spectators for some hours, the ball is kicked away, and both
parties strike up together. It is at this time they use the lewd ges-
tures described by some of our voyagers; but these only are practised
by the young and wanton, who (says the reporter) are no more to be
taken for the standard of manners than the ladies in the Strand, or the
sea-nymphs at Spithead, would be specimens of our fair country-
women.
SECTION VIII.

Provisions and Cookery.

THE country abounds in every thing necessary for the sustenance of its inhabitants. They have multitudes of hogs, which breed rapidly, and some of a very large form; dogs are highly relished; and rats are numerous and troublesome: common fowls are in great abundance. These, with the birds, constitute the chief of their animal food.

We had made an effort to increase their flock, but with little success. The mare only is yet alive at Ulietea, but the horse is dead. In their wars the cattle were carried to Emébo; the bull is destroyed, and the cows grown wild. The breed of sheep perished. They made attempts to defile the beef and mutton, but having no mode but burning them as the hogs, and baking them in their ovens, the hide was tough as leather, and the taste highly offensive: this made them neglected and despised. The goats have had better speed, but are disliked for their smell and the mischief they do to the cloth plantations, and are inferior to their hogs and dogs, as never to be eaten by the natives; they are chiefly driven to the mountains. The cats multiply, and are useful. We have lately endeavoured to repair the breed of sheep, and though the best ram died, there is a prospect of their increase under our care, unless destroyed by the natives or their dogs. A nest of rabbits has been produced, and they can hardly fail of spreading. We have also, but they have not yet well succeeded. A bull sent to Emébo would continue the breed, though the natives dare not approach the cows, which are grown wild on the mountains. The same fate attended the vegetables, which the former voyagers carried thither, as the animals. Not having patience to let them ripen, and

APPENDIX.] TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS. 373
tasting them when green, they despised the grapes, and trod them under foot; and the pines had hardly a better issue: but the latter are now cultivated, and, under our care, will soon be a valuable accession to their flock of fruits. The Indian corn would ripen every three months, if they thought it worth their pains. Our brethren will probably greatly increase the number of culinary articles, though the natives have already abundance, and care not for any additions.

Fifh they take of many sorts and in great plenty; and they have such a profusion of roots, fruits, and vegetables, as can scarcely be enumerated: the greater part growing spontaneously, and needing neither labour nor culture. The principal of these is the oooño, or bread-fruit. This beautiful, useful, and highly esteemed vegetable seems peculiar to the Pacific Ocean, and is in its highest perfection at Otaheite. The tree is of the size of a middling oak, which in its branching it greatly resembles; the leaves, however, are more like those of the fig-tree, both in colour and substance: they are a foot and a half in length, of an oblong form, the edges deeply indented, and the ribs yielding, when broken, a white milky juice: from the bark, or stave, a strong black gum exudes, which serves them instead of pitch for the canoes, and as birdlime to catch the smaller birds; and which, by tapping, might be produced in great quantities. The tree is of quick growth, floots again when cut down, and bears fruit in about four years. This most plentiful and nutritious food grows as large as a man's two fists. Its surface is rough like net-work; the skin is thin; the core but small; the intermediate part, which is eaten, white, and very like the consistence of the crumb of a new-baked roll. It is divided like an apple, and the core taken out, and then roasted in their oven, when its taste is very similar to the crumb of the finest wheaten bread, with a slight sweetness, as from a mixture of the Jerusalem artichoke. Besides furnishing the most nutritive food, and in the greatest abundance, this tree claims pre-eminence, as affording from its bark the most durable clothing; the wood being excellent for building, and for their canoes, having the singular property of
not being affected by the worms; and the leaves are employed as wrappers for dressing their provisions. When the fruit is ripe they gather it in quantities, and form it into a pasty called mahie, which will keep till the fruit is again in season. When gathered for this use, they scrape off the outward rind, and lay it in heaps to mellow; a deep pit is then dug in the ground, and carefully lined with large leaves; this cavity is filled with the fruit, and strongly thatched down with a ridge like a mushroom bed; the whole is covered close with stones laid over it: there it ferments and settles: when the fermentation is over, they open the pit, and put up the fermented fruit in fresh leaves, taking out the core, and storing it for use, as we cover up potatoes for winter. Some, previous to this process, cut out the core, which makes the colour whiter, but prevents it from keeping so long.

At this season also of the ripe bread-fruit, they make a large oven called oppesee. The chief, on this occasion, summons all his tenants and dependants to bring each a certain quantity of the ripe fruit, which, on a day appointed, is lodged at his house, to the amount of fifteen or twenty hundred weight. They next repair to the hills for wood, and having collected each man his burden, they dig a hole eight or nine feet deep, paving it, and building it up with large pebbles; this they fill with wood, and setting it on fire, when burnt out, and the stones thoroughly heated, they spread the embers on the bottom of the pit with long poles; these they cover with green leaves and the bruised stalk of the plantain; the pit is filled with the bread-fruit, and covered with grass and leaves at bottom as on the sides, and hot embers spread over them; the oven is then thatched down thickly with grass and leaves, and the earth that was dug out cast over the whole. After two or three days it is fit for use, when they make an opening, taking out as much as they need, and slopping it again close. This paste makes a most nutritious sweet pudding, and all the children of the family and their relations feast on it eagerly. During this festive season they seldom quit the house, and continue wrapped up in cloth: and it is surprising to see them in a month become so fair and fat, that they can scarcely breathe: the children afterwards grow amazingly. The baked bread-fruit in this state very much in taste resembles gingerbread.

This is repeated each returning season; nor is it confined to the chiefs, as all may procure it who will be at the pains to provide the oven; for he who has no bread-fruit of his own, or dependants to supply it, goes round to his neighbours with garlands, like our May-day ones; of a shrub called perepeere, these are hollow, and capable of containing sufficient bread-fruit for his family; all of his own rank contribute to fill them; and if he has hands sufficient to scrape them and fill the pit, each brings his portion; if not, he leaves word when he means to call on them, and they prepare accordingly. If a chief wants bread-fruit, he sends his garlands round, and they are sure to come home full; if he sends cocoanut leaves, they form them into baskets for the same purpose. But, without sending, he is sure to be supplied with bread-fruit, hogs, and fish, whenever wanted. The hogs are baked in the same kind of oven.

Oowhe, or yams. These grow wild in the mountains, from one to six feet long, and of different thicknesses. They are very good eating; but being procured at a distance and with more trouble, in the bread-fruit season they are little sought after. These also are baked.

Tarrro. The root is from twelve to sixteen inches long, and nearly as much in girth. It is cultivated in watered grounds, and the leaves make as good greens as spinach. They must be thoroughly dressed, or they occasion an unpleasant itching in the fundament.

Oomarra. Sweet potatoes. These are in great abundance, but very different from those in the West Indies and America, being in shape like the English potato, of an orange colour, resembling the tomato, and, like them, growing on the hills. They form in taste near the Jerusalem artichoke.
FROM MISSONARY VOYAGE

YAPPE. A mountain root, larger than the tarro. It requires to be well dressed, as the raw juice is acrid, and sets the tongue and lips in a great heat, but when properly prepared is very good food.

PEEA. A root like potatoes, and of the nature of cassida. If dressed without proper treatment it is bitter, acrid, and unpleasant; to remedy this, they grate it on coral into a tray, and pour water upon it, which they decant next day, and repeat the ablutions for five or six days, stirring it up; by this means all the deleterious quality is washed away; they then dry it in the sun, and cut it up for use. It resembles starch; makes, as flour, excellent pudding; and, mixed with water, forms a paste for joining and thickening their cloth.

MAPOORA is a species of tarro, growing wild in the mountains, and smaller than what is cultivated. The juice is acrid and hot; but, properly dressed as before, is used for food or paste, as the peea.

DIVDE, a common root, growing everywhere, large as a potato, but most like the turnip-radish. It is of a fiery pungent taste, but loses it by being kept all night in one of their ovens, by which also the mapoora becomes edible.

TEE. A root of no great size, growing in the mountains, sweetish, and producing a juice like molasses; when in want of other provisions, they dig it up and bake it. The leaves are used to line the pits for the mahic, and to thatch the temporary huts, in their excursions to the higher regions. They make use of these also to spare better clothes, with one or two leaves round their waists as a mack, and the plantain over their shoulders, they dress for fishing, or any dirty work.

ENVOYE. A kind of fern. It only grows in the mountains; the root when dressed is good food.—There is a variety of other roots growing spontaneously, but seldom used, except in a scarcity of bread-fruit, or during any stay in the mountains; then they dig up and dress the roots around them, to avoid the trouble of carrying provisions. As they are expert at killing birds, with which the hills abound, and at catching fish, which the lakes and rivulets furnish in plenty, they seldom know want; though sometimes they are detained a considerable time in search of the sandal wood, dyes for their cloth, and sweet herbs and flowers for perfuming the cocoa-nut oil.

EVEE, improperly called the yellow apple, is as large as a nonpareil, and of a bright golden hue; but oblong, and different in smell and taste from our apples, more resembling a peach in flavour, as well as in being a stone fruit. It has been compared to a pine-apple or a mango. It grows on a large beautifully spreading tree, three or four in a bunch; is propagated by seeds or suckers, soon produces fruit, and is in season a great part of the year. The bark furnishes also a transparent gum, like that on the plum-tree, called tapou, which they use as pitch for their canoes.

EHEYAH is a fruit of a red hue, like the European apple in taste and sub stance, but more watery. It has a great singularity, of filaments hanging from it, which come from the core. This tree is about the size of a cherry-tree. These two, with another bearing red flowers of an unpleasant smell, are the only ones which annually shed their leaves; from the evee they begin to fall in September, and by Chritmas the young leaves and fruit make their appearance; and the apples at Matavai begin to ripen in June. The heyah is ripe in November, and the leaves fall in January. The other trees remain in perpetual verdure, never losing their leaves altogether, but the young ones succeed the old as they fall. From these cider has been made by the mutineers.

Next to the bread-fruit in usefulness, and almost equal to it, is the HEAREE, or cocoa-nut, which affords both meat, drink, cloth, and oil. The hulks are spun into rope and lashings for the canoes, and used for caking. Of the leaves they make baskets, bonnets, and temporary houses; and of the trunk, fuel.

The RATA, or chestnut, is different both in size and shape from those of Europe. The fruit is flattened more as a bean, about two inches long, with a hard thick corky shell, and a sweet nut, as large as a hazel-nut, enclosed in a thin papery husk. The inner skin bulges like a bladder, and must be broken before the nut can be got at. It is very nutritious, and is often kept whole after drying, being used as a substitute for the bread-fruit.

E'HEE is a tree of a red hue, like the European apple in taste and substance, but more watery. It has a great singularity, of filaments hanging from it, which come from the core. This tree is about the size of a cherry-tree. These two, with another bearing red flowers of an unpleasant smell, are the only ones which annually shed their leaves; from the evee they begin to fall in September, and by Christmas the young leaves and fruit make their appearance; and the apples at Matavai begin to ripen in June. The heyah is ripe in November, and the leaves fall in January. The other trees remain in perpetual verdure, never losing their leaves altogether, but the young ones succeed the old as they fall. From these cider has been made by the mutineers.
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE  [Appendix,

inches and a half across, but much resembling a chestnut in taste, and is roasted like them.

Shaddocks, transplanted from the Friendly Islands by British navigators, and called by the natives ooroopappaa, foreign bread-fruit, are in no estimation. The European visitors likewise have added pine-apples, lemons, limes, Indian corn, tobacco, ginger, &c. which however seem little valued by the islanders.

Of plantains they have fifteen different sorts: the maiden, oraya; the horse plantain, papaaroa; the mountain, pafe, &c. The generic name is mayya. The pafe grows only on the mountains, and differs much from all the other species, the stalk being of a raven or deep purple colour, the leaves larger, and of a deeper green. The fruit grows all round the top of the stalk, which rises upright like a sugar-loafed cabbage, and closely wedged in by the side of each other; when ripe, the fruit is a reddish brown, and within a greenish yellow, and has something of the smell of paint; if cut when young, it resembles ferns like cucumber. Of these they make a pudding which tastes like gooseberry-fool, called popoefaye. The root is as good as yam. Of plantains also they make a pudding, called toparro, mixed with tarro and cocoa-nut, very like a curd. The cocoa-nut is grated on coral, and mixed with its own milk; this is wrung dry in a friction kind of grafs, that expressesthe white juice, and leaves the substance of the nut behind; into this juice they grate the tarro, and mix the ripe plantain, tying the whole up in plantain-leaves made tough by holding them over the fire. These pudding-bags remain all night in the oven, and, when taken out, the preparation may be eaten hot or cold, and will keep for many weeks.

Saypay is another kind of nice pudding made of bread-fruit and cocoa-nut milk in the same manner; and often dressed in small quantities, by putting into it heated stones.

Poe takro is made of the same materials, with the addition of the tender leaves of tarro broken into it.

Poepoe is a compound of baked bread-fruit and mahie, beat up together in a tray with a stone instrument, and eaten at every meal, mixed with water or cocoa-nut milk; and sometimes is made of bread-fruit or mahie separately, according to the several tastes of the persons. In this state it much resembles flummery. With this our new-born infant is daily supplied by old Madam Pyetea, and thrives greatly. A multitude of inferior roots and fruits are edible, and might be improved by cultivation, but the immensity of spontaneous produce renders it unnecessary.

The cocoa-nut oil is made by grating the full-grown cocoa-nut kernel into a large trough; after a few days digestion the oil begins to separate, which they gently pour off, and mix with it fragrant herbs, flowers, the farina of the blossoms of the fwhara, or prickly palm, and sandal wood; leaving the whole to macerate three weeks or a month, well stirring the ingredients every day. When it has acquired a strong perfume, the oil is wrung out, and put up into bamboos for use, and called manao. There is a quicker method of extracting the oil, by exposing the nuts broken to the sun; but the oil thus drawn is always rancid.

In preparing a hog for the table, they always either drown or strangle it; the latter is usually preferred. If the hog is large, they make two or three rounds of strong cord about his neck, and with a flicht twist it till the breath is stopped, stuffing the nostrils and fundament with grafs, when the animal quickly dies. They wet it all over, and surrounding it with dry leaves or grafs, finge off the hair, scraping it with flichts and cocoa-nut shells, and a rough stone, till the skin is perfectly clean. With a spli bamboo, or knife, they open the belly, and take out the entrails and coagulated blood, which they divide into cocoa-nut shells mixed with some fat of the cawl;
to this they put hot stones, and make a kind of black pudding, by way of whet, whilst the hog is baking. The hog being washed within, the maw cleaned, and the rest of the guts, the whole is placed in the pit, or oven, refting on its belly, and with it bread-fruit, yams, taro, &c. covered thick with plantain-leaves, hot embers, and grass, with the earth which was dug out heaped upon it till ready; which, in a hog of moderate size, requires at least two hours; if the pig is small, less than half the time will serve. The leaves are placed so carefully, that not a particle of earth reaches the provisions, either in going in or coming out. In the same manner they dress all their other food; and they like it well drenched, except their fish, which they prefer raw. Their cookery is simply baking or broiling, as they have no vessel of their own capable of bearing the fire. However, they lose nothing of the delicacy of their food in baking; and fish so drenched is preferable to being boiled.

They make three meals a day when at home, and eat heartily; and nothing pleases them more than to observe a stranger eat with appetite. When at a distance from their usual abode, and great multitudes are assembled in one district, provisions cannot be furnished for all in proper season, and they content themselves with one meal a day; and when thus completely hungry they may well pari for voracious with those who have their regular meals, and are satisfied with the plenty around them; besides, every one endeavors to procure abundance for the stranger, even though he should go himself with a hungry belly. The greatest part of their diet is vegetable, and it does not often fall to the lot of inferiors to have a regular supply of animal food. Whatever the sea produces they eat, affirming that nothing unclean can come from water.

In eating they sit cross-legged on the ground, or on leaves; they first make their offering to the Eatoa (for this even heathens feel their bounden duty), then wash their hands, and begin stuffing their mouths full of bread-fruit, and dip their fish or flesh in a cocoa-nut shell of salt water, which is their salt-cellar. They are ever ready to divide their provision with those who have none. Any place serves for a dining-room; they often squat down on the grass, or under a shady tree, and always eat separately, for fear of incommending each other with their fly-flaps. Green leaves from the nearest tree afford them a table-cloth, and before them is a cocoa-nut shell of salt water.

Besides their hogs and poultry, their dogs are esteemed excellent food, and much preferred to goat's flesh, being fed wholly on vegetables; the goats, though numerous, we never saw them in flesh. Their fowls do not differ from our own; and in tenderness and flavor are nothing inferior.

They seldom plant bread-fruit trees, as they spring again from the roots wherever cut down; but they make large plantations of cocoa-nuts and plantain; a beautiful grove near One Tree hill was set by the hands of Pomare and Ideiah. These plantations are usually the work of the chiefs, who generally excel the lower classes, whether in sports or ingenuity. The noble women are the principal cloth-makers; nor is it the least disparagement to a chief to be found in the midst of his workmen labouring with his own hands; but it would be reputed a great disgrace not to show superior skill. Like the ancient patriarchs, they assist in preparing and cooking food for their visitors.

**SECTION IX.**

**Birds.**

The number of the feathered tribe is very great. Besides the common tame fowl they have wild ducks, parakeets of various kinds, the blue and white heron, fly-flapper, woodpecker, doves, boobies,
noddies, gulls, petrels, sand-larks, plover, martin, men-of-war and tropic birds, with a multitude of others unknown to us. The mountains produce a great variety of a larger and smaller size, for beauty and for song; these are never seen on the low lands, nor near the sea.

The tropic-birds build their nests in holes of the cliffs; and as their long feathers are held in request for their paries and mourning creches, they procure them in the following dangerous manner. From the top of the high cliffs, beaten by the waves beneath, a man is lowered down by a rope, crossed across a stick; he searches all the holes from bottom to top, swinging from point to point by a staff he holds in his hand, and by the fishes which project, or the shrubs which grow there. When he finds a bird on her nest, he plucks out her tail feathers, and lets her fly. When he can find no more birds, or is tired of the labour, he gives the signal to be drawn up. Dreadful as it may appear to be, hanging thirty or forty fathom down, and four times as many to the bottom, few accidents ever happen; though the sport is often continued for many hours together.

They set a peculiar value on the shining black feathers of the men-of-war birds, which being birds of passage, they watch their arrival at the rainy season; a float of light wood is then launched into the water, baited with a small fish, as soon as they observe the bird approaching, whilst they stand ready with a long pole of sixteen or eighteen feet within reach of the float. The moment the bird pounces on the fish to seize it, they strike at him with the pole, and seldom fail of bringing him down; if they miss their aim, the bird cannot be again tempted to approach. The cock bird is most valuable, and a large hog will be sometimes exchanged for one.

The smaller birds are caught with the bread-fruit gum made into birdlime; and spread on sticks of bamboo. Those who frequent the mountains will often kill them with a stone thrown by hand. Use in this sport has made them fine marksmen; they point at the

---

**SECTION X.**

**FisheY.**

Their fishing-tackle consists of lines of all sizes, from five fathoms to fifty, and from one to twelve fathoms deep. They have lines and hooks of all sorts. These lines and lines are formed from the bark of a shrub called röeva, which seldom grows larger than hemp, and looks like it when dressed. There are several other sorts of an inferior quality. They twist the filaments on their thigh with their hands, and wind up the thread into balls, some of two, some of three threads; but they seldom make their lines of more than two threads, even for dolphins; the three threads being more liable to kink and get foul, when of any considerable length; and as they always play the dolphin, are more apt to snap. Their hooks are made of pearl-shells, though they prefer iron, and form a nail into an excellent hook. Our hooks were highly esteemed by them.

They have different sizes and different shapes for the different kinds of fish. Some are made to represent the flying-fish, others for putting on real fish, or what other bait the fish will take.

For the dolphin they fish in sailing canoes, at four or five miles distance from land. They never put out a line till they discover a fish, when they make sure of it, as they bait with flying-fish prepared for that purpose. When the dolphin is hooked they play him till spent, when they bring him alongside by degrees, and lay hold
FIRST MISSIONARY VOYAGE [APPENDIX.

on the tail, by which they lift him in, never depending on the hook
and line. When they have got to the fishing ground they ply to
windward. About fifty or sixty canoes from Matavai are employed
in this fishery during the season, which lasts about six months, as
their fish follow the sun. While the sun is to the north, they are
scarce; when he passes the line in great plenty. They spaw about
March, and then the fishery ceases, and the canoes are otherwise em-
ployed, either in trading to the islands, or in fitting for the albacore
and bonito fishery, which next commences.

While the dolphin fishery lasts, numbers of large flying-fish are
caught by the following means: a number of small white sticks, six
or eight feet long, are prepared, and weighted with a stone to keep
them erect in the water: to each of these sticks a short line and
a hook of bone baited with cocoa-nut kernel. These they cast out
into the sea as they are standing off at a distance from each other,
and taking them up at their return, generally find a fish at every
hook; so that if they have no success at the dolphin fishery, they
do not return empty-handed; and sometimes bring in sharks and
other fish.

To fish for aakva, or albacore, and the aroa, or bonetta, they have a double canoe; on this a crane is fixed, at the head of
which they have two lines made fast to a spreading fork, forming
two horns, and at the back a rope. The heel is fixed in a roller
on the fore part of the canoe, and all but one man are kept abaft to
attend the back rope. The man who stands forwards holds the
hook, and when he sees a fish, he lowers down the crane till the
bait touches the water. The man forwards keeps heaving out water
with a scoop, and now and then casts out a small fish. The moment
an albacore is hooked he gives the signal, and those abaft raise up the
crane, and the fish swings in to the man, who is ready to seize him.
Sometimes the fish is too large, and the canoe too light, that, without
much care, the albacore carries it under water; yet seldom any other
damage ensues than the loss of the hook and fish.
the fish from hole to hole, and rise with one in each hand. The weather must be calm for good sport, as the least ripple on the water darkens the bottom. In dark nights they employ torches to draw the fish around the canoes, and have lading-nets ready to scoop them up. When the fish come into shallow water to spawn, they strip coconut leaves from the stem, and knotting them on a line, sweep with them the reefs and shoal places, till they force them near the beach; when, with lading-nets or small seine, they take great quantities.

Besides these methods of fishing, they use two or three-pronged forks of ta wood, darting them at a distance from the beach, and when they strike a fish swim after it; others, with many prongs, are hurled amid the shoal from their canoes, and sometimes strike two or three fish at once.

Whales are seldom killed, except now and then young ones which get entangled in the reefs, or are thrown over them by the heavy surf. When they discover one in this situation, they surround him with their canoes, and thrust into him their war spears; but often have their canoes dashed in pieces before they can dispatch him.

Their fish are numberless, of all sizes, forms, and colours, common to tropical regions; and many which are peculiar to those seas, and for which no English names are known. Their fishing-tackle displays the greatest ingenuity, and can only be excelled by their art in using it; in this no nation can vie with them. The fisherman builds his own canoe, makes his lines and hooks, and bait, and all the necessary apparatus. The hooks are ground with coral, from pearl-shells, bones, the tusks of bears, and sometimes of hard wood; and of different shapes and sizes, according to the nature of the fishery. Some are formed like our artificial flies, and serve for bait and hook together, and though not bearded seldom lose the fish once hooked; and notwithstanding the form to us appears most clumsy and rude, they will succeed, when we, with our best hooks, cannot.

The women who are not of the blood royal, or married to such, are forbidden to eat turtle, whale, porpoise, shark, albicore, and dolphin. The turtle not being caught in any great plenty, and regarded as a faced fish, is usually sent to the chief, and eaten at the mori.

The shell-fish are abundant: pearl and small common oysters, crabs, cray-fish, cockles, some of an enormous size, conchs, mussels, whelks, winkles of various kinds, wiltles, clams, shrimps, sea-eggs, and shells of peculiar beauty; there are also land crabs, but seldom eaten.

During the rains they catch great quantities of small fry at the mouth of the rivers: they form a large net, or rather a vast bag, of the coconut husk sewed together, with a wide mouth to receive the stream, which is held open and secured by fomes to the bottom. With coconut-nut leaves stripped and tied together, called row, they sweep before them into the bag-net, and catch shrimps at a draught. Sometimes the women take each a bag-net and basket, forming a line across the river, and hold it to the bottom by their feet, and the mouth open with their hands, and when they have filled their basket, go home and dress them. They seldom return empty-handed, and the queen herself and her mother are as often engaged in this work as any others.

They have also the same methods practised with us, of running a dam across the river where it is shallow, and leaving only sluices open, where the bag-nets are fixed: they go above, and plunge and beat the water, to drive the fish into the net; though to this they have seldom recourse till the waters are low, and the fish become scarce.

When they angle they stand in the sea up to the shoulders, using a long bamboo fishing-rod, and catch numbers of fine fish, particularly the mullet, or sea-chub, with others of a delicious kind, as the white mullet; the red are usually caught in seines, and used as bait for the albicore and boneta.

There is a fish of the conger el 0 kind which is poisonous, and affects them as sometimes mussels do us in England, but in a greater degree, producing vast swellings in the body, hands, and feet, and
even depriving the limbs of sense and motion: they have, however, found out a medicine which in a few days expels the poison. An Englishman ate of this fish without inconvenience, whilst a native who devoured what was left was almost raving mad, his limbs swollen, inflamed as in the scarlet fever, with excruciating pain, and his eyes rolling as if they would start from their sockets; yet, after ten or twelve days, he recovered, by a preparation of herbs ministered by a priest with many prayers. This kind of fish is about twenty inches long, the fins edged with green, the skin of a brownish hue, and called by the natives  

pاه, پیر, رکه.  

It is caught about the reefs, and some are not poisonous, though they know not certainly how to distinguish the good from the bad. There is also a small red crab, no bigger than a horse-bean, so very deleterious, that it always kills the person who eats it. The hōōdo, like our cocculus indicus, is sometimes used by them to intoxicate and poison the fish; but this never injures the person who feeds upon them.

SECTION XI.

TREES AND SHRUBS.

THEIR trees exhibit the greatest beauty and variety; two are particularly remarkable for their flowers and fragrance. The  

تیمیر  

has milk-white flowers, of a delicate smell, something like jasmine: with these they adorn their hair, being very fond of perfumes. The tree is large, and covered with flowers; it grows in the low lands, and is cultivated with great care. The other is a native of the mountains, and called  

بوها;  

it bears a light yellow flower of singular beauty and scent, with which the women form hairdresses for their hair. They have many other flowers of less fragrance. The tobacco planted by Captain Cook is spread over the island, the natives being particularly fond of the red blossoms it bears. All sorts of sweet-smelling flowers would be highly prized by them. They have a variety of sweet herbs, which they employ in perfuming their cloth and their oil; one sort, a kind of mint, they call  

مابوأ.  

The tomato nuts afford also a perfume when pounded; they mix them with water, and steep their cloth in it, and for many days it retains a powerful scent, but by degrees it is lost.

YUTE, the morus papyrifera, the cloth-plant, or Chinese paper mulberry: there are two kinds in use, the one called  

میر , the other  

پایرو.  

This they carefully cultivate, fencing the plantations with a ditch, to prevent the hogs and goats from having access to them, especially the latter, which do much mischief by barking them, and are therefore tied up, or driven into the mountains. The plants of this tree shoot up like oaks, and when about ten or twelve feet in height, and three inches in circumference, they are cut down and carefully stripped of their bark; of this their finest white cloth is made. The rind being taken off, is carried to the water, the outer cuticle scraped off carefully, and well washed, till the sap and slime are separated from it; they wrap this in plantain-leaves, and leave it for three days to digest, by which time it becomes clammy and fit for working into cloth. The bark is next spread of a regular thickness on the beam where it is to be beaten, about eight inches wide, and they begin with the grooved beetle to spread it out to a proper breadth and equal thickness in every part. A number of plantain-leaves are laid on the ground, and on these the cloth is spread to bleach in the early morning dew for several days, removing it as the sun grows high: when perfectly bleached, it is dried, and rolled up in bundles for use. This cloth is called  

هیوبو و پاراری .  

if they wish it to be clouded, they break the outer bark with a stone, and wrap the sticks in leaves for three or four days before they bark them.
They mix also the inner bark of the tender branches of the breadfruit tree with the cloth-plant, and prepare it in the same manner. If a chief, or man of property, has cloth to be made, he sends the mulberry-plants in bundles to his tenants, and they mix them with the bread-fruit branches, and bring home the cloth when prepared. If he needs a piece of very large dimensions, he tells them when he shall set about it; on this day the women of the district assemble with their beetles, each bringing a quantity of materials; and the ground being covered with plantain-leaves, they place their work in a line, and set to it all together, beating time to a song given out by one of their principal helpers; and when they strike up, make a vast noise, two hundred sometimes being employed on one piece of cloth four fathoms wide, and forty fathoms long.

Their cloth is made of a variety of colours, black, white, and several shades of crimson, yellow, gray, and brown. The black is dyed with the sap of the mountain-plantain, or under the roots of such cocoa-nut trees as grow in wet and swampy grounds, where they lay the cloth to soak for a day or two, then dry it, repeating the process till it becomes a deep black, when it is washed in salt water to fix the colour. This is called oowery. The brown is dyed or tanned with the bark of several trees, especially the toa, which gives a fine bright colour, heightened by the sun. The bark is scraped with a shell, and after lying to infuse in water, and wrung out, the cloth is dipped in the infusion, and spread in the sun to dry, repeating the operation till it becomes a fine bright brown, called hëëre and powhëëre. The yellow is extracted from turmeric or réya, which grows here in great abundance, the country being over-run with it, and capable of furnishing any quantity, as well as of pšohey, āva, or ginger. The gray is the natural colour of the cloth when unbleached; after being half worn it may be dyed brown, and lined with white, by putting two cloths together; this is called hópaa. The red is produced from the mâteë berry.

When the brown cloth is worn out they bark the branches of the bread-fruit, and mix the old brown cloth with the new bark, beating them together, which makes a mottled piece: this they dip in a light yellow prepared from the root of a shrub called nòno, which gives it a beautiful appearance; they line it also with white, and infusing perfumes in the yellow dye, call the cloth opotta potta: they have yet another kind of cloth called marrë, made of the mulberry bark, half beaten: this consists of several layers of irregular thickness, for upper garments. At this the araeoes are peculiarly expert, though it is reckoned women's work, and requires skill and nicety in the joining, to prevent the part painted on from stiffening the cloth; this they paint with a beautiful crimson called mårëë, extracted from a berry growing on a tree of the same name. The expressed juice of the berry they mix with the leaves of another tree called tòw, and imprint sprigs and leaves on the cloth by wetting them with this juice, and impressing them on the cloth according to their fancy. The berries of the mårëë are brown when ripe, of the size of a floë; and being gathered, they nip them between the thumb and finger, expressing a yellow drop or two, which they sprinkle on the leaf of the tòw, by hitting one hand against the other; two or three drops suffice for a leaf. When the berries are all nibbled, and the leaves wetted, they are worked with the hands in a wooden tray, sprinkling water on them till a beautiful crimson colour begins to appear, when they express the dye from the leaves, and throw them away. They lay on the colour with a small brush of siringy fibres, made of a rush called mòoo, like a camel's hair pencil.

There are other trees from which cloth is made, but the process is the same in all. Sometimes they paste together pieces of different colours, cut into curious shapes, in which display of taste the araeoes excel.

The women, with their feminine male associates, make the cloth; the men provide the materials. The beam on which the bark is spread is about twelve feet long, made of a hard wood called marrë, squared to fix or eight inches, and finely smoothed on the upper side. The beetles are formed of toa, about fourteen inches long, and two
and a half square. The sides are grooved of four different sizes, so
the cloth is to be made of a finer or coarser thread; the handle is
round; the beetle is called ayey; the beam, tdootdooa,

TDootdooa, a large tree like the chestnut, bears a nut flatter,
and very oily. It will not burn well till a little scorched in the oven,
when it is strung on the rib of the cocoa-nut leaf, and affords a
tolerable light. The bark of the root of this tree also affords a light
brown dye, and the stock is good fuel.

The fruit-trees have been mentioned under the article of provifions;
It remains only to decribe the principal trees on the mountains.

To A is a large tree, the wood so exceedingly hard as
to

be wrought

with the greatest difficulty, even with the hardest iron tool. The best
axe is presently spoiled, as if cutting against stone; yet of this they form
their war clubs, spears, cloth-beaters, and, what is marvelous, with
their own miserable tools of stone and bone. Their clubs are from
four to six feet long; and their spears from fourteen to eighteen feet.
The bark affords a brown dye.

To MANO, a vast spreading tree: out of this they form their

canoes, pillows to sleep, and stools to sit upon, pudding dishes, and
trays, all wrought with infinite labour out of the solid wood. The
grain resembles walnut, and will take a high polish. It bears a feed,
or rather nut, which is used with other ingredients to perfume their
cloth; and is applied externally for wounds, and internally, for the
ill effects arising from eating some kinds of fish.

MARRA, a large tree: the wood hard; and when young, white;
when old, brown. It is of a fine grain like box, and used for
building canoes; it also makes paddles for war canoes, cloth beams,
axe and adze handles and handles, &c.

FwHYFwHY grows to the size of an oak, its grain resembling the
white oak, and is used for canoes, chefs, and planks for various
uses.

AMAI, a clove-grained wood, resembling mahogany, has a sweet
smell; it bears a pod not unlike the fearer bean. The tree is

large, and used for canoes, and also for all tool handles. When
planted in the monois, it is there called roava, and its leaves
are employed in their religious ceremonies. The substitute and am-
assador of a chief always carries the branch of this tree in his hand,
to give weight to the message he delivers; this being regarded as an
emblem of truth; and he that bears it is heard and received as if the
chief himself were present.

TEVO. A large tree, the wood hard, and used for common and
war canoes, for smooth planks on which to frame the cloth-plant,
and many other uses.

POKROW resembles our elm, and is employed in building canoes,
rafter for houses, and paddles; the inside bark makes washing-
mats, ropes, and lines; some of these mats are very fine, and worn
in wet weather. The mats are very fine, and worn

out.

EYTO. A very large tree, the wood reddish brown, like maho-
gany, nearly as hard as teak, and used in many parts of the canoes.
The bark affords a brown dye for cloth, nets, and lines; and, though
only steeped in cold water, the colour never washes out.

TEROTAVA, a hard white wood, very tough, forms the outrig-
ners for canoes, railing for houses, and all such kind of fencing,
and is preferred on account of its durability.

EAX, the yellow and brown sandal wood, grows in the moun-
tains, but is scarce; being precarious, its growth might be encour-
gaged by planting, or perhaps a more careful examination will discover
a greater abundance.

HAOTDOO. A large spreading tree, the wood not hard, em-
ployed in building canoes, bears a large nut, thick in the middle,
and tapering at each end. It will intoxicate the fish, when mixed
with bait, so that they rise to the surface, and may be taken by
hand, but is not often used.

TOW. A low tree, with wide spreading branches. The wood is
white and soft; of this they make scoops for bailing the canoes.
The leaves, with the mate berry, form the beautiful scarlet dye. The flower has a fragrant smell.

Mattoe is about the size of a cherry-tree; the berries are as large as the floe, or wild grape; when ripe, of a deep brown. The bark makes lines, and thread for shingles; it also affords a species of cloth, and very fine white matting.

Nona, a small tree, bears a fruit like four pop. The inside bark of the root produces a fine light yellow dye.

Eawwa. The wild floe tree. The bark, when young, yields the fine gray cloth called ora, the most serviceable and valued of all their manufactures. The branches hang down and take root again, forming a clutter, as a trunk of enormous size.

Evaye, the silk cotton, grows in great abundance, about the size of a rose-tree; but the natives never gather the pods, nor make any use of it.

Roaa, a small shrub, like hemp; the bark, when cleaned and dressed, answers the same purpose, and makes, when spun, the strongest lines and cords.

Ohee, the bamboo, a most useful tree, grows in abundance on the hills, rising to the height of sixty feet, and of considerable thickness, though not very strong. They use them, when fully grown, for vessels to hold their oil, plain or perfumed, salt water, and any other liquid. They make good fences for houses; split fine, they serve for carving-knives, for fishing-rods, for hooking down the bread-fruit, for cages, quivers for arrows, flutes, and a variety of other things. Of the smaller sort their arrows are made.

Atiho, or reed. With these fences are made; they serve to lay under the thatch and support it. They grow very thick on the mountains, and are sometimes set on fire, to clear the ground.

Toperro, or red Chili pepper, like the tobacco, is spread over the island.
Happily the island of Eimeo becoming subject to his son's government, and Toda and Meane Meane, since the death of Moiuar, having the chief authority there, the king hath little to apprehend from invasion, as he was most easily vulnerable from that quarter.

The war canoes differ from common ones in construction, having high bows, on which are carved rude images of men; and their sterns run up tapering, sometimes to twenty-four feet, and ornamented with the like figures; the bottom is sharp; the sides rounding in towards the top in the midship frame, like the print of a spade on a pack of cards. They are built of short pieces about six feet each, except the keel, which seldom exceeds three pieces, of twenty or thirty feet long, and sometimes is formed of two only. The short pieces are lashed together feverely with flanes made of cocoa-nut fibres; the seams are corked with the same, and payed with the bread-fruit gum; but a heavy sea opens the seams, and makes them leaky; and they have no methods of clearing the water but by bailing with scops, so that five or six hands are thus constantly employed at sea; and in port they are hauled up on dry ground, to prevent their sinking. The bread-fruit tree plank is preferred for durability; for though not a close-grained wood, the salt-water worms will not touch it, a property which few others of their woods possess.

In building the canoes, they use fire to burn out the inside of the tree, and smooth the sides with coral and sand; but those who have iron tools prefer the method of cutting them into shape, and hollow, as for more expeditions. They prepare their pitch for paying the seams, by wrapping the gum of the bread-fruit tree round candle-nuts stuck on skewers of cocoa-nut leaf ribs; these being lighted, the pitch drops into a tray of water, and squeezing out the aqueous particles, they spread it on the plank edge, and lay the cocoa-nut hull beaten fine over it; then smear it with pitch, and fit on the next plank, pelling it powerfully with ropes and levers, and fixing it in its place with lashings. The hold is next filled with

The war canoes, and those sacred to the Eatoa, are built by a general levy: the chief devises his orders to the towhas, they to the ratirra, who call upon their tenants, the manahane, for hogs, cloth, oil, &c. to support the carpenters who are sent to the work. They first examine the hills, and pitch on the proper timber; the ratirra on whose land it is found, sends men to cut it down, and hew it in the rough, under the carpenters' direction, that it may be the easier removed, as it is sometimes at a considerable distance. When the timbers are collected, they are laid under the shed where the canoe is to be built; a raft is then made to engage the favourable assistance of the Eatoa; and being very acceptable to the workmen, they hold one before the tree is cut down, another at the commencement of the building, and on making fast every course. When the first strake or bottom is completed, there is a great entertainment and offering, and so on till the whole is finished, when the festivity is greatest, and the canoe for the Eatoa dressed out with cloth, breastplates, and red feathers, and a human victim is offered. The offerings for the war canoes are only hogs, &c. which are brought to the morai of the chief in whose district it is built; there the priests strangle them as usual, and clean them, smearing them over with their own blood, and placing them on the fweeta, or altar, with young plantain-trees, and long prayers: the entrails and guts are cleaned and eaten at the morai. Sometimes the hogs are dressed before they are offered on the altar; there they are left to purify, or be eaten by birds which frequent these places; the hero especially, and the woodpecker. These birds are respected as sacred, and never killed, as it is supposed the deity descends in them, when he comes to the morai to inspire the priest, and give an answer to their prayers.

The canoe offered to the Eatoa, finely dressed, is drawn up to the morai with all the sacrifices and oblations; there the eye of the dead victim is first offered to the king, with the plantain and prayers, and
the body interred in the morai. The hogs are killed and offered as before, and the priests take the cloth and decorations, which are presented to the young king.

Considering the greatness of the work, and the beauty of the execution, it is astonishing how, without the knowledge of iron, without rule or compass, with a stone adze only, the leg or arm bone of a man sharpened for the purpose of chisel, gouge, and gimlet, with coral only and sand, they can carve so neatly and finish so smoothly; our most ingenious workmen could not exceed them.

To cut with such instruments, out of the hardest and most solid wood to form planks, not more than two out of a tree, and build vessels capable of carrying three hundred persons, must require such endless labour and perseverance, as makes it wonderful how they should ever be finished.

The war canoes differ in construction, as well as size, from the fishing and travelling canoes; these latter being low for paddling, flat-sided, and consisting commonly of but one broad plank fixed on the tree hollowed out, with a raised stern. On the bow a plank projects about six or eight feet, on which a platform is laid, and a travelling house erected, which can be carried on shore and serve for a temporary abode: sometimes only an awning is spread, and here the passengers, or the persons of most dignity, are seated. The furnaces are broad, and, according to the nobility of the owner, raised and ornamented, some to fourteen feet high, of carved work, representing men supporting each other on their hands, tier upon tier, and surmounted by a piece of carved work, of three or four feet round, and hollow, something like a Gothic tower. These, according to their bulk, are paddled by from four to twenty men, and can be rowed single, or made double, as occasions require.

They have still smaller double canoes, and single ones with an outrigger for common use. Those designed for sailing have some one mast and some two, whether the canoe be single or double; this mast is fixed with shrouds and stays; the sails are made of matting long and narrow, and have a kind of sprit laced up and down the after leech, and reaching one third higher than the main-head, forming a bow from the height of the mast upwards, and keeping the weather leech of the sail tight from the main-head to the sprit-end, to which a long pennant made of feathers is usually fastened; and the lower part is extended on a bamboo boom, to which the sprit is securely lashed; and here also the sheet is made fast. In the single canoe the mast is placed nearly before the mizomers; in the double the foresail is raised in the one, and the mainsail in the other, at nearly one third each. The war canoes have their masts and sails in the same manner; on the mast there is a kind of basket-work like a funnel. The single canoes, when rigged for sailing, are raised with a washboard of ten or twelve inches above the gunwale; and on the top of this, opposite to the outrigger, is a flume about two feet wide, and running about ten or twelve feet along the side of the canoe: this is made of planks well lashed to the spars which support them, and to this they bring the shrouds. The outrigger is generally two thirds the length of the canoe; at the extremity is fixed a float as long as the canoe, and kept in the same direction as the keel by a smaller outrigger placed near the stern: but as these are not always exactly parallel and nicely adjusted, they impede the velocity of the canoe, which seldom fails above five or six knots an hour. As they have no method of reducing their sail at the head, being only able to cast it off at the foot, and roll up a part, they are driven to the greatest inconvenience when overtaken by bad weather, and frequently dismast, overet, or blown off the coast, and heard of no more. When a squall comes on, they luff the head of the canoe to it; and if she is likely to fall off, they jump overboard, and hold her head to windward till the gust of wind is passed; then get in, and pursue their course. When overet, their first care is to lash every thing fast, and tow the canoe round with the main-head to windward; and having a line fastened to the sprit-end, they get all hands on the
float of the outrigger, and hauling the head of the sail out of the water, flying off with their whole weight, and the wind getting under the sail rights the canoe: two or three continue in the water, and hold her head to the wind, and when clear they proceed on their voyage. This accident frequently happens on returning from fishing; and so little danger do they apprehend from being thus overset four or five miles from land, that they never think of affisting each other; nor do those who are in the water call for any help, though sometimes they lose so much ground, as to be obliged to run down to Eimeo or Ulietea.

Their canoes convey them to the islands in the neighbourhood of Otaheite. Tethuroah, one of the nearest, is the property of Otoo and his family, distant about eight leagues north from Point Venus; it consists of ten small islets, surrounded by a reef ten leagues in circumference. These can only be approached in calm weather because of the surf, and then only by small canoes, which are hauled over the reef; thither the king sends his most valuable property in time of war or danger. As these islets are not approachable by war canoes, they afford an impregnable fortress. To prevent the inhabitants from casting off his authority, Otoo suffers no bread-fruit or vegetable food of any kind to grow there, but cocoa-nuts and taro-roots for the convenience of the chiefs who go there on a visit. These islands abound with fish, which they bring to Otoo, and load back with provisions. The fish he uses himself, and distributes to his friends. About forty sail of canoes are thus employed, besides those used at home in fishery. The Matavai canoes also, when not engaged in the dolphin fishery, make frequent voyages to Tethuroah, carrying provisions, and bringing back fish and cocoa-nut oil in exchange; and a fine fish sauce, called tyeuro, made of cocoa-nut kernel at a proper age grated, and mixed with picked shrimps. This is put into baskets to digest for a day or two, when it resembles curd, acquires an agreeable tartness, and is fit for use; mixed with salt water it is an admired sauce, not only for fish, but for pork and fowls. The cocoa-nut

The same is made in great quantities at Otaheite, and a basket of it always accompanies a present of fish, or a baked hog.

Maiete is subject to a chief of Tiarabo, and about twenty-seven leagues distant eastward. The communication is by a large war canoe, which makes a voyage or two annually, taking advantage of the north-westerly wind to go thither, and of the trade-wind to return. From this island they chiefly obtain their pearls and pearl shells, with dishes and tills of tammanoo, and other articles. Tapiohe, famous for pearl, lies farther east in the same direction. In return for what they receive, they carry nails and such iron-work as they can spare, and this passes in exchange to more distant islands.

Diseases.

Till the Europeans visited them, they had few disorders among them; their temperate and regular mode of life, the great use of vegetables, little animal food, and absence of all noxious distilled spirits and wines, preserved them in health. The cafe at present is woefully altered.

Their most common complaints are coughs, colds, and intermittent fevers, partly brought on by the changes of weather, and partly by the mode of bathing, to which they habituate themselves, often reeking with fume. They sometimes undergo a temporary insanity during the wet season, when the sun is vertical, probably from being exposed with their bare heads to his perpendicular beams: this disorder attacks them usually when the bread-fruit ripens, and is attended with boils on the skin, which carry off the disorder, and the person once recovered is affected no more; though with some it continues a
longer feafon than with others. Theague, fometimes is fatal, as they have no medicine which is effectual for its cure. They are subject to vast ruptures, occafioned by too great exertions in wrestling, jumping, and lifting. The glands behind their ears often swell and suppurate, leaving large scars like the king's evil; to these they make no application but washing; and when we would have perfuaded them to lay on a poultice, they objected, as they muft not pafs the sacred ground with any thing on their heads, or above their shoulders; and there is no confining them to the house as long as they are able to fland on their legs. As it is their fixed opinion, that no disease affects them but as a punishment inflicted by their God for some offence, and never brought on themselves by intemperance or imprudence, they muft more to the prayers of their priefts than to any medicine. Nature, however, and their good constitutions, perform wonderful cures. One man had received a musket-ball, which paffed through his breaft and shoulder-blade; another had his arm broken by a ball; a third received it as he was flapping; it paffed through his thigh, entered his breaft, and came out behind his collar-bone: several others were dreadfully fnafhed with ftones; one had his upper jaw broken inward, with the lofs of fix or seven teeth, and a part of the bone; and yet all recovered furprifingly soon, without any application. All bandages they abominate, and cannot bear the smell of the drefsings of a wound; flying always to the water when any thing of this kind affects them, and grating fandal wood on the part, to take off the offensive fetor. If they happen to have a leg broken, it usually kiffs them, not fo much from the fracture itself, as from their efforts to crawl to the water, from which nothing restrains them: this often brings on inflammation and putrefaction, where there could be elfe no danger. Some bear the fcarfs of the jagged flingray fpear paffing through their bodies, and are recovered. A broken arm is sometimes completely reftored by bamboo fplints, as it admits of their going about with it in a flag.

Our furgeon, in his visits to the different parts of the island, adds to this catalogue the elephantiasis, which he observed of a moft prodigious kind, one man's leg being swell'd as big as a youth's body; yet he continued going about. There is hardly one of the chiefs but is affected with cuticular diseases, and many like lepers from head to foot, occafioned by drinking the yava; yet they regard this as an honourable distinction, calling it the yava King rather than a disease. Many have, in the rainy feafon, confiderable inflammation in their eyes, and their children are often subject to a tetterous eruption, which continues for a long while. A few have been found affected with the itch, whether communicated or an endemical disease is not certain. But of all plagues that most fatal to society, the venereal, has been communicated to them; probably by Europeans, and it has spread grievously, one in four being fuppofed affected with it; many moft miserable objects, with foul and horrid ulcers, carious bones, losf of limbs, and in the laft stage of confumption, preferred them­selves. Of thefe was the brother of the high-prieft Manne Manne, worn to a ikeleton by the discharge of a venereal ulcer in his neck, which affected the organs of respiration, and left little hopes of re­lief. Many are removed from their families in a shed or out­houfe, nor suffered to touch provifion of any kind but what is brought to them; their deareft friends and relatives fhan them; they are not permitted to bathe near any perfon in the river; and though they are not left to starve, they are abandoned to rot alive. Many refufed all medicines, and would submit to no applications; others took them with great avidity. The benefit received in many cafes by the mercurial omtment caufed great wonder in the natives, and in the hands of a skilful man cannot fail of reſcuing many from death and misery. This fatal and disgusting disease, being moft prevalent, espe­cially claims our compaffion, though the natives are fo carelefs, and averse to all confinement, that it is the hardeft talk in the world to engage them to follow proper directions. We are using our utmost efforts to have some of our brethren under the left tuition, for the purpose of attaining medical skill, especially to be acquainted with
the properest methods of treating this foul plague, and have hope of five or six who will have some medical information, and be particularly conversant with this subject; and who may be capable of affording effectual relief to such as will submit to the necessary regimen.

They attribute others of their maladies to an European origin, and suppose every vessel which hath visited them has left them some new diseases; among these they reckon the dysentery from Vancouver.

It was difficult to persuade them to take medicine, except in syrups, of which they are fond; though some submitted to swallow the bark in cocoa-nut liquor, and got rid of their intermittents.

SECTION XIV:

On the comparative State of the Islands.

It may not be unacceptable to pass in review some remarks on the comparative state of the different islands where we have begun our missionary attempts, as from the manners and character of the people, and the nature of their governments, some conjecture may be formed respecting the hope of succeeding in our endeavours to civilize and impart to them the blessings of Christianity.

Hereditary succession appears the established custom at Otaheite, and Otoo sovereign; his chieftains, though supreme in their several districts, owing him paramount obedience, and apparently at present unable to control his authority, and in a state of general subjection. At Tongataboo an oligarchy seems to prevail, at the head of which is a monarch of the Puttabaihe race, to whom all pay homage; yet another person, under the title of Dugonagaboola, has the chief power and authority, commanding the army by sea and land; whether

this office be hereditary or elective is not ascertained. Toogahów, though not the eldest son, on the death of Tibo Moomóce, assumed the government; his acknowledged warlike character probably removed every competitor. Besides these, other chieftains possess'd of great power. In Ohitahoo, the only island of the Marqueñas which we visited, the chief seems possess'd of less power than was exercised in both the others. Tongataboo resembles most the government of Japan, where the sacred majesty is a sort of state prisoner to the captain-general; but at the Friendly Islands Puttabaihe has great authority, though Dugonagaboola seems as superior in command as he acknowledges himself inferior in dignity. Thus Tacitus describes Germany as possess'd of a monarch hereditary, proprie dignitatem, and a great general, dux, elected, proprie virtutem, on account of his courage and military skill. In these islands strong traits of the ancient feudal system appear.

In their persons, the men of the superior rank all seem a larger race than ourselves, or the common people. At Otaheite they were fairer featured, more full and fleshy; at Tongataboo more muscular, and affecting a more stately gait and superiority; at Ohitahoo, though complaining of hunger, they were sufficiently plump, and much more tattoo'd all over, and distinguish'd by defcs and ornaments.

The women at the Marqueñas, for beauty of feature, symmetry of form, and lightness of colour, far exceeded the other islands. At Otaheite and Tongataboo very few were seen who had pretensions to beauty; they were generally large, their features masculine, their colour deeper, and many very disgusting; yet at Ohitahoo the females appeared in the most abject subjection, whilst at Otaheite some enjoyed distinguished dignity, without particular prohibitions as to food; and those who were under restrictions seem'd not so envious, and at liberty to change their husbands if they pleased. At Tongataboo some were held in highest reverence, and Puttabaihe himself paid one elderly woman the same expression of homage which he received from every other chieftain.
In improvements and civil government the people of the Friendly Islands appear superior: their canoes are larger, more numerous, and better formed; their clubs and carvings more curious, their land better cultivated, their roads neatly maintained, and their country generally enclosed with reed fences; property also appears more protected, and no arbitrary exactions noticed: while the despotic rule at Otaheite, in many instances, and the insolent demands of the soreoey society, tend to destroy all industry. Respect for the chiefs is every where great, but appeared least at Ohitahoo.

In manners, the Society islanders seem the most dissolute, and the soreoey society the sink of lewdness and cruelty. In the Friendly Islands marriage is general, and, except the chiefs, they seem to have only one wife. It is said at Tongataboo, that adultery is punished with death. There, and at the Marquesas, no infant murders are allowed; but, contrarywise, they are fond of their children, and take pleasure in a numerous family. Though at the decease of Tibo Moomoo, during his illness, some cruel and inhuman practices are mentioned, yet nothing comparable with the horrible human sacrifices at Otaheite. In another feature also they greatly differ, as old age is as much respected at Ohitahoo and Tongataboo as it is neglected at Otaheite.

In their propensity to theft they too much resembled each other, though the Friendly islanders seemed the most daring. With respect to the dilapidation which makes the most fatal ravage, the Society islanders are much the most generally infected: fewer at Tongataboo, and at the Marquesas it is happily yet unknown.

As to native fertility, all the islands, with prudence and culture, would furnish abundant supplies; but as the natives labour little, and trust to the spontaneous productions of the earth chiefly, they suffer at certain times of the year, when the bread-fruit is out of season, a temporary scarcity. At Ohitahoo it amounted to hunger; the mahi was disgusting; and the very animals were pinched for want of food, though nowhere did the bread-fruit trees appear more flourish-
ARTICLES OF FAITH,

or

PRINCIPLES OF RELIGION.

DRAWN UP BY THE COMMITTEE OF EIGHTEEN PERSONS CHOSEN BY THE BODY OF MISSIONARIES, ON BOARD THE DUFF, AT SEA.

ART. I. Of the Holy Scriptures.

The Holy Scripture is contained in the Old and New Testaments, as under:

**Old Testament**
- Genesis
- Exodus
- Leviticus
- Numbers
- Deuteronomy
- Joshua
- Judges
- Ruth
- 1 Samuel
- 2 Samuel
- 1 Kings
- 2 Kings
- 1 Chronicles
- 2 Chronicles
- Psalms
- Proverbs
- Ecclesiastes
- Song of Solomon
- Isaiah
- Jeremiah
- Ezekiel
- Lamentations
- Obadiah
- Joel
- Hosea
- Joel
- Amos
- Micah
- Nahum
- Habakkuk
- Zephaniah
- Haggai
- Zechariah
- Malachi

**New Testament**
- Matthew
- Mark
- Luke
- John
- Acts
- Ep. to Romans
- 1 Corinthians
- 2 Corinthians
- Galatians
- Ephesians
- Philippians
- Colossians
- 1 Thessalonians
- 2 Thessalonians
- 1 Timothy
- 2 Timothy
- Titus
- Philemon
- Hebrews
- Jude
- Peter

**Appendix to the South-Sea Islands**

Such is the revelation of God's purpose, mind, and will, and given by the inspiration of the Holy Ghost; it containeth all things necessary to be believed concerning God, creation, providence, the fall of man, his recovery, and the final end of all things: therefore the truths contained therein are to be received and believed; and nothing should be believed by any, or enforced upon any, as necessary to salvation, faith, or practice, but that which it expresseth, or may be proved thereby.

**Art. II. Of God.**

There is but one only living and true God, who is infinite in being and perfection, a most pure Spirit, invisible, without body or parts, immutable, infinite, eternal, incomprehensible, infinitely just, almighty, and most wise; the creator, maker, and former of all creatures, the preserver and governor of all things, visible and invisible; and in the unity of the Godhead there are three persons, of one substance, power, and eternity—God the Father, God the Son, and God the Holy Ghost.

**Art. III. Of the Fall of Man.**

God having created man in his own image, in knowledge, righteousness, and true holiness, with dominion over the creatures, entered into a covenant of life with him, not only for himself but for all his posterity, upon condition of perfect obedience, forbidding him to eat the tree of knowledge of good and evil upon the pain of death; which covenant he brake, being induced by Satan to eat of the fruit of that tree; and, having thereby lost the image of God and all communion with him, he incurred his wrath and curse both in this life and in that which is to come; in which ruin his whole race became necessarily involved, having this his first transgression most justly imputed to them, and deriving from him a nature wholly corrupted and depraved.
Man, in his state of innocency, had freedom and power to will and to do that which is good and well-pleasing to God; but yet mutable, so that he might fall from it. But by his fall into a state of sin, he hath wholly lost all ability of will to any spiritual good accompanying salvation; so that as a natural man, being altogether averse from good, and dead in sin, he is not able, by his own strength, to convert himself, or to prepare himself thereunto. When God converts a sinner, and translates him into a state of grace, he freeth him from his natural bondage under sin; and by his grace alone enables him freely to will and to do that which is spiritually good.

The Son, which is the Word of the Father, co-equal and co-eternal with the Father, the very and eternal God, of one subsistence with the Father, took man's nature in the womb of the blest Virgin, of her subsistence, so that two whole and perfect natures, that is to say, the Godhead and manhood, were joined together, never to be divided, whereof is one Christ, very God and very man; who, by his perfect obedience and sacrifice of himself, which he, through the Eternal Spirit, once offered up unto God, hath fully satisfied the justice of the Father; and not only made reconciliation, but likewise purchased an everlasting inheritance in the kingdom of heaven for all those whom the Father hath given to, or chosen in him.

The Holy Ghost, proceeding from the Father and the Son, is of one subsistence, majesty, and glory, with the Father and the Son, very and eternal God; whose office, in the economy of salvation, is to convince, regenerate, and convert those whom the Father gave to Christ in his eternal purpose, and make them partakers of all the benefits of the covenant of grace, both in time and eternity.

PREDESTINATION AND ELECTION.

Predestination to life is the everlasting purpose of God, whereby (before the foundations of the world were laid) he hath decreed, by his counsel secret to us, to deliver from curse and damnation those whom he hath chosen in Christ (not for any thing foreseen in them, but according to his eternal purpose and grace) out of mankind, and to bring them by Christ to everlasting salvation, as vessels made to honour.

Wherefore they which be endowed with so excellent a benefit of God, be called according to God's purpose by his Spirit working in due season; they through grace obey the calling; they are justified freely; they be made sons of God by adoption; they be made like the image of his only begotten Son Jesus Christ; they walk religiously in good works; and at length, by God's mercy, they attain to everlasting felicity.

JUSTIFICATION OF MAN.

Justification is an act of God's free grace, wherein he pardoneth all our sins, and accepteth us as righteous in his sight, only for the righteousness of Christ imputed to us, and received by faith alone.

GOOD WORKS.

Good works are only such as God hath commanded in his holy word, and not such as, without the warrant thereof, are devised by men out of blind zeal, or upon any pretence of good intentions; although good works, which are the fruits of faith, and follow after
ART. XI. **Of the Law of God.**

The moral law doth for ever bind all, as well justified persons as others, to the obedience thereof; and that not only in regard of the matter contained in it, but also in respect of the authority of God the creator who gave it; neither doth Christ in the gospel any way dissolve, but much strengthen this obligation.

Although true believers be not under the law as a covenant of works, to be thereby justified or condemned; yet it is of great use to them as well as to others; in that, as a rule of life, informing them of the will of God and their duty, it directs and binds them to walk accordingly; discovering also the sinful pollutions of their nature, hearts, and lives; so as examining themselves thereby they may come to further conviction of humiliation for, and hatred against sin; together with a clearer sight of the need they have of Christ, and the perfection of his obedience; it is likewise of use to the regenerate to restrain their corruption, in that it forbids sin; and the threatenings of it serve to show what even their sins deserve, and what afflictions in this life they may expect for them, although freed from the curse thereof threatened in the law.

ART. XII. **Of the State of Men after Death, and of the Resurrection of the Dead.**

The bodies of men after death return to dust, and see corruption; but their souls (which neither die nor sleep) having an immortal substance, immediately return to God who gave them. The souls of the righteous, being made perfect in holiness, are received into the highest heavens, where they behold the face of God in light and glory, waiting only for the full redemption of their bodies: and the souls of the wicked are cast into hell, where they remain in torment and utter darkness, referred to the judgment of the great day. Before these two places, for souls separate from their bodies, the Scripture acknowledgeth none. At the last day, such as are found alive shall not die, but be changed; and all the dead shall be raised up with the same bodies, and none other, although with different qualities, which shall be again united to their souls for ever.

The bodies of the unjust shall, by the power of Christ, be raised to dishonour; the bodies of the just, by his spirit, unto honour, and be made conformable to his own glorious body.

ART. XIII. **Of the last Judgment.**

God hath appointed a day wherein he will judge the world in righteousness, by Jesus Christ, to whom all power and judgment is given of the Father; in which day not only the apostate angels shall be judged, but likewise all persons that have lived upon earth shall appear before the tribunal of Christ, to give an account of their thoughts, words, and deeds; and to receive according to what they have done in the body, whether good or evil. The end of God's appointing this day is for the manifestation of the glory of his mercy in the eternal salvation of the elect, and of his justice in the damnation of the wicked and disobedient; for then shall the righteous go into everlasting life, and receive that fulness of joy and refreshing which shall come from the presence of the Lord; but the wicked, who know not God, and obey not the gospel of Jesus Christ, shall be cast into everlasting burnings, and be punished with eternal destruction from the presence of the Lord, and from the glory of his power.

ART. XIV. **Of the Church.**

The catholic or universal church, which is invisible, consists of the whole number of the elect that have been, are, or shall be gathered into one, under Christ the head thereof; and is the spouse,
the body, the fulness of Him that filleth all in all. The visible church, which is also catholic or universal under the gospel (not confined to one nation as before, under the law), consists of all those throughout the world that profess the true religion, together with their children; and is the kingdom of the Lord Jesus Christ, the house and family out of which there is no ordinary possibility of salvation.

Unto this catholic visible church Christ hath given the ministry, oracles, and ordinances of God, for the gathering and perfecting of the saints, in this life, to the end of the world; and doth by his own presence and spirit, according to his promise, make them effectual thereunto.

There is no other head of the church but the Lord Jesus Christ; neither hath any temporal prince, secular power, or civil magistrate, any right to exercise any authority over her; neither needeth the any establishments from them, being founded upon Him who is the rock of ages; so that the gates of hell shall not prevail against her; and the Highest himself shall establish her.

The visible church hath, in subjection to Christ her head, power to chuse bishops, or pastors, and deacons, to act in their several offices. The church likewise hath power to depose both ministers and deacons, if it be found necessary for truth and conscience sake; to admit members into church fellowship; and, in case of misconduct, to exclude them from her communion; but if the cause or reason of deposing the one or excluding the other is removed, then the bishop power, and ought to re-admit them into the same church fellowship.

ART. XV. Of the Officers of the Church.

Christ, in the riches of his love and care towards his church, hath appointed in it to be of perpetual standing use, as what will be needful to the church throughout all generations to the end of the world; nfh. Pastors or bishops, that should be settled in different churches, to take a peculiar care of them, to preside, watch, and rule over them

APPENDIX.
TO THE SOUTH-SEA ISLANDS.

in the Lord; and to administer ordinances of worship and discipline, as well as to preach the word to them; who are to be solemnly set apart to their important office by laying on of hands, by one or more persons who have been regularly called and ordained to the ministerial office. 2d. Deacons; unto whose office belongs the actual exercise and application of the bounty and benevolence of the church unto the poor that are planted therein; and to provide for the table of the Lord; and who are to be ordained to their office by prayer and imposition of hands.

ART. XVI. Of the Ordinance of Baptism.

Baptism is an ordinance of the Lord Jesus Christ's institution in his visible church, to be continued till the end of time, and is a visible sign of inward and spiritual grace, is an initiating ordinance to the fellowship and communion of the church, and is to be administered to believing adults and their children, and them only: the mode of administration to be that of pouring or sprinkling, and is to be done by a minister of the word of God, lawfully called and ordained thereunto.

ART. XVII. Of the Ordinance of the Lord's Supper.

The Lord's Supper is an ordinance of the New Testament, wherein, by giving and receiving bread and wine, according to the appointment of Jesus Christ, his death is shewed forth; and they that worthily communicate feed upon his body and blood, to their spiritual nourishment and growth in grace; have their union and communion with him confirmed; testify and renew their thankfulness and engagements to God, and their mutual love and fellowship with each other, as members of the same mystical body; and is to be administered by one who labours in word and doctrine, properly called and ordained thereunto.
ART. XVIII. Of the Sanctification of the Lord's Day.

The Lord's day ought to be so remembered beforehand, as that all worldly business of our ordinary calling may be so ordered, and so timely and seasonably laid aside, as they may not be impediments to the due sanctifying of the day when it comes. The whole day is to be celebrated as holy to the Lord, both in public and private, as being the Christian sabbath. To which end it is requisite, that there be a holy cessation or resting all that day from all unnecessary labours, and an abstaining from all worldly words and thoughts: that all the people meet so timely for public worship, that the whole congregation may be present at the beginning, and with one heart solemnly join together in all parts of the public worship, and not depart till after the blessing.

ART. XIX. Of the Ordinances in a particular Congregation.

The ordinances in a single congregation are prayer, thanksgiving, and singing of psalms or hymns, the word read (although there follow no immediate explication of what is read), the word expounded and applied, catechising, the sacraments administered, and dismissing the people with a blessing.

ART. XX. Of Marriage.

Marriage is of divine appointment, instituted by God at the time of man's innocency, for the procreation of children to be brought up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord, and is the praise of his holy name, for a remedy against sin, and to avoid fornication, that such persons as have not the gift of continency might marry, and keep themselves undefiled. This was practiced in the Jewish church, countenanced by Christ, and recommended by the apostle as honorable among all. Therefore marriage is to be between one man and one woman only; and they such as are not within the degrees of consanguinity or affinity prohibited by the word of God; and the persons are to be of years and discretion, fit to make their own choice, or, upon good grounds, to give their mutual consent. Then the persons about to enter the state of marriage are to signify their intentions to the minister residing nearest to their respective abodes three weeks before their intended conformation of marriage, that he may publicly declare their intentions three successive sabbaths in the congregation, to the end that if there be any lawful objections against the persons entering into that holy state, it may be set aside; but if no objection appears, then the day being appointed (which we advise not to be the sabbath), and a competent number of witnesses assembled, the minister, after a solemn prayer to God and a suitable exhortation, is to proceed as follows: viz. First directing the man to take the woman by the right hand, and say these words, "I, M., do take thee, N., to be my married wife, and do in the presence of God and before this congregation promise and covenant to be a loving and faithful husband unto thee, until God shall separate us by death." Then the woman shall take the man by the right hand, and say these words: "I, N., do take thee, M., to be my married husband, and I do in the presence of God and before this congregation promise and covenant to be a loving, faithful, and obedient wife unto thee, until God shall separate us by death." Then the minister shall in the face of the congregation pronounce them to be husband and wife, according to God's ordinance; and so conclude with prayer.

ART. XXI. Of the Burial of the Dead.

Christ hath no where in his word commanded any ceremony to be made of or over a deceased person, either previous to, or at the interment; such as singing, praying, &c. Therefore it seems most conformable to the death. Yet it is the duty of every Christian friend carefully to
endeavour to improve the bereaving dispensation, by meditation and
conferences suitable thereto.—And it is likewise incumbent upon the
pastor of the congregation to endeavour to speak a word in season to
survivors, suitable to the occasion.

The Form of Signature as follows:

We whose names are underwritten do, in the presence of God
and each other, acknowledge and believe all and every one of the
above articles to be agreeable to and consonant with the word of God,
and are, through divine assistance, resolved to promulgate and teach
the truths contained therein among the heathen; and purposely, by
the same means, to live conformably thereto, to the glory of God, until
death.

Daniel Bowell
John Buchanan
James Fleet Cover
John Harris
William Henry
Thomas Lewis
Edward Main
William Shelley
Henry Bicknell
Benjamin Broomhall
Samuel Clode
John Cock
James Cooper
William Crook

John Eyre
S. Gaulton
Samuel Harper
Rowland Haffall
Peter Hodges
John Jefferon
S. Kelfo
Henry Nott
Francis Oakes
James Puckey
William Puckey
William Smith
George Vason
James Wilkinson

S. A.

Adam, J. W., Esq. Chatham-street
Adam, H. France
Adam, Mr. Kingwood
Adam, Mr. Rochdale
Alberley, J. Canterbury-place
Albery, W. South-street
Albiage, M. & John Church
Albigeo, G. Jan. 4th
Alley, T. Castle-street
Allen, Rev. R. Nottingham
Almst, Mr. Coomham
Alnwick, W. Esq. Sherwood
Amos, Mr. College-green, Dublin
Anderson, A. Phillips-street
Anderson, R. Shire-square
Andrews, Mr. London
Anstey, Rev. R. Stockport
Anstey, M. Esq. Reading
Arnold, Mr. Sheerness
Arndell, G.
Arnott, W. J. 3d, Aldgate
Anthony, Mr.
Anthony, Mrs. Holl
tonio, Captain, Hull
Anstruther, J. Aldgate-street
Appleby, W. St. John's-street
Arbuthnot, J. and A. Bookbinder, Lombard-street,
7 copies
Arch, Captains, Bengal
Arden, Mrs. Throgmorton-street
Arden, W. British
Arkley, J. Finchbury-place
Armstrong, Mr. 13, Bow-street
Armstrong, J. Stalres
Arron, J. Sheerness
Arowrotham, Mr. Charles-street, Soho, 5 copies
Arthur, C. Esq. Bath
Atkins, Mr. Northchurch, Gloucestershire
Athey, T. Widder
Atkinson, J. Market-street, Mayfair
Atkinson, Rev. T. Ipswich
Atkinson, J. Alabaster-street
Atkinson, Mr. Weston
Atkinson, L. Holderness
Ayling, Mr. Cripplegate

B.

Buckler, Mr. Apothecaries' Hall
Budeley, S. 3, Fig-tree-court, Temple
SUBSCRIBERS' NAMES.

Dalton.—B. Eg. 
Darford, S. Fitzrood, Hoxton. 
Darley, J. 47, Bedford-square, ClerkenweU. 
Daniel, S. Colchester. 
Darly, Mr. Mr. Wakefield. 
Darrel, J., L. Eg. Southampton. 
Davis, Mr. Bury-street, Oxford. 
Davis, E. Mr. Wakefield. 
Davis, S. Tottenham. 
Davies, R. W. Watton. 
Davies, J. Fifth-street-hill. 
Davies, K. M.ington. 
Davidson, W. 8. Queen-Anne's-ea. 
Davenport, R. 2, Road-bend. 
Davison, Rev. J. J. square. 
Dawson, P. 48, Queen-street. 
Dawson, R. High-street, Borough. 
Dawson, J. Chiswick. 
Dawson, Capt. W. Weymouth. 
Dean, J. Plymouth. 
Dean, Rev. E. Weir. 
Dent, Capt. T. 
Dennett, Rev. J. Hackney 
Denny, J. Plymouth. 
Dent, George. 
Fenwick, Mr. Shackwell. 
Dick, B. Bow-street. 
Dickson, J. Hull. 
Dickson, James. 
Dibb, C. Bookbinder, Paintley. 
Dibdin, Dr. Edinburgh-street. 
Dillman's Reading Society, Great Wiglaf. 
Dixon, J. Plymouth. 
Dixie, S. Pull-page. 
Donald, Captain T. 
Dodds, W. Eg. Gosport. 
Dodd, W. Mr. Wakefield. 
Dow, Mr. W. Plymouth. 
Douglas, Rev. A. Reading. 
Douglas, D. Eppington. 
Dow, T. Bookseller, Monthbury. 
Dow, S. O. Calver-street. 
Dunn and Bigs, Bookellers, Nottingham. 
Dowen, Joseph. Cleopatra. 
Dumby, K. Little Ratcliffe. 
Duken, J. Lympdale. 
Duken, E. D. Goodenough. 
Dunstan, Mr. S. Gray's-inn-lane. 
Dunstan, P. 52, High-street. 
Dyer, J. Eg. Greenwich. 

England, Mrs. E. Heatonfield. 
Earnshaw, Mr. Wakefield. 

Falcon.—B. Eg. 
Falkland, T. Portsea. 
Falk, W. Emerson. 
Blencow, R. Three Brick-place, Pimlico. 
Edgington, J. Earl-street, Blackfriars. 
Edmonds, Mr. Newington. 
Eggleston, G. Holborn. 
Eglington, J. Holborn. 

E._—Edg. Banker. 
Eggleston, J. 
Ellen, Mrs. M. 8, Newington-green, Surrey. 
Emery, Mr. Croydon. 
Elliot, G. Union-fields. 
Elliot, C. Long-street. 
Elliston, G. Chatham, Southwark. 
Ellis, Richard. 
Ellis, J. Upper Bath-street. 
Ellis, Rev. T. Watling-street. 
Ellison, T. Eg. George-street. 
Elliot, Captain, Dorset Abbey. 
Ellison, Dr. Edinburgh. 
Ellison, Lady Anne, High-street. 
Ellison, Mrs. Scotland's. 
Ellison, Rev. R. Appleton-street. 
Ellison, Mrs. Watson. 
Ellis, George, Beth. 
Ellis, Rev. C. Edinburgh. 
Ellis, J. Farndon, Surry. 
Ellis, Rev. John, Hackney. 
Ellis, William, sitro. 

Fellowfield.—Mr. Scotland-yard. 
Ferrer, R. Kenting-ton, St. George's. 
Ferrance, J. Scotland's. 
Farrer, J. Watling-street. 
Farquhar, J. Eg. Sydney-street. 
Fawcett, W. Ladbury-street. 
Fawcett, G. T. Somerset-street. 
Fawcett, Mr. Banker, Bond-street. 

Fawcett, Rev. G. 5, Fox-wood. 
Fawcett, J. Syringa. 
Fawcett, J. Eg. Kidderminster. 

Faucon, G. New-wood, St. George's. 
Fetter, Mr. Pyle-street, Canterbury-market. 
Fibbin, J. Eg. Dublin. 
Fibbin, Thomas, Mr. H. Hanley, Suffolk. 
Fibbin, J. Eg. Olney. 
Fibbin, J. Cambridge coffee-house. 

Field, Mr. Banker. 
Field, G. Eg. Guilford-street. 
Field, W. Dayford. 
Fleming, Dr. 
Fleming, G. Eg. Croydon. 

Fleming, T. Cheadle. 
Fleming, G. Pekham. 
Fleming. W. Admiralty. 
Fleming, N. Little Britain. 

Fleming, M. Uxbridge. 

Fleming, N. Little Britain. 

Fleming, M. Uxbridge. 

Fleming, N. Little Britain. 

Fleming, M. Uxbridge. 

Fleming, N. Little Britain. 

Fleming, M. Uxbridge. 

Fleming, N. Little Britain. 

Fleming, M. Uxbridge. 

Fleming, N. Little Britain. 

Fleming, M. Uxbridge. 

Fleming, N. Little Britain. 

Fleming, M. Uxbridge. 

Fleming, N. Little Britain. 

Fleming, M. Uxbridge. 

Fleming, N. Little Britain. 

Fleming, M. Uxbridge.
SUBSCRIBERS' NAMES.

Wathen, J. Esq. Keswick.
Wathen, Rev. Mr. Grevill-street.
Warriss, —— Esq. Kestish-green.
Wattburn, Mr. Edinburgh.
Watt, J. Lamb's Conduit-street, 7 copies.
Watson, G. Smillingham, Norfolk.
Watson, S. Swanland.
Way, Rev. A. Salisbury-place.
Waylen, R. jun. Bristol.
Wex, J. Esq. Laindon-lea.
Welch, D. London.
Welch, J. Esq.
Waymouth, H. Esq.
Welsh, Mrs. London.
Welsh, T. Esq. Poundsford-port.
Wells, N. near Biddenham.
Well, Mr. Crawley.
Welch, Rev. G. Socks.
Wentham, J. Burton.
Weller, J. Surro-road.
Weymouth, P. Millbank-street.
Wells, G. Bethnal-green.
Welch, J. Esq. Whitechurch.
Wickenden, Mr. 78, Cornhill.
Wickenden, T. Esq. Grosvenor.
Wickenden, Rev. Mr. Litchfield.
Wickenden, Rev. Mr. Edinburgh.
Wickenden, Mr. 39, Cornhill.
Williams, J. Esq. Forte Ghaut, India.
Williams, Rev. Mr. Rothesay.
Williams, Lewes, Col. Royal Curia.
Wilts, Esq. Woburn.
Wilkins, H. Eton College.
Wilson, Mr. Rush.
Wilson, B. Hanley.
Wilcox, J. Esq. Wrotham.
Wilcox, T. Slip-street, Cheap.
Wilton, J. Slip-street, Cranford.
Wilton, D. Hall.

The End.